



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation





PHILOSOPHICAL,
POLITICAL, AND LITERARY
TRAVELS

IN

R U S S I A,

DURING THE YEARS 1788 & 1789.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH

OF

CHANTREAU.

WITH

A MAP AND OTHER PLATES.

VOLUME FIRST.

P E R T H :

PRINTED BY R. MORISON, JUNIOR,

JOB. R. MORISON AND SON, BOOKSELLERS, PERTH,

AND

WERNOR AND HOOD, BIRCHIN-LANE, LONDON.

1794



ADVERTISEMENT.

THE great number of important and interesting facts, the rich store of anecdotes, but particularly the enlarged details, and judicious reflexions on the laws, policy, learning, commerce, customs &c. of the Russians, have induced the Editors to present these two Volumes of Travels to the public. By the contemplative and philanthropic mind, the most solid and rational entertainment must be derived from viewing the progress of a mighty people, emerging from barbarism, and rapidly advancing in the knowledge of those arts, which are not only the genuine and incontestible evidences of civilization, and hasty approaches towards refinement, but the foundation of all public and private comfort and happiness. To readers of this description, what nation on the globe can furnish such variety, as the Russians, who from being little better than a collection of formidable barbarous hordes, scattered over the immense regions of Muscovy and Siberia, have recently assumed the form of a people united and consolidated by common laws, enlightened by science, improved by the arts, and rising fast to opulence, by an extensive and lucrative commerce, of which the nature and situation of so vast a territory give them the exclusive right. On the importance and influence of this people in the balance of the European Scale no remarks are necessary. But one single ardent wish may be expressed, that the mighty arm of an empire so powerful, may be uniformly guided
by

by the maxims of justice, moderation and sound policy, and thus rendered subservient to the best interests of the human race, for whose improvement and happiness the over-ruling hand of Providence exalts one nation and humbles another.

In the translation, the greatest attention has been paid to the genuine meaning of the original by a Gentleman on whom the Editors can rely with absolute confidence; but in a task so nice and difficult as that of transfusing the sense and spirit of one language into another, it will not be refused, that the learned and prying eye of the Critic may discover several oversights and defects, for which the most intelligent readers will be the first to make a fair and reasonable allowance. In the course of the Version, several things peculiar to the Russians, as well as the Author's style, have required a little more than ordinary investigation. For the names of many of the Asiatic Tribes subject to the Russian Empire, there is yet no fixed authority, and hence it is, that the same people are now and then mentioned under names with terminations a little varied, but not so much as to occasion any obscurity or doubt. Upon the whole, it is hoped, that the rich materials contained in these Travels, and the very great pains, that have been bestowed on translating, printing, and embellishing them, so as to render them acceptable, will procure them a favourable reception by every class of Readers: and that there will be a liberal and generous patronage of the Authors, which they will ever be as anxious and proud to enjoy.

CONTENTS

OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

- CHAP. I. P. 1. Entry into Russia by Swedish Finland. Fredericsham. Wiburg, capital of Russian Finland. Remarks on this province and the Finns. Journey from Wiburg to St Petersburg. Roads. Russian Inns. Sledges. Description of this vehicle.
- CHAP. II. P. 9. Arrival at St Petersburg. Situation of this city. Motives that determined Peter I. to transport thither the seat of Empire. The fortrefs. The island of St Petersburg, which gives its name to the city. Streets. Houses. Palace. Superb banks of the Neva.
- CHAP. III. P. 20. Equestrian statue of Peter I. Temperature of St Petersburg. Long and short days. Evils occasioned by the cold. Means of guarding against it. Singular amusements on the Neva during Winter. Famous market held at Christmas. Provisions brought thither.
- CHAP. IV. P. 30. Court of the Empress. Guards of the apartment. Hall of audience. Retinue of the Empress when she goes to the chapel. Her dress on Gala days. Remark on the Royal Family. Riches of the Prussian Lords in their dress. Their passion for diamonds. The different orders with which they are decorated. Historical remarks. Winter balls. Palace of the Hermitage. Ceremony banished from it. Is that true or possible in Russia? Collection of pictures in this palace. Winter garden, like an enchanted spot. Distribution which the Empress makes of her time. Court Plays.
- CHAP. V. P. 43. The fortrefs of St Petersburg. The cathedral. Tomb of Peter I. Philosophical remarks on this prince. His way of life. His daily employments. His knowledge. Particulars of his private life. His amours. Sad consequences thereof. His death. Account of the celebrated Baron Lefort, his instructor and friend. An anecdote.
- CHAP. VI. P. 61. Tomb of Catharine I.—of Alexander to Peter I.—and of his sister Anne Petrowna. Description of this princess. Her character. Anecdote on this head. Particulars respecting her. Tomb of the Empress Anne

Anne Iwanowna. Her beauty. On what terms she was called to the throne of Russia. How she fulfilled them, when she was proclaimed. Interesting particulars of this princess, of her weakneses, and of her favourite Ernest Jean de Biren.

CHAP. VII. P. 72. Monument containing the ashes of the Empress Elizabeth. Description of this princess. Her singular tastes. Her devotion still more singular. She takes no husband. Opinion believed in Russia, respecting a secret marriage contracted by this princess. Particulars and anecdotes on this head. Summary of the revolution, that placed her on the throne. Lestocq, son to a French refugee, the soul of this revolution. Particulars respecting this adventurer. Respecting Schuwaloïf, another favourite of Elizabeth's. Anecdotes of the history of Russia, published by Voltaire. Reflexions on Elizabeth's government.

CHAP. VIII. P. 86. Mint at St Petersburg. Money coined there. The Czar Peter the First's house an object of curiosity. Church and canonization of Alexander-Newski.

CHAP. IX. P. 91. Population of St Petersburg—of all Russia. The Russians divided into four constitutional classes. The Nobility, the first class, which contains fourteen others. Boyard—what is understood by this title. The Clergy, the second class. The Burgesses and Freemen, the third. The Peasants, the fourth class. Those, who belong to the crown. Those, who belong to individuals. Unfortunate situation of the latter.

CHAP. X. P. 117. Administration, civil and political. The Directing Senate. Colleges or Departments, which depend on them. Tribunals. Who preside there. Advocates. Abuses in judicial proceedings. The code of Criminals: H. Penal laws. Punishment of the Knout. Description of the instrument used in this punishment. The stocks, another sort of punishment. Abolition of torture. Management of prisoners.

CHAP. XI. P. 122. Religious tolerance of the Russian government. Prevailing religion of the country. Superstitious practices. Benediction of waters. Abstinences and Fasts. Ceremonies of Ash-Wednesday. Easter. Pentecost. Manner of celebrating divine service. Singing Communions. Church discipline. Anecdote on this subject.

ject. The Patriarch of Russia. Other singular forms of superstition. Veneration for the ringing of Bells—for Bogs. What a Bog is. For the number *forty*. *Ressel-ziki*, a sort of heretics. Punishment of one of them. Reflexions on this subject.

CHAP. XII. P. 149. Revenues of Russia. Of what they consist. Their amount. What it was in the time of Peter I. Their application. Bank of assignation. Discredit of the bills of this bank. National debt.

CHAP. XIII. P. 157. Particulars of the military forces of Russia. Historical note on the Strelitz. Abolition of this militia. With what troops Peter replaced them. Actual constitution of the Russian army. The Empress' household troops. Infantry of the army. Regular cavalry. Irregular cavalry. The Cossacs. The Kalmucs. The National militia. Method of recruiting the Russian armies.

CHAP. XIV. P. 183. Russian Navy. Cronstadt its principal station. Description of this town and the isle, on which it is situated. Its dock-yards. Peter I. founder of the Russian Navy. Restored by Catharine II. Number of the ships which compose the maritime force of Russia. Obstacles that mar the progress of this force.

CHAP. XV. P. 195. Commerce, which the European nations carry on with Russia. What are the best frequented ports of that empire. Archangel. Riga. Astracan. Gurjev. Derbent. Baku. Enzelli. Navigation and commerce of the Black sea—of the sea of Azoff. Inland navigation of Russia. A plan of the Russians for carrying their commerce into India.

CHAP. XVI. P. 219. Mines in Russia. Those of Wocuk. Of Peresofoka—of Koliwan—of Nertschinsk. The salt pits of Stroganoff—of the Heek and Siberia.

CHAP. XVII. P. 231. Of the civilization of the Russians and what should be thought of it. The houses of the Great. Their way of life. That of the common people. Their food. Their drink. Manner of salute among the Russians. Their beauty less. National pride. Anecdotes. The Russian ladies. Their dress. Marriage. Singular customs. Funerals. Manners and customs. Russian births. How sold. How and by whom administered.

- CHAP. XVIII. P. 249. Learning of the Russians. Wodimer, the first Christian Grand Duke. His son Jaroslaw. Both endeavour to enlighten their subjects. Ignorance of their age. Nestor, the first historian that Russia has had. His chronicle. Other historians. Theophanes. Sherebatoff. Poets. Lomonosoff. Sumolokoff. Russian theatres. What they were formerly. What they are at this day. National theatre. Catharine II. patronizes the sciences. Masters of the French language. An anecdote. Foreign Works translated.
- CHAP. XIX. P. 267. The Russian language. The Slavonian. Oaths of the Russians. Academy of sciences at St Petersburg. Its institution. Learned gentlemen, who travel at the expence of the Empress. Dr Gmelin. Pallas. Georgi. Falk. Rytshkoff. Lепенin. Gmelin the nephew. Guldenstaedt. Particulars respecting Prince Heraclius—Respecting the Czar Solomon.
- CHAP. XX. P. 292. Library belonging to the academy of Sciences. Cabinet of Natural History. Anatomical collection belonging to this cabinet. Museum. Collection of Medals. The Gottorp-Globe.
- CHAP. XXI. P. 312. Academy of arts. Society of agriculture. By whom founded. How patronized by Catharine II. The corps of Cadets. Account of this institution. Convent for daughters of nobles. Observations on this establishment.

PHILOSOPHICAL, POLITICAL,
AND
LITERARY
TRAVELS IN RUSSIA,

DURING THE YEARS 1788 & 1789.

CHAP. I.

*ENTRY into Russia by Swedish Finland.—Fredericsham.
—Wiburg, Capital of Russian Finland.—Remarks on
this Province and the Finns.—Journey from Wiburg
to St Petersburg.—Roads.—Russian Inns.—Sledges.
—Description of this Vehicle.*

THE Commercial Motives, which had led us into Sweden, determined us on a Journey into Russia.—Mr Wieder, a Cosmopolitan Philosopher, who in our different excursions had been our travelling companion, received with transport the proposal of making a tour through Russia.

“ We will see,” said he, “ a new People.—I am
“ weary of meeting none but *Blazed* nations, of
VOL. I. A “ drawing

“ drawing none but worn out features, which bear
 “ a general resemblance; and like these mutilated
 “ antiques discovered in Greece, exhibit only vesti-
 “ ges wasted by time, hardly recalling the idea of
 “ their primitive beauties. In Russia the features
 “ will be better expressed, or at least ruder than in
 “ any other country.—We will not find them co-
 “ vered by the mask of artifice, and we will engrave
 “ them according to Nature.—Besides I am curious
 “ to see, if the modern Legislator, Peter, has really
 “ deserved the name of *Great*, a title so easily pro-
 “ fituted; and his nation that of *Civilized*, a cha-
 “ racter so strangely abused.”

WE very soon set out on our Journey, which held out to us plans of establishing an advantageous Commerce; and to Mr Wieder the hopes of making observations new and useful to the history of Mankind, for whose improvement he was travelling.

ON leaving Finland, which is under the Swedish dominion, you enter into Russian Finland.—Fredrichsham is the fortress which protects the frontiers. It was ceded to the Russians by the peace of *Abo*. The town is small, but regular. In the centre there is a square, where all the streets meet, which gives this place a singular look. The houses, one of brick excepted, are built of wood, but very neatly. The fortifications are respectable, and in good repair. The garrison and troops, which are quartered in the

the neighbouring villages, amount to near six thousand men. The inhabitants carry on a little trade with the English and Dutch. They sell wood and tallow, and receive salt and tobacco in return.

It was at Fredericsham, that his Swedish Majesty had an interview with the Empress of Russia in the year 1783. The plans of this Princess, respecting the Crimea and the navigation of the Black Sea, required, that on the Swedish side she should secure a monarch, whose sea force had become powerful; besides, she was afraid of a neighbour, who, guided by his ambition, and the influence of the Cabinet of Versailles, might raise obstructions against her, by making inroads into a province, which he must have been under the temptation of regaining by conquest. The interview took place in the fine season. Their Majesties spent three days at Fredericsham, and these three days were distinguished by continued festivals. The Empress had caused a palace be built of wood, which might have passed for a Fairy Castle, it was ornamented and furnished with so much taste.—French Plays were acted in it every night. The interview terminated with the most positive *assurances* of the strictest neutrality on the part of the King; whose latter conduct has shown what the most positive *assurances* of a King amount to.

FROM Fredericsham you pass to Wiburg, the capital of Russian Finland, and a place of strength, si-

tuated on a peninsula, which renders its position advantageous. The state of the Ramparts, of the Castle, and the Fort, show that all the importance of this post is sufficiently understood. Wiburg contains about nine thousand inhabitants. Some brick houses deserve attention; the rest are of wood, but neat, and defended against the cold. It is at Wiburg that the principal trade of the province is carried on; the English have the greatest share. They come for cargoes of timber, tallow, pitch, and tar, for which they bring wines, spices, and salt. Of fifty or sixty vessels, which annually enter this port, four fifths are British.

This city has preserved its courts of Justice, both civil and criminal. Yet when it is necessary to inflict capital punishment, the Judges are obliged to follow the Russian Code; and in this case the *Knout* or banishment into Siberia is substituted for Death.

The business in the tribunals of this province is conducted in the Swedish, German, and Russian Languages. But the Peasants speak only the Finland, a language which has no affinity to either the Swedish or Russian, though Finland lies between Sweden and Russia. It is a dialect of that spoken by the Laplanders, but the Swedish or German is spoken in the towns. The religion of the country is Lutheran. The Russians found it in the country before them, and the toleration professed by

by their Sovereigns has led them to think it politic to introduce no change; a conduct so much the wiser, as in strict truth, the Conqueror, whom the sword or other means have made master of a country, has power only over persons and properties, not over opinions. Nevertheless the Russians have introduced their worship. The clergy of this country are modest, and easy, in consequence of the moderate price of provisions; the highest living is fixed at four thousand French livres, and the lowest at fifteen hundred.*

What is now called Russian Finland belonged to the Swedes till the beginning of this century. This country was ceded to Russia, one part by the treaty in 1721, so advantageous to the Russians, and the other in 1743, by that of *Abu*, which was not less in their favour. The nobles of this province have preserved their privileges, and the miserable peasants their fetters. This part of Finland is not so extensive as Swedish Finland. It is remarkable that in both countries the productions of nature are sooner ripe in the parts covered with forests, than on the sea-coast and on islands. There the people breathe a more salubrious air. In the towns on the sea, only one of sixty dies annually, while there is born one of forty three. No country is better adapted to Botany. There are enumerated near
thirteen

* About £166 and £64—Sterling.

thirteen hundred different kinds of plants, besides a great number of herbs fit for divers uses. They raise also several kinds of grain, such as wheat, rye, oats, barley, but all of them, especially wheat, in quantities too scanty for the supply of the inhabitants. The interval between seed-time and harvest is from ten to twelve weeks. The Finns apply principally to the culture of tobacco, which thrives uncommonly in their country. As to trees, those which bear fruit, such as Cherry and Plumb-trees, are almost always destroyed by the rigours of winter; the Mulberry is planted and thrives only on the islands; the Oak does not grow beyond 61, and the Ash beyond 62 degrees.

THE Finns and Laplanders appear to have had the same origin, and to be a colony of Huns, who after having passed the Danube, spread over the northern regions, and preserved, it is said, their manners, and the same language without mixture, for near two thousand years. This emigration according to the Russian annals was prior to the Christian era.

THE peasants of Finland differ almost entirely from the Russians in their nature and dress. Their hair is either white or red, which they wear shed on the crown and waving round the shoulders; and they shave their beards; whereas the Russians generally have black hair, which they cut very short,
and

and wear their beards, which among them is a badge of religion, of which we shall have occasion to speak afterwards. The Finns, by the commerce which they have with foreigners, are also more civilized than those Russians, who do not reside in the capital or are not their neighbours. In the smallest villages in Finland, articles can be easily procured, which it is difficult to find in the largest cities in Russia.

FROM Wiburg to St Petersburg it is a day and a half's journey, which in Russia is performed generally in a sledge, a commodious and pleasant vehicle, partly open and partly close. It is of the form of a cradle. The stuff, which covers it, carried forward two feet in front, is open at the end, and furnished with curtains, that can be drawn in bad weather. These vehicles are defended on the outside, by mats and oil-skins. The insides of hackney sledges are lined with cloth; but velvet or some stuff still more costly, even furs, are the usual lining of private sledges, which generally shut closer than our carriages. They contain only one person, who may sit or ly in them. Every sledge is drawn by two horses, which the narrowness of the roads often oblige to yoke the one before the other. In these carriages, you usually go at the rate of seven or eight miles an hour; and what is invaluable, you not only feel no jolt, but scarcely perceive the motion of the sledge, because you almost always travel

on beaten snow; and besides in Russia, especially on the frontiers, and the places near the capital, the roads are generally sandy and excellent during the winter, which reigns there for two thirds of the year. This is the only season when you can travel in this country, and when the internal trade of the empire is in full activity.

A TRAVELLER would find himself very comfortable in these sledges, which are real ambulatory chambers, if he were not obliged to fill them with whatever he may need on the road; for he would in vain seek to be supplied in the inns, which are miserable cottages, just like what is called in Spain and Portugal *una venta*. The Russian inns differ from the latter only by their Warm-Rooms or Stoves, where you pass from extreme cold to heat still more extreme; a transition dangerous to foreigners, but it has, or seems to have no effect upon the impassible Russian. In these country-inns, eggs and milk may be got, with which the sobriety of the people of the country is contented, and even entertained, by some method of dressing them, which the good Russians think excellent, but we thought detestable. "In cookery as in morality," said Mr Wieder, who put up with every thing, "custom rules imperiously, and works wonders." So as easy travellers we renewed our stock of provisions in the principal towns we met on our road, where
the

the inns are very often excellent, by the care taken by the Governor to keep, or cause them to be kept well provided.

WE had been so much intimidated by the reports of the cold, which we must experience, that during this first excursion in Russia, which lasted a few days, and was a kind of apprenticeship to us, we put * *pelisse* above *pelisse*, and after the second journey, we accoutred ourselves like the people of the country, who know better than almost any other people to secure themselves against the most intense cold.

CHAPTER II.

ARRIVAL at St Peterburg.—Situation of this city.—Motives that determined Peter the First to transport thither the seat of Empire.—The fortrefs.—The island of St Peterburg, which gives its name to the city.—Streets.—Houses.—Palace.—Superb banks of the Neva.

ST Peterburg, where we arrived after two days travelling, is situated in Latitude 60° , Longitude 39° , $54'$, reckoning from the meridian of Ferro.

THIS city is built near the gulf of Finland, partly upon isles, and partly upon the banks of the Neva, a majestic and deep river, which procures to this city all the conveniencies a capital could wish for. The principal divisions of it are, the Admiralty Quarter, the island of St Basile, (Vassili-ofrof) the Fortrefs, and the suburbs of Livonia, of St Alexander-Neufki, of Moscow, and Wiburg.

POWERFUL motives, without doubt, determined Peter I. to transport the imperial residence from the centre of the empire to Ingria, a frontier province, of which the conquest was scarcely secured to him. To exculpate him from the reproaches which on this account have been cast on him by his detractors, pigmies that perceived not they calumniated a man of genius, whose flight they could not reach; we might say in a few words, that he was induced to this removal of the imperial seat by the frequent insurrections of the people of Moscow, who are yet in a state of barbarism, and consider as sacrilegious innovations, the advances they are directed to make towards right reason, if they contradict their prejudices. The opposition they shewed against the establishments of Peter, gave him an abhorrence to this city, and induced him to fly to the banks of the Neva, whose situation enabled him to effectuate the two plans he had formed, of rendering Russia a maritime power, which could display her force in the Baltic,

Baltic, and the seas, which nature had placed for her convenience, and also of giving her influence in the balance of Europe.

It is true, it might be told him that he relinquished the climate of Moscow, the mildest of the empire, to go to inhabit a marshy and wild country; that if the Neva promised conveniencies for navigation, it presented also an infinite number of obstacles, that he was not ignorant that the isles and rocks of the gulf of Finland rendered its navigation very dangerous, and that the Bar at its mouth would not allow large ships to come to St Peterburg. Peter saw and knew all these inconveniencies, and built this capital, celebrated in our days, which in 1703 was nothing but an extensive swamp, inhabited by a few fishermen. The philosopher, who with sorrow sees in conquerors and the greatest part of the masters of the earth, called Kings or Emperors, nothing but men, who have destroyed rather than built, delights to trace the progress of this rising city. As soon as Peter the Great had conquered Ingria against the Swedes, and extended the boundaries of his empire as far as the coast of the Baltic sea, he formed the resolution of raising a fortress on a small island at the mouth of the Neva, in order to secure his conquests, and open a new road to commerce. The first beginning was the establishment of a trifling battery on another island of the Neva,

B occupied

now occupied by the academy of sciences. The officer who commanded there, was named *Vassili*; and as the orders he received from Peter came to him under the address of *Vassili-na-ostrof*, that is, *Vassili on the island*; this part of the city retained the name of *Vassili-ostrof*.

ON the 16th of May 1703, this fortress was begun, and, in spite of the obstacles occasioned by a swampy ground, the inexperience of the workmen, joined to the rigour of the season, and still more to the wicked designs of some malcontents, who secretly wished to discourage them, there was seen rise, as by a kind of enchantment, a citadel surrounded by a very solid earthen rampart and six bastions, which were repaired some time after.

PERRY, who has written on Russia, and was then in the country, tells us, that the workmen who built this fort, were even in want of the most necessary tools, as mattocks, shovels, and wheel-barrows, and, to the astonishment of beholders, in the space of five months, a fortress was seen rise from below the ground, although the soil, adds he, was so thin in this place, that the people employed were under the necessity of carrying it in the skirts of their coats, or in bags made of mats, the use of wheel-barrows being then unknown to them.

SCARCELY was this fortress built, when Peter wished to have a small house for himself on the neighbouring

neighbouring island. From this house, and from his residing there, the island took the name of *St Peterburg*, which it afterwards gave to the capital. This house, low and narrow, is still preserved in memory of a sovereign, who was pleased to lodge in it. There is no doubt but this ought to be the most august monument in *St Peterburg*. Soon after he caused another wooden house be built in the neighbourhood, larger and more convenient, in which Prince *Menzikof* lodged, and where he gave audience to foreign ministers. At a moderate distance from this, was a tavern very much frequented by the courtiers; for Peter himself often went to it on Sunday after divine service, and it is a general rule, that courtiers follow their masters. There they not only drank at the side of their monarch, who was very fond of parties of this kind, but they were besides attracted thither by the exhibition of fire-works and other entertainments.

ON the 30th of May 1706, Peter made the earthen ramparts of the fortress be lifted, and founded a new one on the same ground. In 1710, Count *Galitzin* built the first brick house. The year following, the Emperor raised a second on the same plan; and hard by it, another. His example was an order for the Russian lords; so that these buildings succeeded with astonishing rapidity; and this settlement, that announced not what it was to be, in a few

few years became a flourishing capital. After that can it be said, that kings are not magicians? But from the accounts we are going to give, some judgment may be formed of Peter's despotic authority, and of his zeal to enlarge and embellish this Capital, and make it equal to the other cities of the Courts of Europe.

IN the year 1714, he ordered all the houses on the island of St Petersburg, and in the Admiralty-quarter, particularly those on the banks of the Neva, to be built of bricks and wood, after the German fashion. He published an order, enjoining every noble proprietor of five hundred peasants to build a certain extent of ground, and a proprietor of a thousand peasants a double extent; the former were obliged to build at least three houses, and the latter six. The principal merchants were bound to have a house at St Petersburg. Besides, he ordered that every large ship, which entered the port, should bring thirty stones, every small one ten, and every peasant's waggon three stones, to be used in the erection of bridges and other public edifices; that the roofs of the houses till that time covered with boards and bark, and consequently too much exposed to fire, should be done with tiles and turf. In 1716, the Emperor gave his approbation to a regular plan for the new city, and made it be published. The principal part was to be on the island of Vassili (Vassili-estrof) and it was to be intersected, like the cities

cities of Holland, by canals dug in the principal streets, and skirted with trees, but this plan was not executed. The engineer entrusted with the direction of these canals, confined them so, that it was impossible to draw any advantage from them. Those which are yet remaining, do not answer the purpose Peter had in view, viz. the cleanness of the streets: besides, in the construction of the houses, the gutters are so clumsily executed, as to pour all the rain water upon them. There was also another inconvenience. The Empress, Ann, wished to reside in the Admiralty-quarter. The nobility, who follow and ape their masters, imitated the example of the sovereign, so that at this day, if you except some public edifices, and a row of houses on the banks of the Neva, Vassili-ostrof is the worst quarter of the town, and alone contains more wooden houses than all the rest together.

PETER's successors have continued to embellish St Petersburg, but none has contributed more to this, than the Empress Catharine II. who, without any exaggeration may be called its second founder, for from the year 1762, more houses have been built in St Petersburg, than from its foundation to that period. Yet in spite of all the immense works and embellishments made by her, it is easily perceived that St Petersburg is a city yet in its cradle. Its aspect however is commanding and very picturesque.

esque. High and spacious edifices, the majesty of the Neva, its different arms, two superb quays, a multitude of steeples, some gilt, others silvered, form the most varied as well as the most agreeable perspective. The streets are generally broad, particularly those with canals. Among others there are three, which set off from the admiralty and extend to the extremity of the suburbs, and are at least half a league in length. The most part are paved and the rest are covered with planks after the old Russian custom. In these streets, which are nevertheless dirty in winter and full of dust in summer, there are foot-ways very convenient for persons walking. At the corner of every street there is a post painted green, on which is written the name of the street in German and Russian.

IN some quarters, but especially in Vassili-ostrof, there are wooden houses, which are hardly any thing but cottages, at the side of magnificent public buildings, but this odd appearance is less common there than in Moscow, the only city, from which one can form an idea of what a Russian city formerly was.

THE brick houses are overlaid with a kind of stucco of a whitish colour, which has made several foreigners say, they were built of stone. There are only two houses in St Peteriburg, built of stone. One is the Empress' palace, on the banks of the
Neva,

Neva, which is called the marble-palace from a magnificent colonnade of Granite; the other is the church of St Isaac, which merits the attention of travellers.

THE hotels of the nobles are in general vast piles of building, although not so great nor magnificent as many of those to be seen at Moscow. They are richly furnished and with as much elegance as at Paris or London. They stand chiefly on the south bank of the Neva, in the Admiralty-quarter, or in the suburbs of Livonia and Moscow, which are the most beautiful quarters of the city.

THE banks of the Neva furnish a singular prospect. The water of this deep rapid and broad river is as clear as crystal. They boast of it as the best in Europe. Yet *Macle*, a celebrated chymist, who first analysed it, found it contained mineral particles, which may prove hurtful to a constitution not accustomed to it. It is also at first very unwholesome to foreigners, to whom it gives diarrhæas and hemorrhoids. To avoid these accidents, it must at first be boiled and softened with wine and mead. This is the method we took, and we found ourselves much the better for it. The two banks of this river are ornamented with beautiful houses. On the north side are the Citadel, and the buildings for the accommodation of the academies of sciences and arts. These are the most striking

VOL. I. C objects

objects. On the other bank stand the Imperial Palace, the Admiralty, several hotels belonging to Nobles, and the houses of the British in one row, almost all possessed by merchants of this nation. Facing these buildings and on the south side, extends a quay, that is a league in length, and suffers no interruption but by the buildings of the admiralty. Another quay as extensive and on the same plan has been built at the expence of the Empress. The parapet, which is breast-high, is covered with large pieces of Granite, which produce the finest effect, and form a monument of the munificence of this Princess, as beautiful as durable.

ALTHOUGH the houses in St Petersburg are closer to one another, than in other Russian cities, and though they are even contiguous in several quarters, yet this capital resembles them more in the irregular manner, in which these houses are scattered.

As the Russians wish to be lodged in the English style, that is, occupy a whole house, although the individual furniture of most of them cannot bear so heavy a rent, the consequence is, that the rents, instead of diminishing in proportion to the number of hours sleeping every day, on the contrary are augmented every year, and at present a simple individual can hardly be lodged for a hundred roubles*.

SOME

* Near twenty pound Sterling.

SOME years ago the Government surrounded the city with a rampart twenty one wrefts, or about five leagues in circumference, but this inclofure was executed with fo little attention and with materials fo infufficient, that it has need of ftrong reparation in many places. Built on a low marfhy fite, St Peterfburg is fubject to inundations, which have often caufed the greateft ravages. Thefe accidents are occafioned by the weft winds forcing back the freams of the Neva.

THE inhabitants of this city remember with terror the inundation of 1777, when in the ifles of Vafili-offrof and St Peterfburg, the waters rofe ten feet and a half above their level, overfet feveral houfes, and threw down the greateft number of the bridges. We fhall obferve in our way that the one part of St Peterfburg is connected with the other, only by a bridge of boats, that is drawn every time that the Neva begins to bring down floaks of ice. Thefe dragged from the lake Ladoga by a rapid current, rufh with precipitation into the river, where by their enormous fize they would caufe the greateft deftruction, and overturn every thing they might meet in their courfe during the inundation. Till the river be entirely frozen and afford a fafe paffage to even the heaviest carriages, the two parts of the city feparated by the river remain without any regular means of communication. To obviate

viate this inconvenience, because it is impossible to build a bridge on account of the depth of the river, the Government and the Colleges, which were formerly at Vassili-offrof near the Exchange, have been removed into the district, where the Imperial Palace stands.

CHAP. III.

EQUESTRIAN statue of Peter I.—Temperature of St Petersburg.—Long and short days.—Evils occasioned by the cold.—Means of guarding against it.—Singular amusements on the Neva during Winter.—Famous market held at Christmas.—Provisions brought thither.

NOT far from the Neva, and near the bridge of boats just mentioned is a monument, that *Gratitude and Admiration have erected to Peter the Great*. It is an equestrian statue of this Prince, of bronze, of Colossean size, and the work of the celebrated Mr Falconet. It was raised at the expence of the Empress in honour of the memory of a prince, whom she has made it her duty to take for her model, and we may add without flattery, whose virtues and abilities she possesses without his vices.

It is really a masterly performance. Mr Falconet has completely hit the figure of the monarch. His
 leading

leading features are expressed with wonderful art. They say this part is the work of his daughter-in-law. The Prince is represented scrambling up a steep rock, and almost reaching the summit. He is crowned with laurel and dressed after the manner of the Asiatics. His right arm is stretched with nobleness, and in his left hand he holds the reins of his courser, whose beauty and attitude deserve to fix the attention of the best critic.—He is supported only on the hind feet, and is in the movement of a vigorous courser darting on a height. What constitutes the merit of this monument is, that it was difficult to join solidity with perfection, considering the weight of the mass. Yet nothing has been neglected in this work. A brazen serpent, which the horse treads on, has been since, and very ingeniously added as an ornament, and to procure a more perfect balance to all this mass, of which the point of rest is imperceptible, the courser's tail, long and flowing, falls slightly on the serpent.

This pedestal is an enormous rock of Granite; the very rock, which Peter I. ascended, when on the frontiers of Finland and in the beginning of the war with Sweden, he wished to view the country, where he was going to engage in battle. It was Catherine the second, who thought on removing this heavy mass from its natural situation to Petersburg; an undertaking which cost a hundred

and eighty thousand roubles, and immense labour to the peasants employed in it.

AN anecdote is told, highly descriptive of Courtiers, but especially of favourites. When an attempt was made to dig up the rock entire, and put it in motion, the workmen employed for this purpose, being either awkward or incapable, tried every method, without success. Others were sent but they succeeded no better. Then Mr Betzkoi, who was and still is superintendant of the buildings belonging to the Empress, published a premium of seven hundred roubles to whoever would devise a method of transporting the rock to St Petersburg. A poor Farrier, repairs to the house of Lascaris, an adventurer patronised by Betzkoi and entrusted with this undertaking. He mentions a simple way of lifting the rock. Lascaris grasps at it, as well as the roubles it ensured—A score was given to the Poor Devil, the inventor, to keep him silent—He was in misery, he took the twenty roubles, kept silent, and at court nothing was talked for several days, and till the arrival of the rock, but the plan of the Engineer Lascaris—How many Lascaris' have we seen in other places and in all periods!

THE rock is of the most beautiful granate, and every day is acquiring a better polish. Many ladies get fragments of it for ear-rings, neck-laces and other

other ornaments, with which they choofe to deck themselves.

ON this fingular pedeftal is the following infcription, which, for its fimplicity, is worthy of Peter and of Catharine.

PETRO I. CATHARINA II.

POSUIT

An. 1782.

IT was on the 27th Auguft 1782 that the inauguration of this ftatue took place, to the folemnity of which Catharine efteemed it incumbent on her to add by diftinguifhing herfelf by feveral acts of beneficence. She pardoned all the criminals, who had incurred capital punifhment, the deferters that fhould join their regiments within a limited time, and all thofe who had been condemned to public works, provided they were not guilty of murder.

PEOPLE, who have ftaid long in Ruffia, and have obferved the temperature of the air in that country, as well as the effects of the cold felt there, obferve, that towards the month of September the weather is very variable, that the rains of Autumn are very frequent and very heavy, that of thirty days at this feafon, there are twenty four rainy. It is very cold in the evenings and mornings, and even when it has not rained, the grafs and trees are covered with
hoar

hoar frost. Winter and summer are not, as they are in our climates, separated by a spring and an autumn of some length. There they seem to succeed one another almost immediately. Fires are used till the 10th or 15th of June; at this time, which is summer solstice, the sun rises at half an hour after two in the morning, and does not set till half after nine at night; a space, which with the morning and evening twilight gives a day of 21 hours, but they pay dearly for it in winter, since from the 10th or 15th December, the sun rises at half past nine o'clock in the morning, and sets half an hour after two afternoon, so that their day is only five hours long, and the fog sometimes intercepts the greatest part of it.

FROM the month of November the Neva is commonly entirely frozen, and a short time after the Gulf of Finland is covered with ice, so that sledges go with ease from St Peterburg to Cronstadt. The road is marked on the surface by poles. In the months of December and January the weather is very variable. It passes often from cold the most piercing to thaw the most unexpected, and again becomes very cold.

When the cold is not in all its rigour, and Fahrenheit's thermometer is not below ten degrees, one may walk about in a single cloak. But when the cold is more intense, haste must be made to

put on the Russian accoutrements, the fur-cap to five the ears, the pelisse or fur-cloak, the fur-boots and shoes for the defence of the rest of the body. One is induced to adopt this custom with the more reason, that he has continually before his eyes frightful disasters and misfortunes without number, which the intenseness of the cold produces in that country. Nothing is more common than to meet every step, especially at the return of spring, unfortunate people, one with a hole in his cheek, another a tatter of an ear, &c. But it must also be acknowledged, that the greatest number of these accidents originate in the imprudence of those, who take the air after a debauch, and who in that situation neglect the precautions they would take if they were in cool blood. To cure these evils the Russians rub the frost-bitten part with snow. This friction performed in this way, or with flannel, is the ordinary remedy, but if they be imprudent enough to go near the fire, or plunge the part affected into hot water, it immediately mortifies and decays.

The common people however, in spite of the rigour of the season, work as usual, and drivers appear on their sledges, without being affected by the cold, though both their beards and hair be covered with icicles. These people, it is true, are clothed in a way to defy the rigour of the cold. Their principal attention is paid to the defence of the extremities of

their bodies, legs, hand and heads. All are under fur, and this fur is a sheep-skin, whose wool is turned inward. This coarse pelisse is fixed round their bodies, by a large leathern girdle; but yet these good people have their necks bare, and their breasts covered only with a single shirt. Indeed their dress and long beards defend these parts so, that they are never so liable to be frost-bitten, as the extremities of their bodies. We observed also, that notwithstanding the extreme cold, the women were washing their linen in the Neva, or in the canals. They open the ice with a hatchet, dip the linen in these holes with their hands bare, and while they rub it, the ice forms anew, so that they are obliged to break it continually. There are some who wash two hours together, when the thermometer is 60 degrees below the freezing point, which is a strong proof that our bodies may be accustomed to almost any thing.

It often happens, that drivers and servants, waiting on their masters, die frost-bitten. To prevent these melancholy accidents as much as possible, large fires of whole trees are kindled in the area of the place, and the principal squares. The soldiers, who cannot wear their beards, so useful for the defence of the throat, commonly surround their necks with a handkerchief, and cover their ears with a large bit of flannel.

THERE





The Author had the pleasure of being admitted to our Kitchen, &c.

Printed by R. M. G. and Son, Perth.

THERE is not a spectacle in the world like that, which the Neva exhibits in winter. Carriages, sledges, an infinite number of people on foot, are continually crossing it, and thus form a succession of objects always in action. Different parties of common people, dispersed or together, busy or amusing themselves, every one in his own way. Here are long spaces surrounded with barriers, in favour of those who go a skating. There is an inclosure in which horses are exercised, as in a riding school, and farther off the croud is attracted by a sledge race—The space, in which they run, is circular and about a mile in length.

THE artificial mountains made of ice are also another amusement, for the common people. They raise on the river a kind of mount, about thirty feet high, with a platform at the top, to which they go up by a ladder. From the top of this to the bottom, extends an inclined plane, all the way covered with ice, which they contrive to make by planks, on which pieces of ice are laid, and fixed by throwing beneath them water, which instantly freezes. From the place where this plane touches the ground, they draw a road, two hundred toises in length and four in breadth; they take off the snow, skirt it, as well as the mount, with fir boards; Then sledges, which are placed at the top of the mount, set off like lightning, and are let go on the inclined plane, with

such rapidity, that these sledges advance still more than an hundred toises, on the flat road drawn on the ice. Where this road ends there is commonly another mount of ice, in every respect like that, which they had just run over; come down from one, they immediately get upon another, by the same spring. The greatest experience is necessary for this exercise, and skill too to preserve the balance, particularly when they are hurling down the inclined plane, for the smallest false step, would occasion a dangerous fall. In these kinds of sports, it is more prudent to be a spectator, than an actor. The young people also amuse themselves, with sliding from the top to the foot of the mount, commonly on one sate, because they find it easier to preserve their balance on one leg, than on both. These small mounts when they are multiplied, form a prospect very agreeable, by the verdure, with which they are ornamented, and which bears a singular contrast to the snow.

THE market which is held on the Neva, merits also the attention of a traveller. The Russians being accustomed to lay in their provisions for winter, at the end of Christmas-Lent, (we shall speak afterwards of the four leuts of the Russians) there is held on the river and hard by the fortress, a market for this purpose, which lasts three days, and is singular in its kind. On the two sides of a street a mile in
length.

length, there is exposed to sale an immense quantity of provisions, sufficient to support all the inhabitants of the capital for three months. Thither are brought many thousand bullocks, sheep, hogs, pigs, geese, fowls, all so stiff and frozen, that you would imagine the animals petrified. The largest are ranged in circles, with the hind legs fixed in the snow, and the fore legs and the head turned towards one another: then follow several rows of smaller animals formed proportionally. The intervals are filled up with fowls and game, arranged in form of reservoirs. The fish and eggs, are also in heaps. Game, whose sale is free in Russia, is there in profusion, especially partridges, pheasants and the different aquatic birds. While contemplating this scene new to us, we verified this natural phenomenon, of which many people seem to doubt, namely, that the animals which live in the north grow white in winter. We saw a number of them whose most common colour is black, that had become white; some of the fowls caught before their change was completely effected, were variegated with white and black feathers.

THE provisions exposed in this kind of fair, of which we have just spoken, come partly from provinces very distant. The best veal is brought from Archangel, which is more than two hundred and sixty leagues from St Peterburg, yet its price is extremely

tremely moderate. Beef is sold at about two French sours a pound, of fourteen ounces and a half; Pork at * ten deniers; mutton at something below a sol; a goose at twelve sours; a pig at fifteen sours; the rest in proportion. Before using these meats, they must be thawed in cold water.

C H A P. IV.

COURT of the Empress.—Guards of the apartment.—Hall of audience.—Retinue of the Empress when she goes to the chapel.—Her dress on Gala days.—Remark on the Royal Family.—Riches of the Prussian Lords in their dress.—Their passion for diamonds.—The different orders with which they are decorated.—Historical remarks.—Winter balls.—Palace of the Hermitage.—Ceremony banished from it.—Is that true or possible in Russia?—Collection of pictures in this palace.—Winter garden, like an enchanted spot.—Distribution, which the Empress makes of her time.—Court Plays.

AFTER having recovered from our fatigues, and gone the rounds our business required, we showed ourselves at court. It is more brilliant than any in the

* 12 deniers make a sol, which is nearly equal to a half-penny Sterling.

the north, but to see it in all its splendour, a Gala-day must be chosen, such as the anniversary of the Empress or the Grand Duke. What struck us at first was the two centinels, that we found at the entry of the hall of audience. We were told they were two guards of the company, called *Chevalier-Guards*.— Their uniform was superb. We shall mention it, when we speak of the Empress' household troops, as we have seen nothing, any where, so magnificent.—In the inside of the hall, and at the door of that wherein the throne is, we saw other two. They are armed with carabines, and, when on duty, are allowed to sit down.

For seeing the Empress, the time when she goes to, or returns from the chapel, is commonly chosen, which is always a little before noon. She is preceded by the Great Officers of her household, twelve Chamberlains, twelve Gentlemen of the Chamber, four Aides-de-camp-Generals, the Officers of her Guards, at the head of whom, is always he, that commands the *Chevalier-Guards*; it was then Prince Potemkin. Then come the Ladies; first the Young Ladies of the Court, the Ladies or Maids of Honour, the Grand Governess, and then the Grand Duke and Duchesses. The Ladies walk two by two, and form a long file, pleasant to behold. Her Majesty, as she passes, salutes every person on her way, both on the right and left hand.

She

She commonly stops a moment at the entry to the hall of audience, and speaks with very great affability to the different members of the diplomatic body, who have then the honour of kissing her hand. On days of ceremony, she appears in the Russian dress, and wears a gown with a very short train, and a kind of vest, with sleeves close about the wrist, like a Polonese. This vest is embroidered with gold. She wears a cap covered with diamonds, and some years ago applied no little rouge.—Her air is majestic, although she is rather below than above middle size; and she has in the features of her countenance, especially when she speaks, much dignity and sweetness.

We shall say nothing of the external appearance of the Grand Duke and Duchess. They have been seen in Paris, and it is remembered, that the Grand Duchess is one of the most beautiful women in Europe.

THE Court is composed of the Empress, who is sixty three years of age, but appears older; of the Grand Duke, her son, who is near forty, and of the Duchess, who looks younger; of two young princes, of whom the oldest is sixteen years of age, and exceedingly promising; and of two young princesses, of whom Alexandra, the oldest, is ten, and Catharina is five years of age.

EVERY sunday, at noon, there is a drawing room at Court, for the ambassadors and foreigners, who have been presented; and to be so, no more is requisite than a decent appearance, and to be introduced by the ambassador of your own nation. Such as have been introduced, are allowed to kiss the Empress' hand in the audience-hall, while the Russian Lords kiss it with one knee on the ground; a piece of humiliating homage, which they have not dared to demand of foreigners. No Ladies appear on these occasions, except those of her Majesty's household, which makes the Court a little dull. It is also customary to go and pay compliments to the Grand Duke and Duchesses, in their lodgings, on certain occasions, such as the birth-days of the Princesses, or of the Empress.

ON the evening of the Court-days, there is a ball in the palace, which begins between five and six o'clock. Then the foreign Ladies kiss the Empress' hand, who, on her turn, kisses their forehead. Her Majesty, if not indisposed, makes her appearance towards seven o'clock, and if the company is not very numerous, she makes her party at Macao, in the ball-room. The Grand Duke and Duchesses, after dancing, play a little at whist, then they rise, advance to the Empress, pay their compliments, and return to their game. If there be a croud in the

Vol. I. E ball-room

ball-room, the Empress plays in a neighbouring room, which is open to all, who have been presented.

THE riches and splendour of the Russian Court exceed all description. Divers articles of Asiatic magnificence, united to the ingenious inventions of European luxury, are there displayed. An immense retinue of Courtiers always precede and follow the Empress, whose rich and brilliant dresses are besides enriched with jewels in profusion, which produces an effect, of which the pomp of other courts can only give a feeble idea. The court-dress for a gentleman, is a suit in the French fashion; and that of a lady, a gown and hoop-petticoat. The gown has long hanging sleeves, a court train, and is of a colour different from the petticoat. The ladies follow the fashions which prevail in Paris, but these never get to Russia, till they have grown old in France, and have been handed about through all Europe.— Among the objects of luxury exhibited by the Russian Nobility, none is more apt to strike foreigners, than this quantity of diamonds and jewels just mentioned; and with so much the more justice, that in all the other countries of Europe, diamonds seem almost entirely reserved for the use of the Ladies. In Russia, the gentlemen and ladies seem to vie in loading themselves most; and this expression is not over-strained, for there are many noblemen, who are almost wholly covered with them. Their but-

sons, their buckles, the hilts of their swords, their epaulets are of diamonds; often their very hats are edged with several rows of Jewels. This passion for jewels has descended even to the common people, who ape the great, but are not commoners the less. There are families of this class, who have as many as the nobility. The wife of a very rich Russian burgher ruins her unfortunate husband, in order to show herself with a head-dress, or with a girdle of pearls or jewels, to the value of some thousands of crowns.---Thus from the one end of Europe to the other, the ridiculous is every where found. It only differs in its kinds of extravagance, and if near the Pole, people wear girdles of jewels, in the south they have large rosaries of gold, on which hang some hundreds of little saints of the same metal.

On days of great ceremony the Empress dines in public, and commonly wears a crown of diamonds of immense value. She also has the St Andrews' and St George's ribbon suspended from the same shoulder, and collars of the order St Alexander-Neufki, St Catharine and St Wolodimer, which evidently leaves very little of her to bespangle. The courtiers are like their mistress, and it may be well affirmed, there is not a court in Europe better speckled, not even excepting Spain.

By the decoration of the Empress just described, the reader must observe, there are five orders in Russia:

namely,

namely, that of St Andrew, St Catharine, St Alexander-Neufki, St George and St Wolodimer, to which must be added that of St-Ann of Holstein, of which the Empress is not a member. It was lately established by the Grand Duke, and is subject to his disposal. The three first were founded by Peter the First. That of St Andrew in the year 1698, with a view to animate the nobility in the war against the Turks. He made choice of this saint for the patron of this order, because there is a tradition in Russia, that it was St Andrew, who introduced Christianity into that country. The Knight of this order, among whom the Kings of Sweden and Poland are distinguished, have for a decoration, the effigy of St Andrew on an enamelled cross, formed by the Imperial Eagle.

THAT of St Catharine was founded in memory of the assistance, which Peter received from his wife in the Camp of Pruth. We shall have occasion to recall to remembrance this memorable trait of Catharine's life. Writers, who have advanced, that this order is common to both sexes, are mistaken. There are none but female knights. Their number is twenty-five, and they are of the highest quality in Germany. They wear a large white ribbon, flung round them, at which hangs a medallion set

in diamonds, on which is a St Catharine with this motto: *Amore et fidelitate*.*

THE order of St Alexander-Neufki, was confirmed by Catharine I. in the year 1725, and comes in opinion and rank after that of St Andrew. It is conferred, so to speak, on Russian noblemen only. The badge is a collar, at which hangs a gold-cross with eight branches, and in the middle of which is the equestrian representation of St Alexander; a saint, of whom we shall have occasion to speak afterwards.

It was Catharine the second, who instituted the orders of St George and St Wolodimer; The first created in the year 1768, is a military order, divided into four classes. It has, for a badge, a black ribbon bordered with yellow, whence hangs a medallion, on which is an effigy of St George, throwing down the dragon. The order of St Wolodimer, instituted on the 3d of October 1782, is intended as a recompence to such as have distinguished themselves in the magistracy, or in the different branches of administration, that have been entrusted to them. It too is divided into four classes, whereof the last is destined for the counsellors of colleges, after thirty five years service.

THERE are every winter two or three masked balls at the court of St Petersburg, where persons of every description are admitted. Sometimes near eight

* By Love and Fidelity.

eight thousand cards are distributed; which may make it be supposed, that these balls turn out a rabble; but twenty magnificent halls, open and illuminated, receive this multitude, who find enough of room. In the middle of one of the halls is a space formed and inclosed by a Balustrade, a little elevated, and more ornamented than any other place, which is reserved for the nobility, and all the variegated tribe of the court. As this is not the country of equality, but of great distinction of rank and of pride, the hall of Apollo, which is very elegant and of a circular form, is reserved for the Burgeses, and such as have not been presented at court. In the rest, where tea and refreshments are taken, there are gaming tables, goers and comers. Every one has liberty to wear, or take of the mask, at his pleasure—The nobility in general dress in a Domino.

AT these balls the Russians of inferior rank, wear the ordinary dress of their province, only with some additional finery. The appearance of these different fashions, some of which are very whimsical, produces a singular mixture, and figures more diversified, than the most capricious imagination ever invented in the masquerades of other countries. Yet, in this country, one sees none of these masquerades in a group, as in Italy, Spain, and Constantinople, when the Group-figure is, for instance a village marriage,
a national

a national historical trait, or some scandalous anecdote of some character distinguished at court.

HER Imperial Majesty generally appears at the balls about seven, and retires at eleven at night. To form a judgment of the taste of this Princess, in what is entertainment, amusement and decoration, the hermitage must be seen. This is a building separated from the palace, with which it communicates by a covered gallery. It is so named, because the Empress retires thither sometimes; for in other respects, it has nothing of a hermitage but the name, the rooms being very spacious, and decorated with a munificence truly royal. In this favourite retreat, Catharine usually passes an hour or two every day. On Tuesday evening, she gives a private ball and a supper, to the principal members, who form her court. The foreign ministers, and all not of this small select number, are seldom admitted, and from this kind of Orgies, it is said, *all ceremony* is as far as possible banished, without any deficiency in that respect due to an august sovereign; that is to say, there is no ceremonious etiquette, but there is a constraint, though it is pretended, that the servants even are removed from the room where the guests are, and on this account the supper is served up on small tables, called tables of confidence, which by an ingenious mechanism, rise up through the floor by a trap. What precautions the Great take

to be free and easy from servants! and how much justice there is in the remark of that Jean Jacques, who said, that *he alone is free, who has no occasion to put another's hand to the end of his own arm.* This is a proof of what has been just said, that constraint is only dissembled in this abode, because in the different rooms of this palace there are directions and rules for the behaviour of every member of this chosen party. They all seem to have a tendency to encourage the guests in banishing form, and to impress their minds with this idea, that they are at their ease. One of these rules is written in French, whereof this is the purport: *Sit down where you will, and where you please, without it being a thousand times repeated;* which would mean, that to make people sit down in presence of their masters, the invitation must be repeated a *thousand* times. But in spite of smile and grimace, the Courtier, and above all, the Russian, resembles the dog, mentioned by La Fontaine in his fable of the dog and the wolf.*

THE Palace of the Hermitage contains a numerous collection of pictures, chiefly purchased by her Majesty. The finest are those of Crozat's Cabinet,

* Fable 5. Book 1. Where the wolf meets a pretty dog, but with his neck swollen:—

WOLF. What means that? DOG. Nothing at all. WOLF. What nothing. DOG. A trifle. WOLF. But tell me. DOG. The collar with which I am bound is perhaps the cause of what you see.— Bound! says the wolf, &c.

net, which the Empress got from the heirs of Baron de Thiers. Houghton's collection, whose loss all the English amateurs may deplore, have considerably enriched that of the Czarina.

A WINTER and a summer garden contained within the boundaries of this building, is one of these objects of curiosity not to be seen in any other European palace. The summer garden, which is in the true Asiatic taste, occupies all the top of the edifice. The winter garden entirely covered and surrounded with glass windows, is a high and spacious green house, in which are gravel walks. It is ornamented with parterres, flowers, orange trees, shrubs, and stored with an infinite number of birds from different climates, which fly from tree to tree at freedom. All this produces an effect, so much the more agreeable, that it bears a singular contrast to the gloomy season of the year. But are there seasons for Kings? Is not nature, whom they manage as they will, compelled to show them a smiling countenance, while she is every where a prey to the gloomy hoar-frosts of winter. Thus the Courtier, whom secret sufferings consign to sorrow, affects before his prince the smile of gaiety, and contentment.

It will, it is presumed, be acceptable to our readers, to give an account of the manner, in which the Empress distributes the employment of her time,

for the most minute circumstances are interesting, when they have for their object, persons on whom the bulk of mankind have their eye. Her Majesty usually rises at six o'clock, and is engaged till eight or nine, in public business with her Secretary. At ten, she begins her toilette, and it is during this interval that the ministers of state, and the aides-de-camp in waiting, pay their compliments, and receive her orders. When she is dressed, at eleven o'clock or thereabout, she sends for her grandsons, Alexander and Constantine, or she goes to visit them in their rooms. Before dinner, she receives the visit of the Grand Duke and Duchess, and sits down at table before one o'clock P. M. She has always at dinner, ten or twelve persons, who are Generals or Officers on duty, a Lady or Maid of Honour, and two or three Lords of the chamber. Their Imperial Highnesses dine with her three or four times a week, and then the table contains eight covers. The Lord of the chamber, who is in waiting, sits always opposite to the Empress. Some person gives him a plate, which he presents to her Majesty. She receives it very politely, and afterwards dispenses with his attention. Her Majesty observes the greatest moderation, and continues seldom longer than an hour at table. She retires afterwards into her chamber, and about three o'clock, she goes into the library in the hermitage. At five o'clock,

o'clock, she goes to the concert or the play. When there is no court, she plays at whist with some lords, and the Grand Duchess, who is very fond of this kind of game. This party lasts till half an hour after ten o'clock, and at eleven the Empress is in bed. There is never any supper dressed. We shall observe by the way, that we may not be obliged to come back, that there are at St Peterburg, an Italian opera, a Russian comedy, and a French comedy. The opera is above par, the Russian comedy is detestable, and the French comedy sometimes like the Russian, and never equal to the opera.

THESE three entertainments are at her Majesty's expence, and spectators are admitted gratis.

CHAP. V.

The fortress of St Peterburg.—The Cathedral.—Tomb of Peter I.—Philosophical remarks on this Prince.—His way of life—His daily employments.—His knowledge.—Particulars of his private life.—His amours.—Sad consequences thereof.—His death.—Accounts of the celebrated Baron Lefort, his instructor and friend.—An anecdote.

AFTER having viewed the Empress, and the magnificence of her court, we were eager to visit the

fortress of St Petersburg, and the different public edifices of the capital of the Russias. The manner, in which this fortress was built, and which gave occasion to the founding of St Petersburg, has already been narrated in a part of the description given of this city. The walls of this kind of citadel are of brick, and fortified by five regular bastions. They encompass a small isle, of half a mile in circumference, formed by the arms of the Neva. There are in this inclosure caserns for a small garrison, some ordinary prisons, and apartments for state-prisoners; for the despot who builds, never forgets this article.

THERE is in the fortress, an arsenal, where among other articles, are observed, some old cannons, that were cast in the middle of the sixteenth century, under the reign of Iwan Basilowitch II. They are of very beautiful workmanship, and surprising, considering the time when they were cast.

IT is recorded in the Russian annals, that the art of casting cannon, was brought into Russia under Iwan, by Aristotle of Boulogne, and that Iwan II, to bring it to perfection, followed the example of his Grandfather, in employing none but foreign founders, and thus succeeded in procuring a good artillery. It is to this piece of attention, that these two monarchs, principally owed their success in war,
and

and the conquest of various provinces, which they annexed to the empire.

IN the fortrefs of St Petersburg, they also show a boat with four oars, which is preserved with as much veneration as care, in a building constructed of bricks, for the purpose of informing posterity, on the feeble beginnings of the Russian navy. Peter I. called this boat, *the little grand fire*, and made it be transported to St Petersburg, whither it was carried in pomp, with a view to excite the admiration of the people, by making them compare the state, in which the Czar found the navy, and the perfection to which he brought it.

THIS boat had been built under the reign of Alexander Michaelowitsch, by a Dutchman called Brant, whom this prince had brought into Russia, in the year 1681. Peter having accidentally seen this boat in a village near Moscow, asked why it had a form different from those he had been accustomed to see, till that day. Timmermann, a German engineer, who was instructing the Czar in fortification, told him that this boat had been built so as to struggle against the wind.

THE curiosity of this prince was greatly raised by this explanation. He abandoned himself to the impulse of his imagination, and sent for Brant, who was still in Russia—Brant was scarcely arrived, when he put to him question after question, and the boat provided

provided with a mast and rigging, was launched on the river Yaoufa. Brant went on board, and set sail to the great surprife of the Prince, who wifhed to go on board alfo, and who conceived under the direction of Brant, an idea of working a vefiel.

AFTER having often repeated thefe experiments upon the Yaoufa and a neighbouring lake, Peter made a yacht be built on the banks of the Mofcowa, which was launched in the year 1691. He went aboard and failed as far as Columna. Encouraged by this fuccéfs, he ordered Brant to conftitute for him, on the lake of Periflof, feveral fmall vefiels to carry cannon, and it was in this little fquadron, that this prince returned to Mofcow, in the fpring of the following year.

BRANT'S death, which happened fhort while after, interrupted the progrefs of this little armament, but it had no influence on the genius of Peter, and did not hinder him from continuing his expeditions on the lake. This prince, who attributed to the boat we are talking of, the idea he had formed of creating a navy, made it to be transported to his new capital in the year 1723, and on this occafion gave a grand entertainment, which he called the *Confecration of the little grand fire*.

IN the middle of the ifland, ftands the cathedral of St Peter and St Paul, whole architecture is of a tafte different from that of the other Greek churches.

Inftead

Instead of a cupola, it has a gilt brazen steeple, elevated two hundred and forty feet above the surface. The internal decorations are very simple, and more elegant, than any to be seen in any church in any Russian city, not even excepting Moscow. The paintings are in the modern taste of the Italian schools, and not in the barren style of the Greek painters. In this church are buried Peter the Great, and all his successors, except Peter II, who is interred at Moscow, and the unfortunate Peter III, whose remains are deposited in the monastery of St Alexander Neufky.

THESE tombs are all of marble, of the form of a square coffin, and bear an inscription in the Russian language, which is more chronological than anything else. At the sight of this monument, which contains the human spoils of Peter I, (who without flattery may be called Peter the Great, in spite of his faults, even in spite of his vices) a sentiment of fear and of veneration rises in the soul; especially when we recall the inflexible character of this legislator, who spared neither age, nor sex, nor the closest ties of blood. Doubtless this monarch was great, because he gave laws to his country, but above all because he knew his own weaknesses, and acknowledged them with sorrow. *I can reform my people, said he often, in consequence of some passion, of which he was not master, but I cannot reform myself.* A crowned-historian

torian criticised him too severely, when he said, *Peter died leaving in the world the character of an extraordinary man, rather than that of a great man, by covering the cruelties of a tyrant, with the virtues of a legislator.*

THIS cruelty, this ferocity even, that cannot be disguised, and tarnish his memory, his education and country had given him; but his virtues, why pass them over in silence? they were his own; His errors even were those of the genius, which wandered for want of a guide. We are far from exculpating the atrocities with which he is reproached: we content ourselves with removing them from our memory, that we may behold only a prince, who spent his life in reforming and civilizing his subjects, who created a navy and an army, which he himself disciplined: a prince, who introduced into his country the arts and sciences, agriculture and commerce; and in short laid the foundations of the greatness, to which Russia has since risen. But we will not cease to pity him, for not taking lessons of humanity, while he travelled through Europe to acquire them. We regret above all that his impetuous and elevated genius, was not brought to perfection; that his savage disposition was not softened, and corrected by the travels he had made among kingdoms, whose monarchs were not the executioners of their subjects. We will blame him besides for having
formed

formed the inpolitic as well as chimerical idea of introducing the arts and sciences by force, and of executing in a moment, what could only be the work of several years; especially in whatever hurt the manners and opinions of his people, by requiring of them a ready sacrifice of the prejudices consecrated by many ages.

BESTOWING a moment on the person of this celebrated man, and the principal acts of his life, which may characterize him; we will say that, Peter was of high stature, that he had a noble appearance, a sensible countenance and a stern look; that he was subject to a sort of convulsions, which sometimes changed the features of his face; that he expressed himself with ease and spoke with fire; that he was naturally eloquent, and harangued frequently. What distinguishes him particularly from those monarchs; who resemble the animal-bearers of relics, of whom notice is taken by the inimitable La Fontaine, (whom we delight to cite) is, that this prince disdained and despised the pageantry, that only surrounded his person, without affording him any relief. It was Prince Menzikoff, his favourite, whom he employed to represent him, and who by his magnificence discharged this commission in the most complete manner; displaying an Asiatic luxury, while Peter affected the simplest mode of life. In his household he had neither chamberlains, nor pages,

nor lords of the bed-chamber. Twelve *Donschiks* or valets served him, and formed his retinue, with twelve grenadiers, who did the honours of the palace inhabited by Peter, who was as great an enemy to palaces, as to the etiquette which is generated and reigns there. On days of ceremony, he, according to custom, always preferred his uniform to the embroidered dress, with which his predecessors had been accustomed to cover themselves. He sometimes dressed himself in it in the course of his reign, and appeared much confined. He one day appeared clothed with a suit of silver embroidery, but it was the day of Catharine the First's coronation, and the embroidery was the Empress' own work.

NEVER was a man more vigorous, more laborious, more enterprising, more indefatigable, than Peter I. He had men established to assist in quenching fires, which are well known to be very frequent in Russia. He himself had undertaken one of these dangerous commissions, and was seen mount first upon the top of a house on fire, with a hatchet, but no way intimidated by the danger. He had not confined himself to a motive of emulation for remedying this calamity, as terrible in Russia as at Constantinople; for in both countries, the houses are built of wood. He had issued a great number of laws, as severe as well understood, of which the chief was the abolition of the old stoves, whose defective

defective construction occasioned a thousand calamities; and he himself, an artist equally sagacious and improved, had substituted others of a much better form. Another law obliged the proprietors of houses to place on the roofs, close by the chimnies, large casks, that were to be always full of water. Inspectors were appointed to overlook the execution of this law, and there was a very heavy penalty levied on delinquents, of which the inspectors received a third. After all these laws, to which Peter's successors more or less lent support, the inhabitants of St Petersburg cannot, without shuddering, recollect the fire, which some years ago, in the isle of St Basil, consumed upwards of two thousand houses in less than three hours; and among these, the library of the celebrated Euler, which was to the correct arts and sciences an irreparable loss.

PETER also distinguished himself from other potentates of Europe, by his method of travelling, which was that of a simple individual. He went without retinue into the heart of Asia. He very often ran over the distance between St Petersburg and Moscow, which is upward of two hundred leagues, as another prince passes from his palace to his pleasure-house. In his friendship, in his hatred, in his vengeance, in his pleasures, he was extreme. He was the best scholar in his empire, spake several languages, was thoroughly acquainted with mathe-

matics, especially with what regarded naval architecture. At his death he left a ship on the stocks, of which he alone had directed the construction, and now it is most carefully preserved in the arsenal. This prince had a perfect knowledge of geography and history, which are, to a conquering prince, the sources, whence ambition draws pretexts for conquest. No science was strange to him. He understood the principles of medicine, was skilled in surgery, and gave himself out for an excellent drawer of teeth; a qualification, disputed by those, whose teeth he pulled. As to trades, a long list of those he had learned, might be made, in which he pretended to excel, or as it is reasonable to believe, in which he was only ordinary, turning excepted. Of this art there remain some masterly performances of his, especially a large lustre, with fifty branches, carefully preserved in the cathedral of St Peterburg, which the Russians take delight in showing to foreigners. In viewing this lustre, in which there is nothing, but what is very common, the philosopher is disposed to make allowance for their enthusiasm in showing this trifle, because it proves their gratitude.

As there is a certain delight received from the minutest circumstances respecting great men, we hope it will be acceptable to enter into some of those, which regard his private life. He had distributed

his engagements during every hour of the day, and attended to them with a punctuality, which nothing could derange. He rose in all seasons at five o'clock in the morning, read till seven, and turned till eight. He then dressed himself to read, or hear read, the reports of his different ministers, made remarks on their memorials with his own hands, and wrote on his pocket books the ideas and plans of regulations suggested in these memorials. To this business succeeded what he called his walk, which consisted commonly in a turn to the dock-yards, to the ordinance foundery, to the manufactures he had arranged, or was going to arrange, or to the forests, where he was carrying on buildings, for which he gave directions with his pocket book in his hand. At eleven o'clock he returned home and sat down at table. Half an hour served him at dinner, and as long for his nap after it. At noon he went out again to visit those, whose names he had in the morning inscribed in his pocket book, and then you would see him go from the lodging of a general to a carpenter's work-house; from this to the office of a magistrate, and from the latter to the house of a maron, &c. &c. There were days and hours for holding of councils. On the days, when these assemblies did not sit, he filled up the vacant time with visits paid to the establishments, which he had formed for the education of youth; such

such as the school of the Cadets, the academy of Pupils for the Navy, where he staid sometimes for two whole hours. At six o'clock at night, he amused himself with the conversation of a friend, that is, a favourite courtier, for kings have no other friends. Most frequently he went into some assembly, where he played at chess, and forgot, at the side of an enormous round bottle, the temperance, which in people of dispositions naturally good, is more frequently a habit than a virtue, and inattention to which, in a legislator, is a phenomenon, or rather a monstrosity. Peter, in these societies, ceased to be a great man. It was the low *Commodus*, or the drunken *Vitellius*, abandoning himself to intoxication, and the excesses, which are its consequences. *Peter recovered* shuddered at the excesses of *Peter intoxicated*. It was in these moments of intoxication that he wanted to stab Lefort, to whom he owed so much. We shall say a word of this famous man. Peter's repentance, on this occasion, was not that of *Alexander* washing the body of the unfortunate *Clitus* with his tears; it was not so bitter. Peter was satisfied with asking pardon of his friend. As a man however great he be, is always a man, Peter, after his excesses, took the oath of drunkards, to drink no more, and like them, he broke it sometimes the same day.

THIS prince went to bed commonly at nine o'clock, and then no Russian was daring enough to go into the street, to which the Czar's apartment looked; for to awaken him, was a piece of inattention, which he never pardoned, but punished with the severest caning, administered with his own hand.

LOVE, or rather passion for women, was one of the weaknesses of this prince, as it has been and will be in all periods, that of so many great men, whom love seems to delight in putting on a level with persons of ordinary rank. But Peter made love not in the least like them, for his gallantries had no influence on his political affairs; and on the reins of government, which he held, love durst never lay a hand. If his serious employments felt no inconvenience, his finances felt still less. Lady Cross, whom he loved, the Countess Hamilton, and the beautiful Cramer, to whom he was successively attached, had no reason to extol his liberality. On the contrary, Anne Iwanowa Mons, who was in the highest degree of favour, was obliged to complain of this prince, and experienced a treatment from him, which the shabbiest revenue officer among us would not give his mistress. Dismissed by the intrigues and calumny of Menzikoff, who, to hurt her, joined to the reasons of the courtier, motives of personal vengeance, she saw herself stript of the costly jewels the prince

prince had given her, and expelled from a superb house, which he had furnished for her.

THE princess of Cantimir, one of the most beautiful women that Georgia has produced, and as full of understanding as of charms, had made on Peter the strongest impression; and he would have placed her on the throne, even to the prejudice of Catharine I. but for the odious trick hatched by Menzikoff, to supplant this favourite, who had already born a son to the Emperor, and was on the eve of bearing him another. In reality Peter intended to marry this princess solemnly, and as she was pregnant, he waited to see if she would bring him a son, in order to determine him finally; but fortune and intrigue extricated Catharine from this dilemma. The Persian war succeeded, and detached the Czar from this love adventure, which he soon forgot, because Catharine accompanied him on the expedition; and the Princess Cantimir had a miscarriage: a report was spread that Menzikoff was the cause of it.

IN general, Peter was not nice in his amours, and did not conceal them; at least if we may judge from a picture to be seen at Peterhoff, in which this prince is represented as a Dutch peasant in a gin-shop, sitting on a cask, embracing a fat servant-girl. It is said, that in this country a gardenér, who surpriséd him with his daughter, pursued him with a rake. It was in Holland too, that an unlucky gallantry taught

taught him not to give himself up to the first object. This love-misfortune was the original cause of an urinary retention and of the stone, two cruel diseases, that brought him to the grave.

IN the year 1723, the first of these diseases brought on him the sharpest pains, but was of short duration. In 1724, it showed itself in an alarming manner, and Peter, whose activity admitted of no rest, left himself to the management of Quacks, who prescribed for him no regimen, and palliated instead of curing his complaint. What is singular, though he was within reach of the celebrated Boerhave, he did not think on calling him, or thought it was out of time. After several relapses, Peter at length sunk under his complaint, and expired on the 28th January 1725. We shall return back on the last moments of this prince, when we speak of the intrigues, that set Catharine I. on the throne.

ONE of the principal instruments of Peter's glory, considered as a regenerator of his country, was Baron Lefort, for whom he had always a particular esteem, and to whose counsels he always paid a dutiful deference. This Lefort was the Czar's Mentor in his early youth, and is too famous for us to pass him over in silence.

FRANCIS Lefort, born at Geneva, in the year 1665, and descended from respectable citizens, had left his native country, to follow the profession of

arms, for which he had a very strong inclination, and every necessary talent. With a good appearance, boldness and good fortune, he soon distinguished himself. He entered into the Russian service, where fortune, that seemed to carry him thither to appear in a distinguished character, introduced him to the acquaintance of Peter, who saw him first in the house of the Danish ambassador at Moscow, in the year 1695. The Czar was nineteen, and Lefort thirty nine years of age. The prince was surpris'd at the ease, with which this foreigner spake the Russian, although he had been scarcely one year in Russia. Lefort pleas'd him, was invited and admitted into his suite, and very soon into his most intimate familiarity. There was between them a certain sympathy, which is often found in nature, but for which it is very difficult to account. There was also a conformity of inclination, for both of them had genius, and a fondness for plans, which in men of their cast, are not vain dreams, that are never, or but incompletely realized. Thus Lefort had no difficulty in making his young pupil understand, that there was another manner of living and reigning, than that which his stupid predecessors had adopt'd, and the doctile Peter, enlighten'd by the new rays, which Lefort pour'd upon his eyes, rescu'd his country from the barbarity, into which it was plung'd.

This celebrated man swayed not only over the morals of his master, but had the greatest ascendancy over his natural temper. Peter, subject to passions, bordering on madness, had intreated Lefort to bring him back to reason in these transports of fury, which he himself could not moderate. To succeed in this, Lefort employed means, as violent as the passion of the prince; and Peter was always obliged to him. The Czar made him General of his forces, and was indebted to him for some conquests; but it was principally in the regeneration of the empire, in the reform of the Russian army, and the creation of a navy, that Lefort assisted him by his councils. The Czar lost this Mentor and friend in the year 1699. Lefort was only fifty three years of age. After having performed the last duties to his cold remains, the emperor issued an order, by which the oldest of the family of Lefort, should be always entertained at court, at the expence of Government, but this order of the Czar was not respected by his successors, and the last of the Leforts, not having been able to give an account of the lottery funds entrusted to him, was arrested and conducted to the frontiers of Poland, with a sum of fifteen thousand roubles, and an injunction, that neither he nor any of his descendants should appear in Russia. It is affirmed, that the deficiency found in his cash-box, was only the

pretext of his disgrace, and that the true motive was his having displeas'd the cabal, which was in the pay of the King of Poland.

AMONG the numerous anecdotes related of Peter I. the most characteristic is that of this prince being in London, and running short of cash, which some merchants came to offer him on condition, that he would allow them the privilege of selling tobacco in Russia, which they said, would there meet with the most grateful reception, because the Russians being forbidden the use of tobacco by a religious precept, were uncommonly fond of the pipe. This prohibition was so much the more felt by them, that the patriarch had excommunicated all who smoked; for this reason, that the Mahometans, enemies to the christians, and more particularly to the Russians, used the pipe. The popes of Russia, in the pulpit, continually oppos'd this pretended abomination; and notwithstanding this prejudice, the Czar granted the privilege, and undertook to make the popes themselves smoke. This affair was almost as serious as the beards, whereof we shall speak in another place. The people in Russia at this day smoke without scruple. How many absurd prejudices Peter made disappear in this country. But after his time they would have recovered force, if his successors had not supported and governed after his principles.

NEAR Peter's tomb, are seen some Turkish flags, taken in the battle of Tchefine. They were displayed some years ago in a solemnity, which was celebrated in memory of the victory, in which they had been taken. The Empress, after the ceremony, placed them with her own hand on the tomb of the founder of the Russian navy, to which she attributed all the success of Russia against the Ottomans.

CHAP. VI.

Tomb of Catharine I.—of Alexis son to Peter I.—and of his sister Anne Petrovna.—Description of this princess.—Her character.—Anecdote on this head.—Particulars respecting her.—Tomb of the Empress Anne Ivanovna.—Her beauty.—On what terms she was called to the throne of Russia.—How she fulfilled them, when she was proclaimed.—Interesting particulars of this princess, of her weaknesses, and of her favourite Ernest Jean de Biren.

NEAR the ashes of Peter I. rest those of his first wife Catharine I.—of this beautiful Livonian, whom fortune brought from a humble cottage and from slavery, to set on the throne of the Czars, which she occupied with dignity—At another place we shall enter upon the particulars respecting this princess.

UNDER

UNDER a vault of the same church is interred without pomp or inscription, Alexis, son to Peter I. who was the first victim of the artifice of the ambitious Menzikoff, and of the resentment of an inhuman father, though perhaps justly irritated. The remembrance of his fate cannot but strongly affect all sensible souls, and that Peter may not be regarded with horror, it is alledged in his favour, that he only sought to exclude from the throne a successor, who was unworthy of him, and who threatening to destroy all his reforms, was going to plunge his country again into the Barbarity, from which he had rescued it with so much difficulty. Nevertheless the exclusion of Alexis, the decree which followed his death, Peter's uncertain and fluctuating ideas on the right of succession, which his decree introduced into Russia, have since caused the frequent revolutions, which we have seen take place in the government of that empire.

NOT far from the unfortunate Alexis, and under the same vault, is interred Charlotte Christina Sophia of Brunswic, his wife, whose fate was harder than her husband's, because she deserved it less. Born in the year 1694, she married in the year 1711, the Czarowitch, who had seen her at her father's court. She died in the year 1715; partly of the grief her husband's bad treatment caused her, and partly of the bad effects occasioned by the birth
of

of Peter II. who was not more fortunate than those, from whom he had received existence.

THE ashes of Anne Petrowna, oldest daughter to Peter and Catharine, are deposited hard by her parents. This princess, less known than her sister, the Empress Catharine, deserved to be more so. She was perfectly beautiful, her laugh was agreeable, and her smile that of the graces. To much penetration, she joined the candour and goodness of a free and honest soul. Peter had taken care, in the education of his daughter, to unite with the gifts of nature, the abilities, which are the fruit of instruction. With uncommon facility, she spake the principal languages of Europe, especially the French, for which she had a particular predilection. She was distinguished by a singular presence of mind, which, in whatever situation she was, made her always act like the daughter of Peter.

THE young count Apraxin, being bold enough one day to make to her a declaration of love, and she having answered it in a way to make him lose all hopes of the success of his passion, he watched the moments when she was alone, threw himself at her feet, presented to her his sword, and intreated her to end his sufferings by plunging it into his heart.—*Give*, said Petrowna to him, in the coolest manner, *Give it me*, and you will see the daughter of your Emperor wants neither courage nor resolu-
tion

tion to punish a forward fellow, who dares be deficient in respect to her. Apraxin; taken at his word, showed that he was a bragger, who deserved so severe a correction. With shame he returned his sword into the sheath, and intreated the princess to pardon a delirium, which was the effect of her charms. Anne pardoned this inconsiderate man, but exposed him to ridicule by publishing his adventure.

In the year 1725, she married Charles Frederic, Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, to whom she had been betrothed for some time. She had pretensions to two crowns, and obtained none. That of Sweden of right reverted to her by her husband, only son to Charles XII. but the Swedish states preferred to her *Ulrica Eleonora*, youngest sister to this monarch. Peter I. her father, destined the crown of Russia for her, but his death, preceded by long delirium, prevented him from putting his last will in execution. He even attempted to put it in writing, but none of the words, which his dying hand wrote, could be decyphered, except these *Give all to——*. Catharine I. would have also wished that her daughter should succeed her, but she was afraid of the party which called for Peter Alexiowitch, as grandson of the Emperor; and rested contented with admitting her into the council of regency, which was to rule during the minority of this prince. The fate

fate which persecuted Anne, allowed her to attend only once. She was excluded from it by the despotism of this same Menzikoff, who was indebted to her for a great part of his rise; and as gratitude is none of the virtues of courtiers, she was banished from Russia by this arrogant minister, and with her husband retired to Kiel, where she died in 1728, in the twenty second year of her age, leaving a son, the unfortunate Peter III.

CLOSE by the tomb of this princess is the Empress Anne's, second daughter to Iwan Alexiowitsch. She is described as a woman, who to beauty joined the affability, which conciliates hearts, that beauty does not always secure. Though timid, she knew how to support her rank, and make herself be obeyed. She was the widow of Frederic William, Duke of Courland, with whom she lived only fifteen days; and she was staying at Mittaw, when she was called to the throne of Russia, of which she never dreamed. Peter had died of the small pox, without having had any children, and had not taken the precaution of naming a successor. Hereditary right having been then abolished, the eight members, who compose the high council, took advantage of this circumstance, to render themselves all-powerful; and formed the project of limiting the unrestrained power of the Cæars, by leaving them only the externals of royalty. They imagined they would

find in Anne the feeble instrument, to which they would entrust the imperial coronal, and that they would really be sovereigns. Reckoning on every thing from the gentleness of this princess, they chose her in preference to her oldest sister, the duchess of Mecklenburg, and to the descendants of Peter the Great. They made her see, that having a weaker right to the crown than her sister, she owed them every thing, and consequently they dictated to her conditions, to which she subscribed without hesitation, persuaded that it would be easy to recede from them. Such is the sincerity of the Anointed of the Lord, that they swear and perjure themselves according to circumstances.

The most remarkable of the conditions prescribed to Anne were—*first*, that the Czarina would exercise no act of sovereignty, and impose no kind of tax without the consent of the High Council; *secondly*, that she would punish no gentleman with death, till after the proof of a capital crime was taken, and in this case she would never confiscate his goods; *thirdly*, that she could neither alienate nor dispose of the crown domains in any way; *fourthly*, that she could not marry, nor name a successor, without the advice and consent of the High Council, &c.

Her Majesty was solemnly arrived at St Peterburg, was immediately invested with the imperial badges, and had scarcely felt the reins of government, when

her

her guards and the principal nobility, that is to say, the greater part of the courtiers, who alone profit by the abuse of arbitrary power, appeared indignant at seeing the authority of their sovereign thus restricted, and came in a body to solicit her to break the fetters, which had been forged for her, and to make her power as absolute as that of her predecessors, by annulling an illusory act, which an illegal power had made her subscribe. Anne appeared at first scrupulous to reverse an engagement, that she had contracted, but soon she tore the act, that bound her, by appearing to yield to the wishes of the nation; and this nation composed of nine or ten courtiers of the Empress' guards, and thirty intriguers, whom Osterman and Biren had raised, and put in motion. It is not in France alone, that the word *nation* has been abused, to express the lowest minority—a handful of factious men. So true it is, that from the one pole to the other of our globe, we find intrigue and cabal continually in activity, for the purpose of deceiving the honest portion of society, who know not how to lay secret plans.

THE act in question being thus annihilated, the High Council was suppressed, and the Empress invested a-new with a power as unlimited as that, which her predecessors had enjoyed.

AN attentive education, a long absence from the court of Russia, and a stay as long in a small court,

where little or no etiquette existed, having contributed to soften her character, and divest her of that oriental pride, which the sovereigns of Russia love to boast of,—Anne was adored by her people more than any other monarch had been; because the Russians, like all other subjects in Europe, think themselves obliged to their masters, not only for the good they do them, but also for the evil they do commit.

ANNE, as we have said above, passed for a pretty woman, though she was too jolly; but this defect was hid or lessened, by a majestic stature, which gave her a magnificent air, supported by a commanding look, which impressed respect on all that approached her. She had likewise the uncommon and consequently precious faculty of distinguishing the people, who were worthy of the favours they solicited; which supposes the most penetrating sagacity, because none mask themselves with so much art, or show themselves more to advantage, than the solicitors of favours. Anne possessed also an invaluable quality of obliging and rewarding, in such a way, as to augment the value of the favour and the recompence, by the ease, with which they were granted.

She had the rage of ostentation, and was fond of luxury, not in herself; but in her courtiers, to such a degree, that they were looked down on, if they showed

threwed themselves at court twice in the same dress. The Russian Lord, who is excessively fond of dress, outdid the wishes of the Empress, by joining an Asiatic magnificence to a variety of suits. In the midst of this croud of courtiers, covered with gold or jewels, Anne delighted in appearing in the simplest dress. A silk handkerchief round her head, a scarlet jacket and black petticoat were her usual morning dress; and a long gown, of the Russian fashion, instead of a jacket, her dress in the afternoon. Her greatest pleasure was to see assembled round her a great circle of nobles; and her favourite conversation was that where epigram and *bon mot* prevailed, which produced *Calambours* in Russia as well as at Versailles.

SOME who have written without indulgence to the sex, to which Anne belonged, have allowed themselves to say, that she was careless and averse to business, because she was not capable of that unremitting attention, which is not found even in men, if they have not been accustomed to labour from their early youth. The Russians were obliged to Anne for confiding, during trying conjunctures, in the ability and experience of old Count Ostermann, whom Elizabeth condemned to die on the scaffold, notwithstanding his capacity, and the obligations that Russia was under to her. But Anne is reproached for having given herself up (to say nothing

nothing more expressive) to Biren, who strangely abused his power. This blind confidence of the Empress, was, it is said, one of the blunders of love, which has caused the commission of so many.

ERNEST Jean de Biren, so celebrated in the north, for his good and bad fortune, was born of obscure parents, in Courland. His father, however, who had made his fortune by selling the forests of the Dukes of Courland, had employed it in giving his son a complete education, which, joined to the judgment and favourable appearance this young man had received from nature, made him be soon distinguished by Anne, then duchess of Courland; who made him first her secretary, and soon after lover. The favour Biren enjoyed with this princess, when she came to the empire, was such, that she appeared to have seated herself on the throne, only to share it with her lover. Biren, absolute minister, then governed his mistress, as a Sultan manages his seraglio. To the arrogance of a favourite, he joined the ferocity of a Cossack, and his cruelty recoiled on his sovereign, who was accused of severity, and of having governed the Russians with the *Knout* in her hand, while she was naturally humane, and continually opposed the sanguinary measures of her favourite. She often employed even prayers and tears to soften this merciless man, and to obtain from him the pardon of the unfortunate victims

victims, whom he sacrificed to his resentment and caprice; for to incur his displeasure, the slightest inattention was only necessary, and the least effect of this displeasure was banishment into Siberia. Such was the iron sceptre with which this despot governed, that it is averred, that during Anne's reign, more than thirty six thousand persons were put to death or banished into Siberia.

ALTHOUGH the Empress did not order these sentences of death or banishments, she is not the less accountable to posterity for them, since she permitted these proscriptions to be made in her name. This princess died in the year 1740, after having named Iwan her successor. By this choice of an infant, she wished to prolong, even after her death, the reign of her lover, whom she declared Regent during the minority of the young Czar, which was not to end till he arrived at the age of seventeen years; and he was only some months old at Anne's death. Biren having been as inflexible and arrogant in the regency as in the ministry, raised against him a croud of enemies, who hurled him from the summit of greatness, into a cell at Berezowa in Siberia, on the banks of the Oby.

They say that Biren, in this dismal dwelling, softened the rigour of his fate by books, the Regent Anne having allowed him to carry into his exile the superb library, which he had collected at St Petersburg,

burg, during the time he was in favour. Books produced in him philosophical reflexions, and philosophy re-established calmness in his soul, by proving to him, that the existence of courtiers is only precarious and delusive.

CHAP. VII.

MONUMENT containing the ashes of the Empress Elizabeth.—Description of this Princess.—Her singular tastes.—Her devotion still more singular.—She takes no husband.—Opinion believed in Russia, respecting a secret marriage contracted by this Princess.—Particulars and anecdotes on this head.—Summary of the revolution, that placed her on the throne.—Lestocq, son to a French Refugee, the soul of this revolution. Particulars respecting this adventurer.—Respecting Schuwaloff another favourite of Elizabeth's.—Anecdotes of the history of Russia, published by Voltaire.—Reflexions on Elizabeth's government.

THE sight of Elizabeth's tomb recalled to our remembrance another weak woman. Anne was temperate, Elizabeth was indolent and voluptuous. Daughter to Peter I. and the beautiful Catharine, born in the year 1709. She was handsomer than her mother. She had a Roman figure, a majestic

mien.

mien, and a shape you could not help admiring, which she preserved all her life. She dressed in the plainest style, and this plainness in her ordinary dress was one of her tastes. To these gifts of nature she joined engaging manners, and an air of freedom, which inspired confidence. She had a quality rare in monarchs, gratitude for services done her, and she always rewarded them in the most generous manner. Her affability had made her contract the habit of saying only agreeable things, but in return, she was very fond of bearing them said of herself. Yet when her sensibility was offended, which was not ill to do, she armed herself with a disdainful pride, not easily borne.

ELIZABETH had a very particular turn, namely, amusing herself with cooking. It is said, she excelled in it, but that would not have been the case, if her courtiers had not made it a rule to think the dishes exquisite, which were seasoned by the royal hand; and with so much the more reason, that in this art, she pretended to have great knowledge; and if, when she admitted any nobles to table, a dish of her dressing, had not been always presented, upon which she took good care to collect opinions, which, as may be well imagined, were never equivocal.

ANOTHER whim of Elizabeth's was devotion, which she carried the length of childishness. She

dragged it into great expences, and a multitude of religious institutions, which might have made the Russian nation retrograde, if a philosophical had not succeeded an enthusiastic woman. It is affirmed that every year, passing from devotion to pleasures, and from pleasures to devotion, she scrupulously confessed her errors, expressed the sincerest repentance, grew weary of this fervour, and resumed her old habits.

ELIZABETH had a noble passion for immortalizing herself, by the publication of a new code. She had entrusted the computation of it to two magistrates, deeply versed in the study of the laws, who laboured incessantly at this honourable attempt; till remonstrances, arriving from all quarters, and suggested by the priests, forced Elizabeth to give up her plan. The glory, therefore, of giving a code to the nation, was reserved for the illustrious Catharine.

HER beauty, her rank, and her pretensions to the imperial throne, made Elizabeth be courted by several princes, but none obtained her hand. There had been negotiations for marrying her to Louis XV. but they had not been serious. The Empress Catharine I. wished to unite her with the King of Sweden's brother, Charles Augustus de Holstein-Gottorp; but this prince died, while this negotiation was pending—Mistress of herself, Elizabeth banished

banished every idea of marriage, and adopted her nephew Peter.

AFTER all there is an opinion generally believed, that she was privately married to Count Rafumow-
ski, with whom she lived in the greatest intimacy,
and the Counts of Tarracanoff and their sisters, pas-
sed for the fruit of this clandestine union. The
Russians, and Europe, were confirmed in this opi-
nion, by the adventure of the countess of Tarracanoff,
who had retired into Italy, and settled at Leghorn,
where she lived not only as a simple individual, but
as an unfortunate woman, very near the horrors of
indigence, after having fled from her native coun-
try, and her life being threatened. The war in
1770, brought Count Orloff into the sea of Tuscany,
and he formed acquaintance with her, seemed to
pity her misfortunes, and was anxious to procure
her relief, without humbling her. This way of
proceeding procured him the confidence of the un-
fortunate Countess, who although brought up at
court, had doubtless forgotten, what a perfidious
courtier is capable of. She soon experienced it.
She was invited to an entertainment in Dyk's the
British consul, where she was received with affec-
tion. At table the conversation turned on the
Russian fleet, and the magnificent show a ship of
the line presents. The Countess confessed she had
never enjoyed such a grand sight, and the Count
K 2 engaged

engaged to satisfy her curiosity. During the desert, a superb sloop appears on the shore, on board of which the Countess is conducted, at the sound of military music, and they sail towards the ship of the line. Here the scene changes. Scarcely was the Countess on board, when it is announced, that she is a prisoner, and she is loaded with irons. The unhappy woman with tears in vain washes the feet of the barbarous Orloff. The ship sails, arrives at St Peterburg, lodges her prey in the fortress; She is plunged into a dungeon, and from a dungeon into oblivion, for she has never been heard of since that event.

ELIZABETH succeeded to the empire on the 25th November 1741, by the carelessness of the regent Anne mother to Iwan III. and by the intrigues of Lestocq, an adventurer, placed as a physician, at the side of Elizabeth, whose confidence he had, and who endowed with all the talents suitable to an intriguer, exercised them all, for the purpose of setting his mistress on the throne of Russia; and he saw his undertaking, however rash it might be thought, crowned with the most fortunate success. Having been aide-de-camp to Wronzoff, and some noblemen, Lestocq had all prepared for accomplishing his purpose, when an indifferention of the regent Anne's induced him to hasten the execution of his plot.

ELIZABETH, who was yet hesitating about yielding to the intention of her friends, at last complied with their importunity, on the evening of the 25th November, and went with Lestocq and Wronzoff, to the Guards quarters, who had been already bribed and secured. She was announced as the daughter of Peter I. and his legitimate heirs. No answer was made, but the cry, "Long live the Empress Elizabeth." After the oath of fidelity was administered to her in this quality, two hundred grenadiers offered to conduct her to the Imperial palace, and make her be acknowledged there. These are taken at their word, they advance towards the residence of the Regent, sunk in sleep, as well as the Emperor her son, who is to be hurled from the throne, on which his youthful years had not permitted him to sit.

THE Guards of the palace, bribed or surprized, join, instead of opposing Elizabeth's retinue, and thirty grenadiers, who get without opposition, as far as the Regent's bed, are the first, who inform her of the revolution just effected, and of her own fall. This princess was reduced to the humiliating state of appearing half naked before this band of soldiers, who some hours before were throwing themselves at her feet. She is allowed scarcely time to put on her clothes. She and her husband are dragged prisoners into Elizabeth's old palace, and thence transported

transported to Riga. Afterwards we shall have occasion to speak of this unfortunate family.

WHEN Elizabeth was peaceably seated on the throne of Russia, it must be imagined, that Lestocq had great influence on the management of affairs. Indeed he enjoyed the greatest interest, was loaded with riches and honours, but he had to do with a woman easily prepossessed, who, in spite of the assurances she had given him, of always protecting him with her shield of royalty, sacrificed him to the Cabal, who would have war with Prussia; a measure, which Lestocq firmly opposed. He was tried on a groundless pretext, that he had maintained a secret correspondence with the enemies of the state. This accusation was formed on some letters from the Prussian ambassador, who was his friend, but they had no reference to business; yet he was stripped of all his wealth, which was immense. Apraxin and some grandees of the court, who had acted as Serjeants in this affair, basely divided his jewels, which were presents from the Empress.

HE was transported to Usting-Weliki, a poor burgh in the government of Archangel. There with his family he *breathed*, subsisting on a very moderate pension, which the officer to whose management it was entrusted, administered to him at pleasure. Peter III. restored to him his liberty, and some of his dignities; but only a very small part of his

his

his fortune, which had been embezzled, was restored to him. A singular circumstance, which is very descriptive of Russian justice, is, that of forty thousand roubles found in his house in money, only eleven thousand were returned to him; the remainder was said to have been expended on his account. First, fifteen thousand roubles for his support during his exile. Secondly, thirteen thousand two hundred for improvements made on his houses; and observe, they had been occupied by the very enemies of Lestocq, who had not paid the rent. Thirdly, eight hundred roubles for the paper, pens and ink, and the expences necessary in arranging the annual accounts of the management of his property, and no account was given him of his lands.

LESTOCQ was son to a French refugee, a native of Champagne. Peter I. had brought him to Russia, and Catharine I. had fixed him at court. After his return to St Petersburg in the year 1762, being disgusted at the life of a courtier, in which he had experienced more bitterness than favour, he lived retired with some friends till the year 1767, and on his death bed he confessed, that this period of his life had been the most happiest. This confession a thousand courtiers have made, but it was always after some great reverse, that they thus returned to themselves, for few or none of them have left the scene, without being driven from it.

ELIZABETH had another favourite, more fortunate than Lestocq, though he less deserved to be so, Count de Schuwaloff, whom Voltaire has made known in France as a man of letters. We are going to see on what grounds, and from them to conclude what value ought to be put on the precarious reputations, which Voltaire took it into his head to create. Schuwaloff, by means of his wife, having acquired the entire confidence of Elizabeth, had come at fortune by gigantic strides, with so much the more justice, that he had applied himself to learn the character and taste of his mistress. After she had been raised to the throne, he had made a discovery precious for a courtier, which was, that by founding in the ears of Elizabeth, the words *Humanity*, and the *Good of the People*, every thing was obtained from her. More than one Monarch in Europe has been deceived by this gross stratagem; ignorant or stupid, he has lent a hand to the commission of evil, by wishing to do good; whence it follows, that a *Log* on the throne is the greatest of calamities, and a thousand times worse than that of being governed by a well informed Tyrant, whom men dare not deceive, because he cannot be deceived with impunity.

Thus Schuwaloff sure of seducing the Empress, beset her in such a way, that in a short time and under the specious pretext of doing good, he obtained

tained from her the exclusive property of several branches of commerce, which rendered him one of the richest nobles of Russia, but ruined an infinite number of families, and even whole towns. The selling of the forests of Narva, on which alone the unfortunate inhabitants of this town subsisted, is given as an eminent instance. He had made the Empress understand, that the inhabitants of Narva, for want of means, did not draw from the sale of these forests all they could; and that by giving the privilege to a rich man, he with his own funds, would support this numerous body of poor people, who could hardly procure an existence; that these forests, to become an excellent branch of commerce, wanted only to be vivified by the presence of a man, who joined opulence to the desire of being useful to suffering humanity. Elizabeth, persuaded by these perfidious insinuations, signed the grant and the ruin of eight hundred families. Schuwaloff insatiable, because nothing can satisfy the greedy avarice of a courtier, obtained also the exclusive right of selling whale and fish oil, and of all the tobacco produced in Russia. The barbarous man, at that one single time, ruined a whole province. We see in these monopolies the model of the indiscreet donations by Louis XVI. to the insatiable Pologne, Conde, &c.

SCHUWALOFF, who with profit also was desirous of becoming illustrious, with a view to this, propo-

fed to Elizabeth, to employ some famous historian to compose the history of Russia. He gave her to understand that this plan, long meditated by Peter I. was reserved for her, and that it alone could immortalize both her name and her reign. He proposed Voltaire, who had already written the romance, called, the history of Charles XII; and he was accepted of.

WE were assured in Russia, that Voltaire had received correct extracts and memorials written by Peter the First's own hand, with whatever was found most remarkable in anecdotes, in the library of the academy of sciences in St Petersburg; yet notwithstanding these materials, and the capacity of the writer, this history of Russia was very incomplete, and unworthy of the hero it celebrated. The Russian academicians, in particular, maintained, that it contained almost none of the materials furnished to the author, who on the contrary had therein inserted many things, which had not been communicated to him, and wherein the truth of facts had been changed; but this accusation is not absolutely well founded. However it be, at Petersburg people were generally discontented, both with the author and the work. Schuwaloff especially expressed to Voltaire in strong terms, his own surprize, that he not only had not made use of the interesting anecdotes communicated to him, but also filled his memoirs with

absurd contradictions, and mangled all the names of families and towns. Voltaire answered, that he was not accustomed to transcribe literally the materials he was furnished with; that he had arranged the plan, and directed the work in his own way; that not having introduced the private life of the Czar into the history of Russia, he had not been able to benefit by the anecdotes, which only concerned this prince; that in many places he had been obliged to supply the materials transmitted him, by other notes he had procured, of which Stanislaus, who had been Peter's cotemporary, had warranted the authenticity.

“As to the reproach of having mangled the names; a German,” added he, “seems to bring it on me; I wish more breath, and fewer consonants.” Schuwaloff was so much the more provoked, as to encourage the compiler of this history, which he himself had projected, he had sent beforehand a rich box of furs, and a collection of all the Russian medals struck in gold. The furs arrived at Ferney, but the medals having been entrusted to a certain Russian gentleman, called Puschkin, addicted to wine and women, were dissipated in parties of pleasure. Wits at the court of St Petersburg, on hearing this news, said, that Puschkin had been shipwrecked with the medals, as Voltaire had been with the Russian memoirs.

NOTWITHSTANDING her favourites, and some weaknesſes to be attributed to her education, rather than to her ſex, Elizabeth had great qualities, and all, who have ſpoken of her, have pronounced high eulogiums on her humanity. When ſhe mounted the throne, ſhe made a vow to inflict no capital puniſhment during her reign. It is even added, that ſhe ſhed tears when ſhe received the news of ſome victory gained by her armies. Yet it is obſerved, that though during her reign no criminal was executed publicly or formally, the priſons were full of miſerable people, ſeveral of whom periſhed by the foul air they breathed; a death undoubtedly more terrible than that inflicted by the ſword of executioners.

THE ſtate inquisition, or the *Secret Committee*, who looked after perſons ſuſpected of ſtate-crimes, were perpetually active during Elizabeth's reign. Many people on the ſlighteſt evidence, underwent torture within the boundaries of the priſons, where they received the *Knout*, and expired under the torments of this cruel puniſhment. This juſtice, executed within four walls, is an atrocious vengeance, an unprofitable murder, becauſe the puniſhment of the guilty ought to be exemplary and public. But what reflects the greateſt diſhonour on this princeſs' reign is the puniſhment ſhe cauſed be inflicted on the Counteſſes *Beſtuchof* and *Lapuebin*. By her orders

each

each received thirty strokes of the knout, in a public square; their tongues were cut out, and they were banished into Siberia. One of these ladies, the Countess Lapuchin, esteemed the prettiest woman in Russia, was accused of having carried on a secret correspondence with the French ambassador; but the true crime was, having spoken with too much freedom of Elizabeth's amours; and ladies know no forgiveness for this injury. The bare narration of this cruel vengeance makes one shudder. Figure a delicate woman, distinguished by rank, publicly mangled by the hands of an executioner. Horror and pity are then the only sentiments which affect us, and we throw off every sort of respect for the memory of a princess, who was barbarous enough to commit such an excess of cruelty.

BUT, while lamenting these inhuman consequences, and turning our eyes aside from the scene we have been viewing, if we examine Elizabeth's character with less severity, we will be reconciled to her.—We recollect all the good that she did; we see that her heart, naturally inclined to kindness, had allowed itself to be corrupted by absolute power, and hardened by suspicion, but that it returned to the sentiments of pity and mercy, when her passions and prejudices did not get the better of her. In short, those, who have been near her, affirm, that it was impossible

impossible to obtain from her a consent to punish the most atrocious crimes with death, except when the lieutenant of the Police construed this very clemency of their sovereign into the hurt of the unhappy persons; and when he had secret recourse to the frightful expedient of inflicting the knout upon criminals of this class, till they expired under the strokes; a death unquestionably more cruel than capital punishment; since in the latter case, they would have been only beheaded, and in the former they were slowly cut to pieces. Elizabeth died in the year 1761, in the fifty-third year of her age, and twenty-second of her reign.

C H A P. VIII.

Mint at St Petersburg.—Money coined there.—The Czar Peter the First's house an object of curiosity.—Church and canonization of Alexander-Neufki.

THE mint, which was the object of one of our excursions, is also an edifice remarkable in the isle of St Petersburg. It is destitute of show, and the architecture has nothing deserving of praise, but the order, that reigns in the work-houses, is admirable.

AMONG the remarkable things to be seen in these work-houses, is a machine used for stamping the money.

money. It attracts the greater attention from travellers, because they are warned of it having been invented by the reigning Imprefs, and the mechanism is fimple and ingenious.

THE first materials for the fabrication of money, are brought from the mines of Siberia, and the parting is made in a laboratory in the neighbourhood of the work-houfes. For a long period, (and it is ftill done at this day) a great number of Dutch crowns were recaft at St Peterfburg, to make roubles. Peter I. being in want of filver materials for money, ordered all the duties to be paid in Dutch crowns; but at prefent, no more than the half is paid in this money, and the Britifh, as well as the moft part of foreigners, are by treaties excufed from this obligation. Yet as the gold and filver brought from Siberia, and the Dutch crowns, are not fufficient for the quantity of fpecie in circulation, through the vaft empire of the Rufins, thefe precious metals are imported every year to great amount. Notwithftanding this importation, the money is of the bad ft alloy, and this ftate of adulteration, in which it is at this time, furnifhes abundant profit, fince there is fo much alloy in gold, that on it there is a gain of 48 per cent; and 37 per cent. on filver. But it produces the difagreeable effect of encouraging the introduction of the counterfeit money coined abroad, on which there is great profit to

be

be made, and the greatest discredit thereby brought on the state.

FROM the fortrefs you go by water to the ile next to St Peterſburg, to do homage to an wooden cottage, famous for having ſerved as an habitation to Peter the great, while he was building the fortrefs. It has been preſerved in its original ſtate by means of a brick building, that ſerves it for a cover. This houſe has only one ground flat, conſiſting of three rooms, a large hall for receiving company, a dining room and a bed chamber. Hard by it is a boat with four oars, built by Peter's own hand, which has been ſometimes called the *little Grand ſire*, but improperly; this honourable name being reſerved for the boat already mentioned.

A FINE froſt and ſome friends engaged us to pay a viſit to the ſuperb monastery of St Alexander Neuſki, which ſtands at the extremity of the Moſcow ſuburbs. Its ſituation, but eſpecially that of the Gardens, is quite romantic. There are four cloiſters, among which are the cells of ſixty monks, who there renew the opulence of the old French Bernardines. They have their jolly looks and want of care, but they are more ignorant. The Bernardines and monks in France were only fond of good eating, but thoſe in Ruſſia are drunken ſits, who are liſted up every day in the public ſtreets. We were received by two of theſe monks, who were the
highelt

highest in the monastery. The dinner they gave us was at first a monk's repast, and afterwards a grenadier's debauch.

The monastery of Neufki was founded by Peter I, who made the Great Duke Alexander Neulki or, the Nevian, be canonized. He was so named from the victories he gained over the Swedes on the banks of the Neva. The Russian clergy, and the people, in imitation of their priests, tell of this Great Duke (who during his life time had no doubts of being one day enrolled in the legend) a multitude of miracles, every one more absurd than another. They tell among the rest, that in the city of Wolodimer, whither his body had been transferred, when the Metropolitan approached him with the ordinary passport, the saint's hand opened of its own accord and took it. They attribute to him also the winning of a battle, that Demetrius Iwanowitch gained over the Khan of the Tartars. But the miracle most generally believed, and which it would be impudent to dispute with the Russians, is that of the conflagration of Wolodimer. The church, in which Alexander was buried, had taken fire, every thing became the prey of the flames, except the saint's body, that appeared, they say, in the midst of the flames, still surrounded in the spot wherein it had been buried. The front and the body remained untouched.

It was these pretended prodigies, which induced Peter I. to have Alexander the Nevian canonized, and to build, in honour of him, the superb monastery, which embellishes the capital of the Russias, to contain the body of the Saint in a magnificent silver coffin. It was first, to accommodate matters with his Clergy, whom his reforms had alienated from him; Secondly, to honour the memory of a warrior, who merited the gratitude of posterity by his signal victories; and thirdly, the true motive was to introduce into his country a taste for monuments and the arts.

ELIZABETH entered into the views of her father, and caused a monument worthy of Italy be erected to the memory of a warrior, beatified by her father. We there read a long latin inscription, breathing nothing of the augustine age, which informed us, that Saint Alexander joined all the virtues of a christian to the abilities of a soldier; and that the august Elizabeth, who possessed all the virtues of her father and mother, erected this monument. This scholastic amplification, which begins with these words, *Thi sic, Reader, how dear the ashes of Saints are to C. J.*; proves, that if the arts have been introduced into Russia, the lapidary style has not yet found its way thither.

C H A P. IX.

POPULATION of St Petersburg—of all Russia.—The Russians divided into four constitutional classes.—The nobility, the first class, which contains fourteen others.—Boyard—what is understood by this title.—The Clergy, the second class.—The Burgeſſes and Free-men, the third.—The Peaſants, the fourth claſs.—Thoſe, who belong to the crown.—Thoſe, who belong to individuals.—Unfortunate ſituation of the latter.

ST Petersburg contains about two hundred thouſand inhabitants, and Buſching who may be conſulted with confidence reſpecting Ruſſia, rates the total population of this vaſt empire at twenty millions. According to Sulmiſch it contains twenty four, and Monſieur Leveſque brings it to nineteen millions; but this calculation appears erroneouſ, for the inhabitants of Ukraine, of Siberia, and the Coſſacs, are ſtated at only three hundred thouſand ſouls. Here follow the returns, which we have procured on this ſubject, according to the laſt review and ſurveys, made in the year 1788.

Table of the Population of Ruſſia.

Inhabitants liable to the Poll Tax	18,000,000
————— in the conquered provinces	1,200,000
Nobles	70,000
	M 2
	Clergy,

Clergy, Bishops, Popes, Monks, &c.	60,000
Soldiers and Sailors	570,000
Employed in administration and tribunals	23,000
Ukraine, Siberia and the Cossacs	950,000
Crimea and Cuban	860,000
	<hr/>
Total of the Population	2,163,000.
	<hr/>

THIS population is divided by the constitution into four classes, first, that of the great and small nobility; secondly, the clergy; thirdly, the merchants, burgeses and other free persons; and fourthly the peasants: In the three first, are the free subjects of the empire, and in the fourth, the bondmen or slaves; and to the scandal of humanity, and the eulogiums lavished on Catharine II. as a Legislator, this class is the most numerous.

IN the first order are comprehended the grandees and the nobility; the only persons to whom, according to the true spirit of feudal despotism, belongs the right of possessing lands; a monstrous privilege, which in our days Catharine, by an injustice, that should be charged rather upon her prejudices, than upon her heart, ratified in a solemn manner, by confirming the immunities of this nobility, and ordaining the right of purchasing or selling lands to be vested in nobles alone. It is true, this prerogative regards only Russia Proper, for in Ukraine

Ukraine and the provinces conquered from Sweden (Ingria excepted) lands may be possessed by commoners. Grandees are not obliged as in the days of Peter I. to arm, and head their vassals; they are only bound to serve in the army, and to furnish recruits in proportion to the extent of their possessions.

IN Russia, as in almost all the eastern governments, there is almost no distinction of rank among the nobles, except what they derive from offices, and the degrees conferred by their Sovereign. The oldest sons of persons raised to the first dignities have no prerogative attached to their birth. The greatness of a family, that unites immense riches with the most eminent dignities, is, as it were, annihilated at the death of its chief, because fortunes are equally divided among the sons; and the titles which are hereditary, without the sovereign's favour, in no way contribute to render those great, who bear them. Be they Princes, Counts, or Barons, the distinction is nothing, if it be not supported by some civil or military employment. In Russia, titles of ancient nobility or illustrious ancestors do not prevent him, to whom his office gives only the rank of Lieutenant, from being, while out of military service, inferior even to a Captain taken from the latest nobility, or even from the class of freedmen.

In order to understand this pre-eminence well, it must be known, that in Russia, people in office ought

ought to be enrolled, in order that they may have a certain existence in one of the fourteen classes, called *Civil Classes*, which all suppose a military gradation; for in Russia, as in all governments, where the head is a despot, the government is altogether military. The Russian Courtiers are placed in the three first of these classes, or are supposed to make a part of them. The first seven are always invited to the entertainments given by the Empress, while there are only some privileged members of the seven last, that are admitted to them. It will help to give an idea of the arrangement of these classes, to explain what sort of individuals are enrolled in the principal classes.

In the first

THE Field-Marshal-General; the Admiral-General; the Grand-Chancellor of the Empire.

In the second

THE Chief-Generals of the Infantry and Cavalry, the Governors of Provinces, the Grand-master of Artillery; the second Admiral of the Fleet; the Grand Marshal of Court, and all the Privy Counsellors composing the Directing Senate.

In the third

THE Grand Equery; the Attorney-General of the Directing Senate; all the Lieutenant-Generals; the Knights of the order of St Andrew; the Commissaries-General of War; and the Vice-Admirals.

In the fourth

THE Grand Chamberlain; the Presidents of Colleges; the Counsellors of State—the Provincial Counsellors of Livonia and Estonia; the Major-Generals; the Quarter-Masters-General; the Lieutenant Colonels of the Guards (there are no Colonels) and the Rear-Admirals.

In the fifth

THE Herald-at-arms; the Master-General of Petitions; the Grand Master of Ceremonies; the Grand Master of Waters and Forests; the Grand Master-General of Police; The Vice-Presidents of Colleges; the Director-General of Posts; the Grand-Master of the Court Stables; the Secretary of the Empress' Cabinet; the first Commissaries of War; all the Colonels of the army, and all the Captains of the Navy.

THE other classes, whose enumeration would be tedious, descend always in degrees and respectability. In short the fourteenth contains, first, the Court-Pages, who in every place wish to have a rank, which is always given them. Secondly, the Subaltern-agents of litigation, a kind of vermin, which swarm in Russia, as in every place else, and join greed to the insolence of pretensions. Thirdly, the Soldiers and Sailors of the inferior gradations, who form the most corrupted part of this class, and consequently despise whatever is not connected with their profession.

NOTWITHSTANDING this aristocratic classification, whatever is not *noble* or *ennobled*, has but a precarious existence. To be persuaded of this sad truth, it is only necessary to read a passage from the code of Catharine II. “Confirming the rights and privileges, which Peter granted to the Prussian nobility, says the historian, who has transmitted to us this code, the Empress adds four new privileges. First, she has commanded all the Colonels of regiments, in a special order, on every occasion, to prefer the nobles, to those who are not noble, in the promotion of military rank. Secondly, she has ordained, that the children of nobles, and also those of General officers, shall be received into the establishments of military education, in preference to any other of her subjects. Thirdly, that the right of buying and selling lands, be the proper and peculiar right of nobles alone. Fourthly, that the nobles of her empire enjoy the exclusive privilege of crections for the distillation and sale of brandies from grain.” Since these nobles possess the lands, possess the poor people, who cultivate them, and enjoy the powers of industry, what is left to him, whom chance has not made be born a noble?

BEFORE the time of Peter the Great, the only hereditary title was, that of *Knzes*, which was interpreted by that of Prince. The title of *Boyard*, which some travellers have made signify *Privy Counsellor*,

was given, and is still given, in the Russian provinces, to the possessors of great estates, or hereditary fiefs, which hold of the sovereign. In the time of the Grand Dukes of Russia, the *Boyards* were convoked in diet, to deliberate on the important affairs of State. They were the Grand Barons of the country. If a difference arose between two Boyards, or between a Boyard and the Sovereign, the Boyards formed a court, pronounced judgment, and the Grand Duke was bound to submit to the sentence, which this tribunal had given. In the Russian records there are instances of Grand Dukes being banished in consequence of the judgment of the Boyards.

Those who took the title of *Knazes*, were descended, or pretended to be descended from some collateral branches of the reigning family, or from some Lithuanian princes, who had settled in Russia in the fourteenth or fifteenth century, or from some Tartar lords, who became subjects of the empire under Ivan Vassilowitch; or in short from some Polish or foreign families, who had settled in Russia. With time, the number of these provinces grew so great; that there were three hundred, that served as common soldiers in the single regiment of Neuzikoff's dragoons.

THOUGH Peter the Great, in imitation of the other courts of Europe, introduced into Russia the

titles of Counts and Barons, and though his successors have followed his example, none of these titles have sufficiently flattered the favourites of the Russian sovereigns. They have often desired to be created Princes of the German empire, as Menzikoff was on the request of Peter I. and since him, the Princes Orloffs and Potemkins under the reign and at the solicitation of the Empress Catharine II.

As according to the system established by Peter I. (but it has been altered in proportion as it departed from its source) every person takes rank only from the degree he has in the army, they make great haste to get advancement, and yet they are only regularly advanced, for it is necessary to have served as a corporal or serjeant, before any one can be made an officer. But favour eludes this rule. Infants at the breast are often made serjeants or corporals, and it is not always necessary to have made a single campaign to obtain rank, since it can be come at by civil employments. Although the law made by Peter I. obliging every gentleman, under pain of degradation, to serve in the army, has been abolished by Peter III. the effects of it still subsist. No gentleman below the rank of Major, however rich he may be, can have more than two horses in his carriage; and below the rank of Brigadier, he can have only four; and though he should join the highest fortune to the highest birth, if he has never
been

been in the service, he can have in the capital only a carriage with one horse, unless by special permission; while a simple merchant may have a coach with two horses. Notwithstanding all this, there are different ways of procuring military degrees, and the privileges attached to them. For instance, a chamberlain to his Majesty has the rank of Major General; the offices of secretary in the different departments, gives the name of Officers; and those, who contribute a certain sum for the support of the foundling hospital at Moscow, obtain the rank of Lieutenant; and this way of rendering the vanity subservient to the utility of the human race, proves the genius of the Legislator, who made this law.

THE Nobles on their estates, have an authority almost unlimited, and dispose of their slaves without any restriction, as will appear in the article, wherein we treat of this unfortunate cast, called Peasants. The second order is the Clergy, and a Patriarch is their chief. Peter the Great, finding that he who occupied this dignity, had too much authority, suppressed the Patriarchate in the year 1721. But being a politician too dextrous to declare himself the head of the Church, in what regarded spiritualities, he prudently committed the principal direction of ecclesiastic affairs to a commission, which he named the *Holy Synod*, making it entirely dependent on himself, by administering to

each of its members an oath, that they would acknowledge him as their supreme judge. This Synod, which has the Emperor for president, is composed of a vice-president, who is commonly the metropolitan arch-bishop, and five counsellors, who are the first prelates of the empire; such as the bishops of Plescow, of Riga, of Iwer, and of Kachin. In our own remembrance, John Pantiloff, confessor to Catharine II. sat among these prelates, with the influence of a priest, that sec'd his sovereign at his feet.

The Russian clergy are composed of regulars and seculars. The former are the monks, the second, the priests or curates of the parishes.

The greatest part of the riches of the Russian church was formerly concentrated in the monasteries, whose annual revenues amounted to more than forty millions of French livres, or sixteen hundred thousand pounds sterling.

THE monks, like other possessors of fiefs, exercised an absolute power over their peasants, and this yoke was not the lightest on the unfortunate slave; but under the reign of Catharine II. this rule changed. She granted freedom to the peasants, who depend on monasteries, and annexed the estates of the clergy to the crown, but paid pensions to the monks and nuns. The Russians, however censured, could not for excommunication, nor did they

they think their religion in danger, because their Popes no more had slaves and thousands of roubles. The archbishops and the bishops have from sixteen to eighteen thousand livres a year, and the clergy of inferior rank in proportion. At the time of this change, several monasteries were suppressed, and the number of monks considerably reduced; and in those preserved, an order was issued, prohibiting the admission of above a certain number, and the age was fixed, at which they could take vows.

THERE were however some murmurs, and the friends of the monks maintained, that this reform would soon produce the greatest evils in Russia, because the monasteries were the only seminaries for those, who were destined for the clerical order, and the monks being the only people acquainted with the science, that was among the Russian clergy, ignorance was from that time to be the lot of the Greek church. The governor did not amuse himself with answering these vain allegations. He was active, and prevented the evil, by perfecting the administration of the monasteries he had left; founded new ones in different places for the instruction of ecclesiastics, so that the science of the pensioned clergy was superior to that of the clergy before endowed; which, as may be imagined, could not be essential, nor in Russia like other countries, the ignorant monks studies little or none at all.

THERE

THERE are thirty three archbishoprics or bishoprics in Russia, whereof the principal are; Novogorod, Moscow, St Peteriburg, Kasan, Astracan, Tobolsk, Mohilef, Smolensko, Archangel, Kiow, &c.

AT this day Russia contains a hundred and fifty monasteries, governed by fifty eight *Archimandrites* or Abbes; and ninety nine *Igoumens* or *Priors*, and sixty seven convents directed by abbesses. The number of monks is supposed to be upwards of six thousand, and of nuns more than five thousand. The other priests or ecclesiastics belonging to monasteries and cathedrals, are to the number of two thousand.

THE curates are designed commonly by the title of *Papa* or pope, a Greek word signifying *father*, and given indiscriminately, in the first ages of Christianity, to all ecclesiastics, till Gregory VII. ordered it to be reserved for the bishop of Rome alone. The separation, which has always existed between the Latin and Greek church, did not allow the latter to respect this order, and therefore the name of Pope has remained to the Greek priests. The vicars and priests settled in parishes are called *Protopopes*, or First Popes.

THESE Popes and Protopopes, who ought to be select men, enjoying a certain respectability in society, are commonly the most contemptible part of the people in Russia; the greatest part not being
able

able to read, in their own language, the gospel they are commissioned to preach, they accustom themselves to recite the service by dint of memory. Their degradation and ignorance are attributed to the small salary attached to their functions, yet in a country, where provisions are at the lowest rate, they have about fifty crowns in the smallest living, and seven hundred and fifty livres in the best. Besides they possess an wooden house, and a piece of ground, which they themselves generally cultivate. The highest dignity, at which the popes can arrive as long as they are married, for celibacy of priests is not a precept among the Greeks, is that of first priest of a cathedral, whose income is about eight hundred livres a-year. The archbishops are chosen from among the monks, who look on the popes as very far below them. The reigning Empress persuaded, that the most effectual means of civilizing a superstitious nation under absolute subjection to priests, was to attend to the education of such as were destined for the clerical order, has founded different seminaries, wherein the children of priests are brought up. With the same intention she has by every mean encouraged the clergy in general to improve themselves, and emerge from the gross ignorance, into which they had sunk; but the
popes

popes with difficulty and reluctance comply with their sovereign's liberal designs.

IN Russia monks are not allowed to marry, while marriage is enjoined on the priests, as a preliminary indispensable for ordination, but they must marry none but young women. If their wives die, they may enter into a monastery, and afterwards rise to the highest dignities of the church, which are granted to monks alone. This is the very reverse of the Latin church, where the monks are nothing, and the secular priests every thing. The Russian popes cannot engage in a second marriage, unless they become laymen, and as widowers, they cannot remain parish-priests, without the special permission of the bishops. All the children of priests are free and generally consecrated to the service of the church.

ALL the ecclesiastics wear long beards, and are distinguished from the laity by letting their hair grow long, and wearing it about their shoulders without being tied or curled. They believe that their beards and long hair bring them to a nearer resemblance of Jesus Christ, who is always represented with a long beard and long hair. The popes wear a very high square cap, and a long black or brown gown reaching to their ankles. The dignitaries of the church are distinguished by richer garments.

LEAVING the clergy, the third constitutional class in Russia is that, which is between the nobility and peasants:

peasants. The Empress Catharine II. designs it in her new code-----

“ This class of men, worthy to be mentioned,
 “ whose situation may promise great advantages,
 “ when they shall have received a stable form, whose
 “ object is the encouragement of good morals and
 “ the love of labour; It is the middling state.

“ This order composed of Freemen, belongs not
 “ to the class of the nobles nor peasants. We may
 “ rank in it, all, who being neither gentlemen, nor
 “ peasants, are engaged in the arts, sciences, navi-
 “ gation, and commerce, or follow mechanical pro-
 “ fessions.

“ Among them are also to be placed those, who
 “ born of commoners, shall be brought out of schools
 “ and religious houses of education, established by
 “ us or our predecessors, and also the children of
 “ officers and clerks of chancery. But as the third-
 “ estate admits of different degrees of prerogatives,
 “ of which we wish to give a particular detail, we
 “ shall content ourselves with opening the field for
 “ a more ample examination.”

ALTHOUGH there were, before the reign of Peter the Great, companies of merchants that enjoyed certain privileges, by means of which they were above the order of peasants, these privileges were precarious, and confined either by the immense monopolies exercised by the crown, or by the means, which the

grantees found out for oppressing these societies of merchants a thousand ways. But Peter, whom nothing escaped, having observed on his travels, the utility, nay, necessity of a third estate in his empire, to make commerce flourish, with this view, published several regulations, which, however excellent, did not answer the end the legislator had proposed, because they were not suited to the nature of property, such as it is in Russia. One of the most useful of these regulations was that, by which the prince granted to some free cities certain privileges, which Elizabeth afterwards augmented; but they were confined to the cities of St Petersburg, Moscow, Astracan, Twer, and some large provincial towns. In the rest, the inhabitants, the merchants not even excepted, remained in certain cases on the same level with the peasants. They were subjected, for instance, to the two principal kinds of dependence, which are the indelible marks of servitude, viz. capitation, and ballot for going into the service of the army or navy. Catharine II. who understood how important it was for the prosperity of **her** empire, that commerce should flourish, not only **exempted** the merchants from the two odious servitudes just mentioned, but also enlarged the number **and** immunities of free towns. She allowed many peasants on crown lands, and every freeman, to enrol himself, on certain conditions, in the class of merchants

chants and burgesſes. Theſe were ſubdivided into three claſſes. The firſt comprehends thoſe, who have a capital of about ſixty thouſand livres; the ſecond thoſe, who have one of fifty thouſand; and the third comprehends thoſe, who have the ſmalleſt capitals.

By the third article of the declaration of favour, which this princeſs cauſed be publiſhed at the peace 1775; it is ſaid that all, who may wiſh to enter into any of theſe claſſes, ſhall be exempted from capitation, on condition of paying to the crown a per. centage of the capital they employ in trade. The merchant is not rigorouſly ordered to declare the ſum he is ſuppoſed to poſſeſs. Thus he, who has more than fifty thouſand livres, may enrol himſelf in an inferior claſs. He may even enrol himſelf a ſimple burgeſs, if he chooſe rather to pay only the capitation of a per. centage of his capital, and then he enjoys only the privileges of this incorporation.

THIS change in the manner of making merchants contribute, poſſeſſes great advantages for the prince and the contributors. The firſt, becauſe he collects without expence, and the ſecond, becauſe they pay eaſily a per. centage of their capitals, that exempts them from capitation, and qualifies them for being admitted to new privileges. It is beſides, a tax equitable in itſelf, ſince the merchant pays only in proportion to what he poſſeſſes; it grows with his pro-

sits and diminishes in the same proportion. With regard to the interest of the state, it is a masterly stroke of policy and prudence, in as far as it excites the industry and emulation of the merchant, and gives him security against the fear of arbitrary impositions, by engaging the good faith of government to protect his property.

THE simple burgeses form the second class of this order. This name is given to all the inhabitants of free towns, whatever be their profession, who declare themselves worth a capital below three thousand livres,* or who possessing this sum, wish not to have a more honourable enrolment. They enjoy several privileges, which peasants have not, but they are below the merchants, because they pay a capitation, and may be enrolled for the army or navy.

BELOW these last mentioned are the other free subjects of the empire, such as the slaves freed by their masters; those who have obtained their liberty from the army or navy; the members of the academy of arts and other like establishments; the orphans of the foundling-hospital, and in short the children of all freemen. All these persons have permission to settle in any part of the empire, to carry on trade or commerce, enter among the burgeses of free towns, and if they have a sufficient capital, they are admitted into the order of merchants.

By all these wise regulations, which are according to nature and the laws of Humanity, the number of free people will gradually increase, and in time form a considerable order, especially when it shall acquire the right of possessing lands; a right, which cannot be refused to any individual in any country whatever, without the crime of the most odious tyranny, for nothing attaches a man to his country, and verifies his state of liberty, like territorial possession.

SINCE we have employed some time on the Russian merchants, we shall make to our readers a singular observation respecting them, namely; that the greatest number of them seldom keep account books, and very few of them can read or write. For counting, they use a machine with several rows of wire, on which are ranged some glass beads. Those of the first row mark units, those of the second tens, those of the third, hundreds and so on. By help of this machine they work multiplication, subtraction and division with great exactness. In the small number of exceptions we may distinguish the principal counts of Archangel, who join uncommon intelligence to the greatest honour. There are few of them who do not understand arithmetic thoroughly. At St Petersburg also the English factory employs a great number to manage the magazines, who

who have the character of clerks as faithful as industrious.

THE fourth order of the state in Russia comprehends the peasants, who notwithstanding the cries of nature, are all bondmen, or slaves, in all the extent of the term. Those of Finland, Carelia and Ukraine must however be excepted, and those also called *Odnodwortzi*, peasants who have no property but a single house, and form a sort of intermediary class between the nobles and slaves. They are independent of the nobility, and nobody is dependent on them, but many of them, by borrowing the name of some Noble, have gradually purchased some peasants, and they are, it is said, the worst masters in Russia. Under the reign of Anne, the greatest part of these *Odnodwortzi* were transported to the frontiers of Ukraine, to form a national militia in defence of this part of the empire. They were formed into a battalion, and each battalion had its *stabode*, or village, in which a house or cottage was assigned to each of the *Odnodwortzi* sent thither. Between two *stabodes* there is always a fortrefs. Some of the *Odnodwortzi* settled on the banks of the Occa, in the government of Moscow, but more of them in the governments of Bielgorod and Woronetz.

THE other peasants may be divided into peasants belonging to the crown, and those belonging to individuals. These belonging to the crown dwell on

the Empress's domains, and form about a sixth part of the Russian peasants, inclusive of those on the church lands, who did not obtain their freedom, when these lands were transferred to the crown. The peasants on the crown lands are immediately under the jurisdiction of the Imperial officers or bailies. Although these officers may make them suffer many hardships, by abusing their power, the peasants are notwithstanding more secure, where they are appointed, than those belonging to private persons; as they are under the protection of the sovereign. They may hope to obtain the royal interposition more easily, when they are violently oppressed. In several districts they have been freed, and permitted to enter the class of burghesses or merchants. All the peasants will gradually obtain the greatest privileges, not only because the spirit of humanity and sound policy is making progress in these regions, but likewise because the Empress seriously applies herself to realize the generous system of diffusing more liberty and equality among the subjects of this vast empire.

The most unfortunate of the peasants are those, who belong to individuals, and are their property like their plow or their flocks; and the value of an estate in Russia is rated, not by the number of acres, but of the peasants it contains. In Estonia and Livonia they reckon by *Huckens*, which signifies

signifies seven men, and an estate of twenty hackens, is a possession, whereon there are a hundred and forty men, heads of families or batchelors.

THE baron may demand from his unhappy peasants whatever sum he pleases, and employ them as seems to him most proper, without being controlled by any law in this respect. He is absolute master of their time and their work. He employs them in agriculture, or as his household servants, but pays them no wages. From some he exacts an annual tax, which is imposed on the poor slave at the will of the arbitrary master. This practice of forcing the peasants to pay an annual sum in silver, without having always the means of procuring it, drives them often to despair or crimes; and these excesses are not surprizing; it is only their patience in supporting the yoke of their masters that is inconceivable!

As these unhappy people cannot bring an action against their lords, it often happens that peasants, who have amassed a considerable sum, cannot purchase their liberty at any price, because so long as they continue slaves, they are liable to be stript by their greedy masters. Several Russian lords send their slaves to Moscow, or to St Peteriburg to learn trades there. They afterwards employ them on their estates, hire them out, sell them with profit, or make them pay an yearly sum for the permission of working on their own account. When the landlords

come to the resolution of selling them, they expose them in the public market place, with their wives and children, and each of them has on his forehead a ticket telling his price and his skill.

With regard to the authority that belongs to the lord over the peasants; according to the old laws, he could try them by his own officers, and even punish them without bringing them to trial. Except the Knout, he could at his pleasure make them be beaten with rods, shut them up in cells, send them to a correction-house, banish them into Siberia; in a word, condemn them for every fault, which did not amount to a public crime. Indeed he had no power over their lives, for if a slave had been beaten by his master's order, and died within three days, the master was prosecuted as guilty of murder, unless he could plead other causes of the death of his slave. But this was only illusory justice, for a man may unquestionably be chastised in a terrible manner, without dying in three days; and suppose a slave chastised to death, who would have dared to avenge the innocent victim, by bringing the murderer to justice, if he was powerful enough to disregard or elude it? By the new code this enormous power has been restricted according to the principles of humanity; and the right of punishing has been lodged with the people only to whom it belongs, that is, with magistrates.

Yet there still exist many abuses, but these will in time yield to the influence of the institutions of Peter and his successors.

THE slaves, who labour for their masters, are rewarded by a piece of ground, from which they draw the produce, and the most necessary articles of life, a small number of which falls to the share of this unfortunate class. In order to drive from their minds their unhappy situation, the Russian peasants spend the little sums they have earned, on clothes and spiritous liquors. On the other hand, those, who save what they may have gained by labour or commerce, conceal as carefully as possible, what they have acquired; because, as we have just said, their greedy masters would tear from them their little stock, if they knew of it. The wretched people often bury their money, and die with the secret. This custom of hiding their money, is one of the causes of the scarcity of specie in Russia, for it is principally in silver that the peasants realize their savings. This practice, or rather, this dire necessity, prevails in all the eastern countries, where property is not secured; where the people are such slaves, that the fear of exactions allows them not to enjoy the wealth they have acquired. In spite of the little enjoyment the Russians receive from theirs, they are nevertheless set on gain, and there are no merchants that ask so much for their goods, and are satisfied

satisfied with so little; a certain proof of continual oppression.

THIS privation of the conveniencies of life is what makes the Russian peasants to be pitied. Custom easily consoles them. But it is the dependence in which they live, that excites compassion in their favour. Their wants have a tendency to make them hardy, patient, and easily satisfied; but this state of slavery, which they live in, makes them humble, cringing, obstinate, negligent, and in some degree unfeeling.

A PEASANT may obtain his liberty, First, By the freedom frequently granted at the death of a master to those, who have been his first servants.

Secondly, By purchasing his liberty.

Thirdly, By serving in the army or navy; for a peasant is free from the moment he is enrolled, and continues to be so, after he has obtained his discharge. On every occasion the Empress, who sees, not without sorrow, the painful existence of this precious branch of the human species, has facilitated the means of obtaining liberty, by ceding to the peasants many crown rights, which in some respects rendered this acquisition difficult.

ALTHOUGH the Czarina cannot affect the property of the nobles, by conferring on the peasants any important privileges, that would attack those of their masters, yet she has not neglected their interests.

She has lightened their chains, and softened their lot, by different laws made in their favour. She has besides permitted them to settle in any part of her states, and to enter or enrol themselves among the Burgeſſes and Merchants according to their reſpective funds. She has given to their liberty greater ſtability, and to their induſtry powerful encouragement. In certain diſtricts ſhe has aboliſhed the oppreſſive laws, prohibiting peaſants to marry without the conſent of the governor of the province, or magiſtrate of the city, to whom the huſbands were obliged to carry preſents. By ſuppreſſing this tax, that was an outrage to the moſt ſacred rights of humanity, the Empreſs has wiſely removed all the obſtacles to a numerous population, and rendered the marriages of peaſants leſs difficult and more frequent.

CHAP.

C H A P. X.

ADMINISTRATION, civil and political.—*The directing senate.*—*Colleges or departments which depend on them.*—*Tribunals.*—*Who preside there.*—*Advocates.*—*Abuses in judicial proceedings.*—*The code of Catharine II.*—*Penal laws.*—*Punishment of the Knout.*—*Description of the instrument used in this punishment.*—*The Battoges, another sort of punishment.*—*Abolition of torture.*—*Management of prisons.*

THE Empire of Russia is politically divided into forty four military governments, entrusted to general officers invested with the highest authority, who very often rise superior to the civil administrations, and put their own will or that of the prince, in room of the law; and this in spite of the codes of Peter I. and Catharine II. so much extolled; because codes of laws are illusory, where despotism reigns.

THE administration of the empire is entrusted to the *Directing Senate*, and to the principal departments, known under the name of *Colleges*. The senate is of new institution, and has succeeded in the room of the courts of chancery, established by Peter I. This tribunal, under whose jurisdiction all the rest are, joins to the cognizance of every thing,

the

the direction of the offices of war, admiralty and domains. For this purpose it is divided into six departments, composed each of one or more senators, who preside each in their turn; of four privy counsellors, and a principal attorney. Under each of these departments, there is put, for the execution of the laws, one of the colleges just mentioned, under the denomination of College for foreign affairs, College of war, College of the admiralty, College of justice, and College of commerce. There is also a College of medicine; an institution, which would be the most salutary in a country, where pharmacy is yet in its infancy; where a Routine exists, which has produced no information about the quality and quantity of drugs. The College of medicine is particularly charged with furnishing the Imperial laboratories, which again furnish the private laboratories, or are the only shops of the kind in most of the towns of the second rank. The direction of this college is Peruvian bark for him, who is provided with it, in spite of the restraints, which Peter I. and his successors have laid on the abuses, which this direction may produce.

THE College of justice is divided into several chambers for the trial of criminal or civil cases, and according to the privileges of some provinces, they have preserved a particular jurisdiction, such as that of Livonia, Estonia, and Finland. The first of these

these chambers sits at St Peterburg, and the second at Kostroma. There is one for criminal trials at Catharinofflaw, another at Riga, a third at Kiow, and a fourth at Tobolsk.

If any one supposed, agreeably to the fine phrases of the historians, who have spoken of the Russian Code, that profound lawyers preside over each of these tribunals, he would be in a very great mistake. The Russian courts of justice are almost as badly framed, as they were at the time, when the nation was still sunk in the darkness of ignorance, when the science of the priests turned only on some Latin words, and a monotonous routine of psalmody. Peter I. made some meritorious efforts to bring his subjects to the study of the laws, distinguishing by every sort of preference those, who appeared to apply to it; especially by a regulation enjoining the heads of *Dicasteries*, or Chanceries to provide with a judicatorial appointment, and all the rights of a noble, the person who could prove a certain time of study. But after the death of the legislator, this very regulation was an inexhaustible source of abuse. Favour learned the way of proving studies that had never been prosecuted, and set itself in the room of merit. There is another abuse more inconceivable still, which exists only in Russia, that of putting at the head of tribunals, generals and officers, who receive as a retreat, the office of interpreting laws, which

which they neither understand nor are careful to understand.

THE advocates are not better informed than the judges; they equal them in greed and exceed them in effrontery. A peasant or a slave, whom an ill formed person would seem to disqualify for oratorical labours, gets by heart a part of the code and laws, and becomes an advocate. One at St Peterfburg was pointed out to us, who having ruined his affairs by ignorance of trade, had taken to the profession of an advocate as a last shift, and had made in it a brilliant fortune.

AFTER what has just been read, judge of the state of the jurisprudence in a country, where it is necessary to have handled the sword, and grown old under military armour, before you can aspire at the delicate function of pronouncing on the fortune and life of a citizen; where birth, and intrigue still worse, by a thousand low means, are in this line rivals to military merit; where the places of secretaries, advocates and other subalterns, are the prey of the refuse of the nation; in short, where the practice of giving a dishonest interpretation of the law, is the fastest way of making a fortune.

There is not perhaps a country in Europe, where litigation blots more paper than in Russia. In business even the most summary there are papers, of which you can hardly imagine the size. All the

Dicqferes, or courts of justice are full of writers, who in spite of their great number find means of subsistence. They are the most insolent and most unmannerly set in all St Petersburg. What augments the expences of diligence and the vexation of counsellors, is, that all is written on stamped paper, which varies or rises in proportion to the actions.

NOTWITHSTANDING this long series of inconveniencies, which proceeds more from man in general, when abandoned to the corruption of cities, than from a single nation, because litigation and the vermin, that live by it, every where pollute the temple of Themis, we shall now see, by what Catharine has done to extirpate them, how far the Russian nation was from this state of civilization, in which it was supposed, when this princess succeeded to the empire. Before her time the confusion of laws was added to the abuse of litigation; the tribunals having no rules and statutes, but those of Alexis Michaelowitch, which were utterly devoid of order and precision; and the *Ukyls* or imperial decrees, made by Peter I. and his successors, which were too numerous, and often contradictory on very important points.

THEN the vast empire of the Russias, was divided into a small number of governments very extensive, and subdivided into provinces, and every

province into circles and districts. There was a governor for the general government; a *Woyvode* and his officers for each province, which formed what was called a chancery; and a *Woyvode* or inferior judge for every district.

FROM this distribution arose abuses without number, and the greatest was the enormous authority of the inferior judges, who, as we have seen above, were people generally of low extraction, without any knowledge of the laws, and yet could not only punish small offences, but condemn to the knout, and banishment into Siberia. It often happened that persons suspected of some crime, continued in prison several years without being tried; that they were put to the rack for want of sufficient evidence, and this even more than once. Another abuse as great was this; the inferior judge often employed the sword of justice, for little personal acts of vengeance, and then this sword was in his hand, no more than the sword of an assassin.

SEVERAL Emperors since the reign of Alexis, and in particular, Peter I. and the Empress Elizabeth, had formed a plan of reforming the laws of the empire, but it had always remained without execution. This undertaking as great as difficult, was finally reserved for Catharine II. who in the year 1767, called to Moscow, deputies from all parts of the empire, named commissioners to draw up new regulations.

tions, and delivered to them the instructions she had drawn up, or caused be drawn up; all dictated by the true spirit, that ought to animate a wise legislator.

CONFORMABLY to these instructions, the first part of the new code appeared in the year 1775, and the second in 1780. It was received, applauded and followed in the new governments established by the division, which the new constitution ordered. But those attached to the old, conformed to it, only slowly and with murmurs, because the ignorant look on the most sensible improvement, as a pernicious innovation, and the man of bad principles, living by the abuses, which reformation destroys, puts himself on a level with the ignorant, and exclaims louder against it.

By the new constitution, the empire at first divided by Peter I. into nine extensive governments, was subdivided first into thirty two, and afterwards into forty four, on account of the new provinces added to the empire. Each of these governments, at this day, contains from three to four hundred thousand souls. An officer named Namestnik, or Governor, is appointed to the administration of one, and sometimes several governments; and has under him, a Vice-governor, a council and court of justice, both civil and criminal, of which the court names some members, and the rest are elected by

the nobility. Thus, by this institution, Catharine has in some respects set bounds to her absolute authority, by diminishing the power of the tribunals, which depended solely on the crown; by transferring a part of it to the nobility, and giving to this order several privileges, relative to the administration of justice. Likewise by establishing, in each government, superior tribunals to decide definitively, she has prevented the frequent appeals, which were made to the Imperial colleges of St Peterburg and Moscow, as well as the considerable expences and delays, which were the consequences of them. By forming distinct departments for the finances, for the police and the different branches of administration, she has obviated the collision of jurisdictions, and the tribunals no more interfere with one another, by meeting in the same place. She has also facilitated the expedition of business, and of the administration of justice. She has augmented the salary of judges, which was formerly too inconsiderable, to preserve them from the almost irresistible temptation of being bribed; a situation she reminds them of by the expressions she employs in the proclamation addressed to them. “Formerly
 “ your wants might engage you to be too attentive
 “ to your own private interest, now your country
 “ pays you for your labours, and what formerly
 “ might receive some sort of excuse, at present be-

“comes a crime.” She has considerably increased the expences of the crown, without raising the taxes, because she has introduced better order into the finances.

THE penal laws, in particular, have attracted the attention of C atharine. Elizabeth who first planned this important part of legislation, and the edict, which abolished the punishment of death, will make her revered for ever by the friends of humanity, who see nothing in the sword of justice, but the rod of an affectionate parent, with regret chastising his children.

BEFORE Elizabeth’s reign, travellers tell us only of frightful punishments, whose severity chills with horror. The Knout, a terrible instrument, whereof all the descriptions yet given, are false and exaggerated, was inflicted for the least faults. But all was changed by the just Elizabeth; and before speaking of this happy period, we shall give a description of the knout, having viewed the instrument of this punishment with our own eyes.

It is a strap of the thickness of a crown, three quarters of an inch broad, and made extremely hard by a kind of preparation. It is tied to a very thick plaited whip, hanging by an iron ferrule, at a little bit of elastic iron, and the whole is fixed to a very short stick. The length of the strap is two feet, its breadth at the upper part is $\frac{3}{4}$ inch, at the lower end

end $\frac{1}{2}$; and the thickness $\frac{3}{4}$. The whip is two feet long, the handle fourteen inches, the length of the instrument five feet five inches, and its weight eleven ounces. Some idea may be formed of the great force, which a dexterous executioner, (that is a barbarian, paid for being so) can give to this instrument, when it is known, that if he receive particular orders, he can dispatch the criminal by giving him only two or three strokes on the ribs. We were present, when a poor wretch underwent the punishment of the knout for murder. The executioner (in that country called the *Master*) before striking retired some steps, at same time drawing back the hand, in which he held the instrument, then he advanced and applied the flat end of the strap, with great force on the back of the patient. First he struck on the right shoulder, then upon the left, till he gave him the three hundred and thirty three strokes contained in the sentence. We observed, or rather we were made observe, that he was dexterous enough not to give two strokes on the same place. After this terrible execution of his sentence, the unhappy man, whose back streamed with blood, had his nostrils torn off with pincers, his face branded with a hot iron, and was led, or rather carried back to prison, whence he was to be transported to Siberia, but we suspect he did not survive his punishment.

IN Russia, the *Battoges* is also inflicted. It is a kind of whipping performed with the branch of a tree, of the thickness of the little finger. The person, who is to undergo this punishment is laid on his belly, and two men who hold him between their legs, one at the head, and another at the feet, give him alternately a stroke on the back with the *Battoges* and beat him till he, who directs the punishment, desire them to give over; which orders are often not given, till the back of the unfortunate sufferer is mortally mangled. During the whipping, he is obliged to pronounce constantly the word *Winawat*, which means, *I am guilty*; and at the end of the punishment, he must go and kiss the feet of him, who directed it, and thank him, that he did not make it more severe. The highest lords are not exempted from the *Battoges*, and take vengeance for it on their unhappy vassals. This punishment is particularly reserved for the inferior orders, whom malversation or roguery, would any where else drive from their employments. In Russia it is reckoned enough to bring them down to an inferior employment, after the correction of the *Battoges*.

The penal laws of Russia were long a composition of atrocities, especially under Iwan Bassowitsch, the most ingenious tormentor that ever sat on the Russian throne. The cropping, which he had brought into practice, existed till Peter's time; and
lords

lords of the first distinction underwent this frightful punishment. We are told, but we can hardly believe it, that these poor men, in midst of their torments, far from murmuring against the Czar, put up prayers for the prosperity of his reign.

Now a days these horrors have no existence, and the penal code is reduced, for persons guilty of High Treason, to beheading and perpetual imprisonment. Criminals, who by the law were formerly condemned to capital punishment, have now their noses torn off with pincers, their faces marked with a hot iron, bearing the impress of the spread eagle of the empire, and receive the knout, as has been already said, and are sent afterwards to work all their lives in the mines of Siberia. This sort of punishment is unquestionably more cruel than the punishment of death, and yet has not the same efficacy; because the individual culprit sees not his last dissolution.

PERSONS convicted of lesser crimes, are either whipped, or transported into the colonies of Siberia, or sentenced to the public works for a certain time. Peasants, whom their lords can banish at pleasure, are sent to the colonies of Siberia, by simply declaring the nature of their offence.

ALL the criminals transported thither, are sent to the place of their exile in Autumn or Spring. They are carried partly by water, and partly marched over land, chained two and two, and bound to a long

a long rope. When this chain arrives at Tobolsk in Siberia, the governor distributes those, who have learned trades, among the different masters of the town, and sends others to work like slaves in the country. The rest are conducted as far as *Irkutsk*, and the governor disposes of them in the same way. Those condemned for capital crimes are sent to the silver mines and founderies of Nerfchinck.

NOTWITHSTANDING the clemency so much extolled in the Empress Elizabeth, she had preserved just as she had found, the barbarous practice of extorting confessions from persons accused of treason. It was terrible. It was a kind of *Estrapado*. Their hands were tied behind their back, they were lifted very high in this posture, afterwards they were dashed on the ground with such violence, that the concussion dislocated their shoulders, and in this horrible situation they received the knout. Elizabeth, the compassionate Elizabeth, without reserve, and for her little vengeance, employed this terrible instrument of barbarity and despotism. During all her reign it was customary to employ it at the pleasure of the inferior judges. It was only at the time that Catharine II. mounted the throne, that this torture, and every kind of torture, was proscribed in the tribunals.

ALTHOUGH the sovereigns of Russia are absolute in the most extensive sense of the word, yet the ge-

neral prejudice of the nation, in favour of torture, was so deeply rooted, that the Empress, who well knew, what indulgence is sometimes to be given to the most unreasonable prejudices, wisely observed the greatest circumspection, in order to avoid the grumbling, which the sudden and unexpected suppression of this inhuman practice had excited. The precaution she took for the purpose of gradually bringing about the suppression, does no less honour to her prudence, than to the goodness of her heart. In the year 1762, at her accession to the throne, she first took from the *Wyszetsky*, or inferior judges, the right of ordering torture, which they had shamefully abused. In 1767, a secret order was given to the judges of different provinces, bearing, that however they might think torture necessary to obtain the confession of the accused, they ought to submit the principal charges brought against him to the examination of the governor of the province; and these governors had received instructions, by which they were to determine the cases, where torture might be necessary, but these cases could have no existence; for the judges were ordered to take, as a rule of their conduct, the principles laid down in the third question of the tenth chapter of her majesty's instructions, for forming a new code. In these articles it is demonstrated, that torture is not less useless than cruel, for accomplishing the purpose the
judges

judges have in view, which is the confession of the crimes of the person subjected to this pain; for when the torture is over, he may retract, and invalidate or render null the confession extorted from him. By this precaution, which abridged many forms, torture was tacitly abolished, and was really so some time after, formally and publicly. This suppression may doubtless be reckoned a period memorable in the annals of humanity, and along with it, may be placed the instructions, which all the governors of the Russian empire received, respecting the management of prisons. First, They were not to be the same for persons charged with civil, and persons charged with criminal offences. Secondly, The prison for criminals was to be divided into three parts; the first for criminals before and during their trials, where they were to be treated with the attention due to innocent persons; because those charged with crimes ought to be distinguished from those condemned for crimes, and the issue might prove them innocent. The second was for those who were to remain a certain time in prison; the third division for such as were condemned to perpetual imprisonment and the public works. Without ceasing to be humane, the keepers were to be strict with the unfortunate persons, whom the second and third prison contained. Every apartment was to be subdivided into two; one for men, and

have no influence but over the low people, who in Russia are reckoned as nothing. Not only the conquered provinces have been supported in their religion, and have obtained ministers and churches of their communion or faith, but the Lutherans, Calvinists, Moravians, Mahometans, Pagans, &c. have aspired at offices, and all civil and military dignities, when they have really been, or only supposed, worthy of them.

INTO the provinces of Estonia, Livonia, and Finland especially, the intolerant should go to receive lessons of moderation and toleration. They will there see frequently and almost every where, marriages contracted between Lutherans, Greeks, Romans, and Calvinists, without any of the two parties wishing to draw the other from their sect. The education of children, a matter of such general delicacy, where a diversity of religious opinions prevails, causes in that country no dispute. The daughters follow the communion of the mother and the sons that of their father. Nothing is more common than the union of Lutheran ministers with the daughters of Calvinists, and this because the Calvinists having no churches, but at Riga and St Peterburg, without scruple frequent those of the Lutherans. The same harmony reigns between all the sects and Moravian brethren, more vulgarly known under the name of *Shakers*. In short, dogmas and discipline

discipline never occasion disputes among so many communions, confounded with one another. When any person is at a distance from his church, he applies, for pressing reasons, to the first minister of any worship whatever, and he assists the petitioner without any dogmatic restriction or conditions.

YET there is in Russia, to the disgrace of reason, what is yet called a *predominant* or *established religion*, which, as observed by *Jean-Jacques*, is always the religion of the prince and the hangman.—The religious system adopted by the Czar, and those properly called Russians, is that, which theologians call the *Greek religion*, which differs in some dogmatical points from the *Latin*. We shall save our readers the trouble of a particular account of these differences, all of them trifling, but especially those which regard the *Procession of the Holy Ghost*, and the quality of bread used in sacrifices. We will content ourselves with remarking that the Greeks deny the supremacy of the bishop of Rome, and condemn the worship of carved images. On this account, there are no statues to be seen in their temples, but we found there a crowd of paintings, representing thousands of saints, to whom they pay a worship, almost equal to that due to the divinity.

THE Greek church equals the Latin church in ceremonies, and exceeds it in superstitious customs, which

which is not to say little. As these puerilities characterise the nations addicted to them, we will run over the principal. At the beginning of the year, the king's day is a singular festival, which the Russians call the benediction of waters. On the Neva then frozen, there is raised for this ceremony, a kind of temple of an octagonal figure, on the top of which is a St John the Baptist, and the inside is decorated with pictures, representing the Baptism of Jesus, his transfiguration, and some other parts of his life. There your attention is drawn to an enormous *Holy-Ghost*, appearing to descend from heaven, a decoration common to all the Greek churches, which introduce the Holy-Ghost every where. In the middle of the sanctuary is a square space, where the broken ice leaves a communication with the waters running below, and the rest is ornamented with rich tapestry. Around this temple there is erected a kind of gallery, which communicates with one of the windows of the Imperial Palace, at which the Empress and her family come out to attend the ceremony, which begins as soon as the regiments of guards have taken post on the river. Then the archbishop at the sound of the bells, and of the artillery of the fortress, comes out of the palace and walks in procession, with all his clergy to the little temple we have just mentioned. When arrived at

the place where the ice is broken, he descends, by means of a ladder, to the side of the water. There he dips his cross three or four times, afterwards says some prayers, an orison to the great St Nicholas, and the waters are then thought blessed. The prelate sprinkles the water on the company around him, and on the colours of all the regiments, that happen to be at St Petersburg. After this benediction the archbishop retires, then the people crowd toward the hole, by which this prelate has blessed the waters. They drink of them with a holy avidity. Notwithstanding the cold, the mothers plunge their infants, and the old men their heads, into them. Every body makes it a duty to carry away some for the purification of their houses, and curing certain distempers, against which the good Russians pretend this holy water is a powerful specific. While every one proceeds to this useful provision, four popes, who are at the four corners of the sanctuary, sing a kind of litany, in which they rehearse all the titles of the Empress, and to which the people answer by these words; *Pamelbi-Bog*—May God take pity on her.

THE Russians have a great number of abstinencies or fasts, and among the rest, four lents. The first, which is their great lent, commences eight weeks before Easter. The second called the lent of St Pe-

ter lasts five weeks and five days. The third is the lent of the mother of God, which begins on the first of August, and ends on the day of the assumption. The fourth is fixed for the fifteenth of November, and ends on christmass day. During the last week of this fourth lent, the tables of rigid observers are covered only with pots of a small size, and dishes not of a solid nature, because they say, Jesus, when he came into the world, could not use large pots, nor digest too solid meat. In their great lent they make use of nothing but butter and milk during the last week, which on that account is called *Masheniza*, or butter week. Besides their lents, the Wednesdays and Fridays of the whole year are fish-days.

THESE good people think the abstinence broken, or at least very much altered, when a plate of meat has touched their lent plates. On Ash-wednesday, the popes don't blacken the brows of their congregations with ashes, but present them dishes composed of rice, sugar, honey and raisins, which is the symbol of the abstinence to be observed in great lent. The lower class of people, during this lent, use nothing but litted oil, and sigh for Easter day, as a thirsty man for a spring. They go to church on Holy Saturday at ten o'clock at night, stay there till twelve, and return home to indemnify themselves for lent, in a debauch, which commonly lasts

till next day at noon. At the court and among the rich, who ape it, they breakfast on Easter morning at ten o'clock, on brandy, cheese, cake and butter. That day, which is a great day of drunkenness for the Russians, the slaves present eggs to their lords, who can refuse neither them, nor the embrace they give them, telling them; *Christ is risen*—The person embraced—answers, *Yes*, and accompanies his answer with some copecs.

DURING the feast of Pentecost, the Russian peasants plant maize, and strew flowers in their churches in honour of the Holy Ghost, and also in honour of spring. After mass, the priest preaches a kind of practical sermon, in which he mixes the gifts of the Holy Spirit, with those of Nature, which is going to be renewed; blesses the flowers which the women and girls gather up, to crown and ornament their houses with them.

ON other festivals, and unfortunately there are many in Russia, divine service is performed there with much more pomp than in the Latin church. We were several times witnesses of this in the cathedral of St Petersburg, where we saw the archbishop of Moscow officiate, who bears the name of the celebrated *Plato*, and is almost as illustrious as he. He is a man of letters, and though brought up in a cloister, has none of its prejudices—We followed him to the church on the Sunday of Pentecost, where

where he performed the duties of Pontiff in his finest robes. When he appeared in the choir, those who occupied the lobby, thundered a hymn in the Greek language, * which ended not till the prelate advanced towards the sanctuary, where he said a short prayer, and went afterwards to place himself on a kind of throne, erected in the middle of the church, where the priests were waiting for him, to invest him with his pontifical robes. He put off his *Mandias*, or ordinary coat, and as they put on him the different parts of the dress he was to be decked with, he kissed them before they were laid on. They afterwards put on his head a crown enriched with jewels, and on his shoulders a cloak or robe not less rich. We were told that this dress was the same with the Imperial robe, which the Greek Emperors formerly used, and in which they allowed the prelates to dress themselves, when they officiated.

It was in this dress, that the archbishop passed into the sanctuary, and began service, a part of which was read by the priests in the Slavonian language, and the rest by the archbishop in the Greek; but he pronounced it, as the ritual directs, with the accent of the modern Greeks, in which there is nothing of the prosody of the ancients. We heard neither organ nor any musical instrument, because

S 2

the

* The service is generally performed in the Slavonian and Greek tongue.

the Greek liturgy does not allow them; but the rhyme observed in singing the hymns produced a melody, with which the ear was very well entertained. We noticed that the luminary was not less than in the Latin church, and the censer was very much used. When the service was near a conclusion, the archbishop and the clergy went into the extremity of the sanctuary to communicate, which they did with the two representations, and the bread lifted up. During this ceremony, the doors of the sanctuary were shut, that no layman might participate. In the mean time, as strangers, we had permission to stand there. A protopope presented to the communicants standing in two rows, a cup, in which was wine mixed with lukewarm water. Every one drunk of it in his turn, the cup passing successively from the right row to the left, and every communicant was served with a bit of bread, in a spoon, which had been soaked in wine.

THIS ceremony, with the hymns and prayers, which preceded and followed it, lasted a complete hour, and ended with a benediction, which the archbishop gave the people. He then returned to put off his pontifical robes, on the seat, on which he had been dressed in them.

THE Greek Priests have much more reverence and meditation in their way of going through divine service, than the Latin priests; and the discipline of their church

church directs, that when once a priest is at the altar, he must not remove from it, during the time he ought to stand there, whatever may happen him. For instance we were told, that the Prelate Gabriel, at present metropolitan of Novogorod, and Archimandrite to St Alexander Neufki, being one day engaged in saying mass at St Petersburg, the house contiguous to the church took fire, and the flames reaching the steeple, Gabriel was warned of the danger he was in, and yet he stirred not, even although he was told a second time, that the bells would not be long in bruising him to atoms. As the cries of the multitude, conjuring him to remove from certain death, made no impression on him, one of his relations leaped towards the altar and tore him from it. Scarcely was he twenty paces from it, when the steeple fell with a great crash upon the sanctuary. In relating this story, the Russians thought there was much courage in this prelate's conduct, but we saw in it nothing but fanatical obstinacy.

RUSSIA for a long time had a patriarch, and next to the Czar, he was the most eminent person of the empire, and almost always equalled the Czar by his pomp and influence, when he did not surpass him; for the Russians before being regenerate, revered the patriarch and his priests like demi-gods. This pontiff in order to be legally installed, required to be confirmed by the patriarchs of Constantinople.

Alexis Michaelowitsch assisted the ambitious Nikon, of whom we shall have occasion to speak afterwards, in shaking off this yoke, and by that did a great service to his country, from which the patriarch of Constantinople, like a true priest, was in the practice of exacting money not his due.

WE have seen that Peter I. did still a greater service to Russia, by abolishing the dignity of patriarch; declaring himself the head of the Russian church, in spite of the remonstrances of the clergy, who accused him of laying his hand on the censer; but Peter was too great a philosopher, not to transmit to his successors the Imperial crown, disencumbered with the sacerdotal chains, so difficult to break in former times and so weak at this day, because reason has pointed out the way of accomplishing the attempt.

IN spite of the civilized state, in which we believe the Russians are, it would be difficult to find a nation more superstitious; not even Spain nor Portugal exceeds it. The Russians eat no hares nor pigeons; the former because they are reputed unclean, and the latter because they are afraid of eating the Holy Ghost in the form of a dove. The ringing of bells is for them an object of veneration, and they ascribe to it much efficacy for the saving of souls. On days of great solemnity, there are no ears able to bear the noise of the bells, which are put in motion at break of day, and are never suffered to rest till sunset.

fet. They reckon it devotion to go and ring them; and on this account the cords of the most part reach to cottages before the churches, constructed expressly for the convenience of benevolent ringers.

LIKE the Spaniards and Italians, the Russians have small chapels in their houses in honour of the saint, for whom they have a particular devotion. This saint of predilection is in Russia known under the name of *Bog*, and no expence is grudged to decorate the chapel of a *Bog*, which is always furnished with the richest luminary, when the proprietor is in ability. This childishness is not the rage of the common people alone. Noblemen, people in office, monasteries, all have their *Bogs*, and at the highest price. What will be scarcely believed, but we can attest, because we have seen it, is that Mr Scheremetoff, a member of the *Directing Senate* has a cabinet of *Bogs* worth more than a million of roubles. £ 222,222 : 4. Sterling.

GENERALLY the Saint or *Bog* is painted on wood, and it is the diamonds, with which it is surrounded, that constitute its value. A Russian entering an apartment salutes nobody before he has made three cross signs before the *Bog* of the house. The *Bogs* most in fashion are St Nicholas, St John the Baptist, St Sergius and St Alexander Neufki; yet the other saints are not without veneration, more or less, which is always settled by the pretended power

power attributed to them by ignorant superstition. For example it is an opinion in this country that St George watches particularly over horned beasts, and that St Blaife is with God the patron and interpreter of other animals. Horses have St Anthony, and St Jonas is for the fishes, St Aitippe is invoked for the toothach, St Elias against thunder, and the Virgin for an infinite number of evils, and a very long patronage.

THERE are several cities in Russia, in which there are particular markets for selling Bogs, and merchants when selling them avoid using the word *Buy*. A bargain may be always made at the price they set on them, because it is a sin among them to ask too much, and we were also told, that it was one to cheapen them. The wax candles or tapers, which they burn before the Bogs, are the very reverse of our wax tapers; they are thick at the top and diminish towards the bottom. The popes say, that this form is given them, to imitate the visual ray of the faints, when they direct their eyes toward the earth. This solution, however insipid it may be thought, is not more so than the answers often made by the catholic priests to the indiscreet interrogatories of their devotees.

At a distance from the capitals, the stupid and credulous are most ready to allow themselves to be imposed on, by the first deceiver, that attempts it.

They

They are persuaded, for instance, if they are husbandmen or merchants, that in order to succeed in planting or trading, such a Bog's favour is necessary; that he will make their fortune, and must be hired for a certain time, during which the borrowed Bog is grandly entertained and loaded with offerings, which must remain for the profit of the hirer.

IN the worship paid to the Bogs, devotees consider it an abomination to take tobacco in their presence, or to turn your back to them, when you are in conversation in a room, where they have a chapel. There is also a certain time of year, when the wife must refrain from going to church, and above all from touching the Bog; and before the expiration of this critical time, she must be bathed before she present herself before the Bog.

AMONG the Russians the number *Forty* is sacred. It is the term of their civil and religious ceremonies. They study most carefully to show it in their accounts and conversations. Thus instead of saying a rouble or twenty copecs, they say, forty altins. The tribute of Siberia in peltry is collected and put into packages of forty skins. The Popes when reading the litany, are obliged at the conclusion to say forty times without losing breath, *God have pity on us.*—Two of their lents are of forty days.

If you ask their theologians the reason of their predilection for this number, they answer, that Moses, Elias and Jesus fasted forty days; that the last did not ascend into heaven till forty days after his resurrection; that in the old testament many things were divided by forty, and particularly the life of Moses, in which are three remarkable periods of forty each. At the expiration of the first he was obliged to fly from Egypt; at the end of other forty years, he brought the children of Israel out of Egypt; and they wandered forty years in the wilderness. In short they observe, that among the Israelites, and till this day among the Jews descended from them, the transgressors of the law received, and still receive, forty lashes with a whip. In conformity to such powerful reasons, it is astonishing they have not adopted the number *seven*, which among the Jews, was much more mysterious than that of *forty*.

WE said at the beginning of this chapter, that toleration was one of the principles of the Russian government, yet it does not tolerate the Jews; even under the reign of Catharine II. when the liberty of thinking is very philosophical. It excludes from offices the *Resselniki*, the only sectaries that have taken place in Russia. They are the *Quakers* of that country. These sectaries, who among themselves are called *Staroverzi*, orthodox or believers in the ancient

ancient faith (because the word *Roskolniki* signifies heretics) did not begin to make any noise in Russia, till towards the middle of the sixteenth century, and under the patriarch Nikon, who, they maintain, was Antichrist. They differ from the other Greeks, on some obscure points, the particulars of which we shall not speak of. We shall notice simply, that they do not consider the civil government, which distinguishes property, as a christian institution. They maintain that all ought to be divided as among brethren. They are horrified at the worship of images, which they consider as idolatry; but what with justice makes them very ridiculous, is, that in their eyes smoking tobacco is an abominable profanation. If any one is inconsiderate enough to indulge himself with it in their houses, as soon as he is gone, they open the doors and windows, sweep, rub, and clean all the house, but chiefly the place where this profane person sat or stood.

PETER I. who ought not to have paid any attention to them, gave them some celebrity, by occupying himself with them, and trying every method to bring them back to the Greek church. But in him, who affected toleration, and thought it useful to the population of his dominion, which stood so much in need of population, it was unpardonable to have employed torture for converting them. Above all

he deserves to be severely blamed for the punishment of the unfortunate *Toma*, who ought to have been confined, not given up to the flames.

THIS madman, who was priest in his sect, and consequently must have been the greater fanatic, took it into his head one day to preach openly in a church in Moscow, against the invocation of saints, and some other dogmas of the religion called predominant. The popes, it is said, gently invited *Toma* to retire, which he did, but it was only to return armed with a hatchet, with which he cut in pieces the images of St Alexis and the Virgin. This action unquestionably showed him to be mad, and as being such, he ought to have been confined, and some attempts made to cure him; but the popes, who were a little ago so moderate, made him be arrested, and Peter made him be burnt alive. *Toma* after having heard his sentence read, with that sullen indifference, inspired by the fanaticism which pursues its death, saw his hand, which had carried the hatchet, consumed by the fire without uttering a sigh; got upon the pile, and expired, declaiming against the popes, and the abuses they had introduced into religion. Peter, they say, was so struck with the manner, in which this poor man had suffered his punishment, that he repented of having given his consent to it, and issued an order forbidding the persecution of the *Roskolniki*, but command-

ed

ed them to wear a sort of red hood, to distinguish them from his other subjects; as if these poor creatures with this mark of proscription ought to have been less dear than those, with whom they differed in opinion. Like the rest of his subjects, did not they pay taxes, and did not they go out to war, when the prince called them? Catharine II. whom Voltaire has praised so highly for toleration, but on what grounds we know not; Catharine II. has not suppressed the hood of the *Roskolniki*. Philosophers can flatter too!

CHAP. XII.

REVENUES of Russia.—Of what they consist.—Their amount.—What it was in the time of Peter I.—Their application.—Bank of assignation.—Discredit of the bills of this bank.—National debt.

THE finances of Russia were before Peter I. and during the first years of his reign, in the greatest confusion, so that the Czars scarcely knew what were their revenues. Peter, who needed great resources, because he had great plans to execute, wishing not to waver in this uncertainty, established a system of finance, by which this part of the administration was put into the greatest order.

BESIDES

BESIDES the taxes paid by the provinces conquered from Sweden, and those which have been the consequence of the division of Poland, the revenues of Russia arise from the Capitation tax;—The custom-house duties, which are very oppressive;—Gabel, or the felling of salt, which is carried to the highest monopoly;—the revenues of the Demefne lands, and the estates of the church annexed to them; the licences of inns; the produce of the mines, and coinage of money; the emission of bank-bills and duties on timber. The capitation was established by Peter I. in the year 1721, with some exception in favour of persons engaged in cultivating land. But under Catharine II. every person was subjected to it, except the nobles and priests, who alone ought to have paid it. In this exemption are comprehended also, the soldiers, sailors of the royal navy, the Cossacs, and the conquered provinces which had their privileges.

EVERY twenty years, a general enumeration is made of all the subjects of the empire, according to which a tax is laid on all the males, comprehended in the classes of burgeses and peasants, from the very moment of their birth to their death. The manner of assessment is complicated. The *maximum* is thirty copecs and the *minimum* three a head; but in a ratio repugnant to common sense, for it is the peasant that pays this maximum, and the rich or ennobled

ennobled, the minimum. During the intervals between the numbering, as they say in Russia, of a *Review* for another, the sum at which every district has been taxed, must be paid without any variation. Let population increase or diminish, the proprietors of lands must devise some way of supplying the deficiency, if there be any, and of answering for their peasants.

ACCORDING to the last Review, the Capitation was to produce a sum of thirty four millions of French livres, or upwards of one million four hundred thousand pounds sterling; but after the war with the Turks again commenced, it was raised to near forty two millions of livres, or near one million seven hundred thousand pounds sterling. At the peace it was restored to its former footing, as it has already happened in such circumstances; whence it may be concluded that the sum of thirty four millions may be considered as the ordinary produce of this tax.

The conquered countries, and the government of Mohilef and Polottk, dismembered from Poland, are taxed at five millions, four hundred and sixty thousand livres.

The custom house duties produce thirteen millions, six hundred and seventy five thousand livres.

The salt works, of which the produce goes into her majesty's privy purse, make up a revenue of
 nine

nine millions, although she has twice lowered the price of salt near thirty per cent.

THE mines, the mint, the duties on baths, and those, which Catharine II. has laid on forged iron, produce fifteen millions, two hundred thousand livres, exclusive of the profits on gold and silver imported from abroad, and converted into specie.

THE church lands annexed to the crown produce about nine millions, whereof a part is appropriated for paying the salaries of prelates, popes and the regular clergy, and the pensions of officers and disbanded soldiers. The remainder forming an object of more than a million, goes into the cash-box of the Czarina.

THE licences to inns, which comprehended also the right of distilling, at present forms a third of the Russian revenues. They are established in all the provinces except Ukraine and the conquered countries. It is astonishing how highly this branch of the revenues has risen. Subjoined is a view of its increase.

		Livres.
In 1752	the licences were farmed at	13,000,000
In 1770	they were raised to	14,250,000
In 1774	to	19,360,000
In 1778	to	37,000,000
In 1783	to	39,600,000
In 1788	last lease to	41,200,000

THEY will be probably raised higher at next lease. The cities of Moscow and St Peterburg pay for their proportion about thirteen millions.

THE duty on timber, the monopoly of different commodities, the tributes paid in kind, consisting of peltry, and the taxes we may have omitted, make a sum of twelve millions.

Recapitulation

Of the revenues of the Russian empire.

Capitation	34,000,000
Taxes paid by the conquered countries and the provinces dismembered from Poland	5,460,000
The customs	14,000,000
Gabels	9,000,000
Mines, Duties on forges and coinage	15,200,000
Church-lands annexed to the crown	9,000,000
Licences to Inns and Taverns	41,000,000
Duties on timber and other articles	12,000,000
	<hr/>
	139,660,000
	<hr/>

N. B. The above sums reckoned in French livres, exchange at 10d sterling, amount to about 5,700,000 pounds sterling.

IT is a singular remark, but deserving of attention, that the gradual increase of civilization in Russia has been accompanied by a like increase in the

revenues. At the accession of Peter I. they amounted to only twenty four millions, and at his death to thirty seven. Under Elizabeth they were brought to eighty millions. When the reigning Empress mounted the throne, they were at a hundred and two millions, and at this day they come to near a hundred and forty millions, and will probably very soon rise higher. This revenue is sufficient in time of peace, when the army and the fleet cost only about sixty nine millions, and the civil administration fifty millions. The remainder, that is to say, twenty millions, is appropriated to the Empress' cash box.

It is not easy to be understood, how this princess with a sum so moderate, can support the magnificence of her court; the great number of establishments she has formed; the numerous buildings erected at her expence, for which she has assigned in time of peace an annual sum of four millions; her acts of generosity; the encouragement she gives to the arts and sciences; the purchases she is constantly making in different parts of Europe; the rich and numerous presents received from her, by persons, who have rendered themselves worthy of rewards.

The revenues of Russia may be considerably augmented in case of necessity, as has been seen in the different wars with the Porte; but this augmentation is effected by the increase of the capitation, and the
creation

creation of new taxes, which exhaust a nation that ought to be spared more than any other, because it is situated in a rigorous climate, where nature has done almost nothing for it.

WHAT contributed most of all towards enabling the government to support the war with the Turks was, the Bank established under the name of *Assig-nation-bank*, at a time, when copper money could not be coined in sufficiency for the expences, bank bills worth fifty, sixty, and a hundred roubles, were issued, payable at the banks of St Peterburg and Moscow. There was a circulation of these to the amount of forty five millions of roubles, or ten millions sterling, nearly.

WHEN these bills began to circulate, they were not taken without some difficulty, and in the distant provinces, there was a discount on them of three and a half, and in some places six per cent. But compared with the copper money, their advantages rendered them of general use. They were found so useful in commerce, that they were only one per cent. under silver, and they were a half per cent. above copper money. But the last war with Turkey, and some extravagant plans, which must be imputed to the sinking, caused by the years of Catharine II. having drained the specie of Russia, the bank bills fell into great discredit, and in the

U 2

year

year 1791 they lost thirty eight per cent. of their original value.

AT the end of the war before the last, the debts contracted by Russia with foreigners, amounted only to about forty five millions of French livres, (near two millions sterling) and they were almost all discharged. Since that time, however, near a hundred millions have been borrowed at two different times from the Dutch, who will not be so soon repaid, if they will not take paper money, or charters to go and trade in the frozen countries of Russia, where the greedy avarice of their merchants will brave the excessive cold, as in scorching climates it does the excessive heats. We shall remark, since we are upon the Dutch, who are the modern *Craesus* of Europe, that they have two debts very precarious, one in England, the other in Russia, without reckoning sixty millions, they have lent to some adventurers, who have nothing to pay them with, but a great name and romantic plans.

C H A P. XIII.

PARTICULARS of the military forces of Russia.—Historical note on the Strelitz.—Abolition of this militia.—With what troops Peter replaced them.—Actual constitution of the Russian army.—The Empress' household troops.—Infantry of the army.—Regular cavalry.—Irregular cavalry.—The Cossacs.—The Kalmucs.—The National militia.—Method of recruiting the Russian armies.

THE rapid progress of Russia, her victories, the weight she has acquired in the political balance of Europe, which she aspires at increasing still more, engaged us to cast a curious eye on the means, by which she has been enabled to rise to the pitch, which she has attained. It was affirmed to us at St Petersburg, that these means were centered in the army and navy, created by Peter I. which his successors, but particularly Catharine II. have so well organized. To appreciate this assertion, which by setting aside a concurrence of circumstances, approaches very near the truth, we procured the following particulars respecting the army and navy, the perusal of which, we hope, will yield complete satisfaction to our readers. We were supplied with them by one of the principal members of the college of war.

WE shall not enlarge on the old Russian Militia or Muscovites, of whom not a vestige remains, not even in the *Odnodwortzi*, whom we have taken a little notice of; nor in the *Strelzis*, (known in Europe under the name of *Strelitz*, a word signifying *police officers*), whose fame induces us to mention them. This militia as formidable in Russia, as the Pretorians were in Rome, or the Janissaries in Constantinople, had been created by Iwan Basilowitich, and served on foot. It was not by their exploits against the enemies of the state, that they gained a name, but by their want of discipline, and frequent insurrections against the sovereigns, who kept them in pay; and that, as judiciously remarked by Voltaire, because they were Moscow burgeses and not soldiers.

THE ambitious and cruel Sophia, who concealed her vices with the mask of devotion, and to her interest secured the priests, who are satisfied with this disguise, having by means of intrigue come at the management of the reins of government, during the infancy of her brothers Iwan and Peter, had this militia at her nod, and made them inhumanly butcher the unfortunate Boyards, that fell under her displeasure, and among whom were the greatest number of Peter's relations; he when raised to the empire took vengeance on this militia by abolishing them.

•IT is true the Strelitz had provoked this vengeance. The Czar Peter, in order to inform himself of what was going on in foreign countries, had left Russia, and some Boyards, assisted by the greatest number of the popes, who viewed the new establishments of this prince, as so many acts of sacrilege, had taken advantage of his absence to excite commotions, and drawn from the cloister, the princess Sophia, whom at the time of his mounting the throne, Peter had forced to take the veil. The Strelitz, who like the priests, were attached to national prejudices, had been the agents of this insurrection, which would have had serious consequences, if the genius and activity of Peter had not supported him in quashing it.

HE was then at Vienna, from which he set out *incognito* and arrived at Moscow, when he was supposed to be in the farther end of Germany. His presence was a thunderbolt for the conspirators, against whom he displayed a severity unexampled, but it proved his salvation. The leaders of the Strelitz, and two thousand soldiers of this militia, along with the popes, who had brought them over to this revolt, were delivered over to the executioners, and the whole body of the Strelitz, whom none of Peter's predecessors had even dared to diminish, was dispersed and annihilated without resistance. It is true,
Peter

Peter for some time before had secretly prepared this important suppression.

In the room of this militia, undisciplined as all those are, that to numerous privileges, join a long residence at court, Peter substituted some regiments regulated in the same way as other troops in Europe. At first the army was far from numerous, being a body composed only of different hordes of nobles, who, at the requisition of the prince, turned out to serve with their vassals. The latter formed the infantry, and their masters the cavalry. But Peter, who had to fight with enemies, that had other resources, in order to be able to face them, set about replacing these bands of nobles, from whom he drew only a momentary service, by permanent armies, whom he could dispose of according to his pleasure, and at all times. Consequently he ordered the formation of the *Poduschnoioklad* or *General register*, in which were entered all the heads of families of the order of burghesses and peasants. Every ten families were obliged to furnish a man, and as the review reported, seven hundred and fifty thousand, four hundred and seventy nine families in the two orders. the consequence was, the Czar had an army of about seventy thousand men, who were immediately ordered to St Petersburg and other places, to be instructed in the use of arms. The Czar's successors followed this mode, adapted more or less

to circumstances, and their own wants. But Catharine II. in the year 1764, new modelled the military establishment of the empire: In the 1784, it again underwent some other changes, and received a very considerable augmentation in the year of the commencement of the last war with the Turks.

THE Russian army is composed of regular troops, and light or irregular troops; the former almost all in infantry and the latter almost all in cavalry. The regular troops form a body of more than three hundred thousand men, which according to circumstances, is augmented to more than four hundred thousand; for in these three hundred thousand, are not included the household troops of the Empress, nor the national militia, which they call the *Landmilitz*.

THESE troops, when well commanded, are capable of performing the greatest feats. First, because the Russian soldiers are *Beings* entirely passive, and their obedience goes the length of self-denial. It is founded upon a sort of opinion, that would make them rather let themselves be cut to pieces on the carriage of a cannon, than abandon it. This opinion, which their priests have taken great care to inculcate on them, at the instigation of some ambitious Emperor, consists in believing, that they will go to paradise, if they die with their face turned to the enemy, and that they will be reprobated if they

perish flying. This article of faith, that might have made the Russians fanatical heroes, is unluckily beginning to lose its influence among them. Notwithstanding this, they will not be less excellent soldiers, because they are indefatigable, obedient, and completely sober. An anecdote is told of a regiment in the army commanded by General Fermor, in the seven-years-war, which having mounted guard in a certain place, was forgotten by a counter-march, which the Russian army was obliged to make, and when the army returned to the same ground five days after, this regiment was found in the same place by the very officer, who had posted it, and who affirmed, that the poor soldiers forgotten by him, having only one day's provisions, had lived on herbs and roots for other four.

THE Empress' household troops are composed of four regiments, properly called regiments of Guards, of two battalions, one of Hussars, and the other of Cossacs, and of the superb company of *Chevalier-Guards*. There is nothing more beautiful, or more magnificent, than these regiments of Guards, and they are never filled up but with the flower of the army, for stature and size. The first is a regiment of Cavalry, called *Horse-Guards*. The other three are Infantry, and bear the names of *Preobajenskoï*, *Semenovskoi*, and *Ismailovskoi*. These form a body of

ten

ten thousand men, whereof the first have four thousand, and the other two, three thousand each.

The first, *Preobaschenskoi*, were formed, and took their name from the company of fifty young people, whom Peter I. then a young man, trained in his country house, called *Preobaschenskoi*. He enrolled himself in it, and served in it, first as a drummer, and then as a soldier, and serjeant, and afterwards received the rank of Lieutenant. Lefort was captain of it; and this company, which at first caused no uneasiness to the ambitious Sophia, because she considered it only the amusement of a young man, whom she wished to keep at distance from business; this company was the basis, on which soon afterwards the army was organized, which was bold enough to engage with that of Charles XII. which learned of him to conquer, and by which he was at last overcome.

THE regiment of *Preobaschenskoi*, whose military origin we have now related, is composed of two Grenadier companies, of six hundred and fifty men each; of sixteen companies of Fusileers, of a hundred and forty four each; of one company of Bombardiers, of two hundred men, and one of Cadets, of the same number. These Cadets are sons of soldiers, put there for instruction. They take their officers from their own body, which is a nursery for excellent soldiers. The other two regiments of foot guards, have each a company of grenadiers, and

twelve fusiliers, with this difference, that the regiment of Ismailowfkoï, has besides a company of Chasseurs and one of Cadets; whereas that of Seménowfki, has only a corps of seventy Chasseurs and no Cadets, and has only a school for the children of foldiers.

THE Empress is Colonel of these three regiments, of the horse guards and chevalier guards. He, who commands next to her Majesty, is commonly a General of one of the first families of the empire. He has the rank of Lieutenant Colonel, and the two first regiments have two. During our stay in Russia, it was Prince Potemkin Marshal-General of the empire, and Prince George Dolgoroufki, first General of the army, who were Lieutenant Colonels of Preobafchenfki; and the Lieutenant Colonels of the other regiments were nobles equally distinguished.

IN general the officers of these corps, and it is the same in all courts, are advanced above those of the same degree in the army. A Captain of Guards has the rank of Colonel, and retires with that of Brevet-Brigadier. The Serjeants in these regiments have the rank of Lieutenants, &c.

EVERY company has five officers, viz. two Captains, two Lieutenants and an Ensign. It has thirty low or non-commissioned officers, whereof six are Serjeants, and twenty four are Corporals. There are always two Serjeants doing duty at the door of
the

the hall, called the hall of the throne. The establishment of the troop of horse guards is the same.

THE pay of these forces is reduced to French and English money—exchange 10d a livre.

For the Cavalry.

	<i>Livres</i>	£.	s.	d.
First Captain <i>per ann.</i>	4,000—	166	13	4
Second Captain	2,500—	104	3	4
First Lieutenant	2,000—	83	6	8
Second Lieutenant	1,850—	77	1	8
Cornet	1,750—	72	18	4
Quarter-Master	720—	30	0	0
Corporal	240—	10	0	0
Trumpeter	240—	10	0	0
Trooper	105—	4	7	6

For the Infantry.

First Captain	2,800—	116	13	4
Second Captain	2,000—	83	6	8
First Lieutenant	1,850—	77	1	8
Second Lieutenant	1,750—	72	18	4
Ensign	950—	30	11	8
Serjeant	560—	23	6	8
Corporal	190—	7	18	4
Drummer	190—	7	18	4
Veteran Soldier	117 10 fous	4	17	11
Grenadier	117 10—	4	17	11
Fusileer	92 10—	3	17	11

THIS

THIS pay, as the reader may see, is very moderate, and it really is so for all the troops of Russia; but besides this pay, the officer has a certain number of rations, and the soldier has provisions, wood, candle, and a number of advantages, which much increase the value of his pay, if not double it.

THE Guards, both infantry and cavalry, do duty only in the winter and summer palaces and pleasure houses belonging to the Empress. In the regiment of Preobaschenskoi, each soldier is on duty one day out of four, and in the other two, three nights out of four. The horse guards always do duty on foot, except when the Empress lodges in the summer palace.

THE chevalier guards were established by Catharine II. to supply the place of the *Leib-company* which she reduced, and which Elizabeth had formed of the grenadiers, who helped her to mount the throne. They form only one company of sixty men, who have all the rank and pay of Lieutenants, with presents for their table, and the support of a carriage, which in Russia is not an object of great expence. They must all be descended of noble families, and of high stature; but with the advantage of the latter, and interest, they contrive ways of eluding the former.

THIS brilliant Cohort, the most superbly clothed of any in Europe, and worthy of figuring on the
steps

steps of the throne of the most powerful monarch, has two uniforms. The uniform worn every day consists of a blue coat, with scarlet facings, a yellow waistcoat and breeches, and a *Soubreveſte* (a kind of upper coat without sleeves) trimmed with double lace, and enriched on the two fronts before and behind, with the imperial eagle embroidered in silver. The parade uniform is a scarlet coat, with a *Soubreveſte* of blue velvet, almost all covered with silver scutcheons, fixed with links of the same metal. For the officers, these links are ornamented with jewels. On ordinary days the chevalier-guards wear a hat bound with broad lace, and set off with a black plume, for the white is appropriated to the General Officers. On days of ceremony they have a gilt helmet, with a crest of large feathers.

THE service, which the chevalier-guards perform at court, requires twelve men a day, who furnish two sentinels, in the inside of the hall of the throne, who have liberty to sit down, but sitting or standing, always rest on their arms, which are Carabines. Every time the Empress goes in or out of the hall, the chevalier-guards on duty, are permitted to kiss her hand. They are relieved every three hours.

THE establishment of Hussars and Cossack body guards, is also the work of Catharine II. These two corps who are very well laced, ride excellent horses,

horses, and consist of the handsomest men of their nations; especially the Cossacs, who are armed with gilt lances, and clothed with the most costly furs. This body of cavalry, alternately form the Empress' retinue when she goes out of the capital, that is, the Hussars accompany her to the first stage, where they are relieved by the Cossacs, who finish the journey. In return, each corps goes over the same road.

ALTHOUGH the pay of the Empress' guards be not in proportion to their rich equipment, their situation is nevertheless much better, than that of the other troops of the army. The guards are continually under the sovereign's eye, and this is enough to obtain favours from her. Besides other advantages, which we shall not enumerate, every regiment of guards has its festival, and on this day every soldier receives a present from the Empress. Peter I. also introduced a custom, which is very expensive for the Czarina, and which the guards have taken care to perpetuate. They solicit her to stand God-mother for their children, and she cannot refuse. Peter, Catharine I. and Ann performed this duty in person, but Elizabeth and Catharine II. never did so. The reigning Empress sends her procuration to an officer of the company, and five * roubles to the child's father, if a common soldier, ten roubles

* A Rouble is 6d and a Ducat is 4d Sterling.

if a serjeant, a hundred ducats if an officer, and three hundred ducats if he be of a rank above a captain.

PASSING from the Empress' household troops, to the different military corps that compose the Russian army, we find the infantry of this empire consists of

First—Four regiments of Grenadiers of 2100 men each	8,400
Secondly—Seventy one regiments of Fusiliers of 2093 men	148,603
N. B. Each regiment has two companies of Grenadiers.	
Thirdly—Eight battalions of Chasseurs of 990 men	7,920
Fourthly—Six battalions of Independent companies of 700 men	4,200
Fifthly—Eighty four garrison battalions of 1045 men	87,780
Sixthly—Soldiers employed in mines, and in the gardens of the Imperial houses	22,000
Total	<hr/> 278,803 <hr/>

A REGIMENT of infantry in Russia consists of two battalions, which together form twelve companies, and each company contains a hundred and fifty four men in time of war, and a hundred and thirty four in time of peace, inclusive of commissioned and

non-commissioned officers, of whose pay the following is a statement.

	Roubles	Servants	Rations
A Captain has annually	1200	2	5
A Lieutenant	120	1	4
A Sub-Lieutenant	100	1	3
An Ensign	100	1	3
A Serjeant Major	36	0	0
Two Serjeants each	15	0	0
A Captain of arms	12	0	0
A Flag Bearer	12	0	0
A Harbinger	12	0	0
Four Corporals each	11	0	0
A Barber or Journeyman Barber	7½	0	0
Two Drummers each	7½	0	0
One Fifer	7½	0	0
A hundred and thirty six Fusiliers	7½	0	0
A Carpenter and 2 Waggoners, each	7½	0	0

VALUING the rouble at 4s 6d, the pay of a Russian foldier is but a small fraction above a penny sterling a day, but with this the Russian foldier is lodged, warmed, clothed, and almost fed.

THE Russian Colonels furnish their regiments with necessaries, and no imposition appears to them illegal. The Farriers, Locksmiths and Armourers, following the regiments, are dependent on them, and receive sixty roubles of wages. All these artificers are Germans and do not wear uniforms.

The

The pope appointed as Almoner to a regiment, has sixty roubles a year, like the locksmiths and armourers, and is scarcely more respected.

THERE are twelve musicians in each regiment, who receive from the Empress the pay and clothing of a soldier, but they are always better paid and clothed by the Colonel, and Officers in proportion to their abilities.

THE cavalry, which since the days of Peter I. has undergone many changes in their uniform, number and establishment, consists at present of regular and irregular cavalry.

OF regular cavalry, there are sixty one regiments, viz. first---Five regiments of Cuirassiers, of six squadrons each; the squadron consisting of two troops, and the troop of thirty men, whereof three are Officers, four non-commissioned Officers, and twenty three privates. In each regiment the horses are of the same colour, all black or brown. Secondly---Nine regiments of Carabiniers, arranged like the Cuirassiers, but having horses of all colours. Thirdly---Nine regiments of dragoons, including the *Kasan* regiment, which is armed in the light manner; every regiment contains six squadrons; the squadron and the company double the strength of the cavalry.

FOURTHLY---Twenty regiments of Hussars, whereof ten contain a thousand three hundred and fifty six

men, inclusive of Officers, and the other ten contain seven hundred and fifty men. The ten first have their quarters in Ukraine, and are almost all composed of Russians. Three of these regiments bear the name of *Kompansifki-Poiki*, regiments of brothers. The other ten cantoned at St Elizabeth, and in the neighbourhood, are composed of Hungarians, Moldavians and other foreign nations. Besides a pay much better than what the rest receive, the Empress has made a grant of lands to the officers and soldiers. By this donation the part of the frontier, which they defend, being their own property, these men fought against the Turks last war like men, who were fighting on their properties, and for their properties.

Fifthly--Eight regiment of Lancers, six of which contain six hundred and thirty men each, and two, five hundred and forty. They are Cossacs regimented, to whom lands have been given, and they have defended them against the Turks, as a Tiger defends his den. They are armed with a very short Carabine, with two pistols, and a sabre, such as the Hussars carry, and a lance, which has a shaft eight feet long.

ALL this body of cavalry amounts to thirty seven thousand, four hundred and forty men, to whom must be added, what in Russia is called *Irregular Cavalry*. It consists of Cossacs and Kaimucs; barba-

rous nations, who in war furnish rather armed hordes than regiments, but excellent for fighting the Turks and the Asiatic powers, which border with Russia, and do not oppose her with troops better disciplined.

THE Cossacs, whose name we see so often repeated in gazettes and by historians, who are also gazetteers or their echoes; the Cossacs, who form among them several nations, all having nearly the same manners, are generally of middle stature, wear very short whiskers, and shave the head, all except the crown, on which they leave a little hair. Their dress is a fur cloak, a long gown after the custom of the Asiatics, large pantaloons, boots, sometimes large, sometimes small, without spurs, and a whip, which they always fasten round the right wrist. Their arms are a lance about twelve feet long, a pair of pistols, which they hang at their girdle on the left side, because on their right is a small bag, which contains about twelve cartridges; in addition to all this they have a sabre very much curved, which has no other hilt than a plain bit of iron in form of a cross. Their horses are small, but strong and mettlesome. They use a kind of Hulbr-saddle, a small cord instead of a bridle, which is tied to the saddle, and serves for a halter. They never ride their horses in a straight line; but when galloping, drive them in different directions, which makes their attack dangerous, especially when they are engaged with cavalry

cavalry of the line; their march is also like that of the Hussars. When they are at rest, they hold their lances resting on their foot; in fight they present it to the enemy, holding it by the middle, and securing it below the arm. Continual exercise qualifies them for using it with much dexterity. In their retreat, which is to them never a flight, but a kind of battle, they rest their lance on their shoulder, with the point turned towards the enemy, whose stroke it serves to parry, and it sometimes becomes fatal to him, when he incautiously pursues a man, whose flight is a stratagem.

THE aversion of the Cossacs, for all kind of discipline, has not allowed them to be taught how to manoeuvre in a squadron. They do nothing but skirmish, but they excel in this way of fighting. They are let loose on the enemy, when flying, and then they become terrible by the quickness and manner of their assault. A corps with such men at their heels, is utterly incapable of rallying, however much inclined to it.

THE Cossacs are excellent also for scouring a country, and clearing a wood, and in all kinds of patrols. Their sagacity in this respect, the effect of long custom, is something astonishing. Examining the grounds, recently traversed by the enemy's troops in the greatest disorder, they can discover very exactly the number of horses, which have passed. Some can observe

serve the movements of a corps at an extraordinary distance; others by applying their ears to the ground, can distinguish very far off, the march of men and horses. They are capable of resting under arms a whole day without murmuring. In short, as indefatigable in harrassing an enemy, especially if they have no hope of plunder, as temperate, when it is necessary to be so, which often occurs in war, they have learned to be satisfied with little; and they have no need to provide themselves with forage for their horses, because like themselves, they have accustomed them to bear hunger and thirst. But if they have a moment's respite, they employ it in feeding and dressing their horses, and when they make excursions in quest of provisions, they load themselves with a bunch of grass, rather than with a quarter of meat.

AMONG this kind of men, on whom we shall return, when we speak of the nations that are barbarous or little known, and subject to the empire of Russia; among these nations, the Cossacs of the Don, distinguish themselves in the Russian armies, and form the most considerable body in them. Their chief bears the name of *Hatthman*. He enjoys an authority so much the more extensive, that it is founded only on opinion, which is one of the most efficacious means of ruling the multitude. *Jezore-moff*, one of the *Hatthmans* did the greatest services

to Russia, and under this title, figures with glory in the annals of that nation. He joined riches to bravery. He had a revenue of a hundred roubles a year, which, it is said, he took a pleasure in dividing with his companions in arms.

THE following are the different contingents of men, furnished by the Cossac nations in time of war.

Cossacs of the Don	24,276 Men
———— of Oremburg	9,932
———— of Astracan	4,340
———— of Tobolsk and its neighbourhood	9,553
Total	<u>48,801</u>

WE cannot compute what the Kalmucs furnish. Sometimes there are hordes without number, that come to deluge the army, and clog rather than serve it: at other times there are only small bodies of them, which hardly sooner arrive than disappear, when the county where they must fight and the enemy they have to oppose, present no hopes of plunder.

ALTHOUGH they cannot be much depended on, they are of considerable use, when they are on service. Their vigilance is much superior to that of the Cossacs, and their activity admits of no comparison. Besides they cost the Emperor only one copec per day. They never fail to astonish the enemy, before whom they show themselves for the first time

time, for there is no fight more remarkable than a warrior of this nation. Suppose a man on horse-back, almost or entirely naked, armed with a bow, a quiver, a lance, and a scymitar, having on the pommel of the saddle, or rather a shabby pack saddle, a bit of fresh or corrupted horse flesh.

THE artillery of the Russian army forms a body very respectable, and consists of

One regiment of Bombadiers of	2510 Men
Two ditto of Gunners, of 2497—each	4994
Two ditto of Fusileer-Servants of ditto—	4994
A corps of Miners, Pioneers, Engineers forming six brigades of 420 men each	2520
Two brigades of Waggoners, amounting to	3823
Different brigades of Artificers, distributed through the works at St Petersburg, Moscow, and the principal arsenals of the Empire, amounting to	9913
Total, exclusive of Officers	<u>28,754</u>

THE national or land Militia is divided, like the rest of the army, into infantry and cavalry, with nearly the same constitution, and the same pay, but the cavalry is more numerous than the infantry. This militia is only employed during war.

No regiment in Russia bears the name of its Colonel. They generally have that of the cities, whose

arms they carry, or in which they were first quartered; and this designation continues with them, without variation, or at least is not changed, but for reasons of the greatest importance.

As to the uniform of the Russian army, the general colour is green, particularly that of the infantry, but many regiments of cavalry have adopted a fawn colour, especially for vests, capes, and facings. All the Hussars have green cloaks.

THE uniform of the General Officers of Infantry is green and red, and that of the Cavalry, blue and red. The Field-Marsbals and Generals, who command Cavalry and Infantry at the same time, may wear either of these uniforms, and the white plume, which, we have said, is the distinguishing badge of General Officers. There are some of them distinguished by their lace, which on the dress of a Field-Marschal or General-in-chief is triple, but the latter has no embroidery on the seams. The Staff-officers of the army are distinguished by lace on their waist-coats.

In several regiments, the Colonels have introduced a cheap uniform, which is a kind of *Surtout*, or great coat of very coarse cloth, and proves a great convenience to officers of small fortune, who can hardly attain the grand uniform. The army is clothed a-new every two years, but the Cavalry gets cloaks only every four years. There is only one
kind

kind of cloth for soldiers and non-commissioned officers, but the latter are obliged to procure some finer. Their colonel makes them an allowance for furnishing this and the lace, which distinguishes them from the common soldiers. During summer the whole army wears no coats, but in Russia the summer is so short, that the coat is in the portmanteau only a few weeks, and the œconomy that put it there, amounts to almost nothing.

FOR the service and defence of the frontiers, which are immense and exposed to frequent inroads, the Russian army is distributed into twelve divisions, which take the names of the government in which they are stationed. A Field-Marshal or General-in-chief is at the head of every division, and these divisions differ from one another in the number of troops, of which they consist; but all have cavalry and infantry. The Hussars and the Cossacs are stationed only in the divisions on the frontiers, so that the first division, which is that of St Peterburg, has only one regiment of Hussars, and no Cossacs; whereas the tenth and the eleventh, which are the divisions of Ukraine and Azoff, and of the countries newly conquered, have each five regiments of Hussars, and five regiments of Cossacs. In all these divisions, when the place where they are quartered is not a town, the Staff-officers reside in the chief manor-house, and

the rest of the troops are dispersed through the country. The peasant is strictly obliged to furnish his guests only with straw to sleep on ; but in a government, whereof the administration is military, and the soldiers belong rather to the Empress than to the empire, they force the unfortunate peasant to give up a part of his necessary provisions, to put it into their kettle. This reproach is due to the government rather than to the soldier, because the despot, wishing to have a numerous army, pays the man poorly, whom he has torn from the plough to make a soldier of him. The Russian soldier, as already noticed, has only seven roubles and a half, yearly, and it is added, that he is almost boarded ; but his provisions consist of three tons of meal, weighing fifty pounds each, and of forty-four pounds of salt, which he receives from government.

THE Russian despots have given an additional proof of their economy, in the mode they have prescribed for the recruiting of the army. The recruits absolutely cost the crown nothing. When the time of furnishing them to the army is arrived, and it returns every year at the first of March, one man is taken for each four hundred ; but he is chosen only from the order of peasants, for in every quarter, and on all occasions, this unhappy class is obliged to bear every burden. This recruiting is made so much the more expeditiously, as every noble,

ble, by the *Review*, knows what is to be his contingent, and no excuse can exempt him from furnishing it. When the population of his estate is below four hundred, but above two hundred, he furnishes a man every second time. When the population is below two hundred, several nobles, equal in property, unite in furnishing a man at the expence of their respective peasants, whom they compel to assess themselves for this purpose, and this man is found without difficulty. First, because every lord, who is displeas'd with one of his peasants, makes him be enter'd among the recruits. Secondly, because the peasant, or most of the peasants, considering the lot of a soldier better than his own, comes to offer himself as a volunteer; then those, for whom he is to go, furnish him with six roubles for the expence of his march, if it be less than two hundred leagues, and with ten roubles, if it be above that number.

CERTAIN parts of Russia are exempted from these contributions of Recruits. The peasants of Russia proper and, of Finland, who settled in Ingria are not subjected to them. None are demanded from the Cossacs, because they have enough to do with covering the frontiers and marching as an Army-corps, when need requires them. Livonia and Estonia pay a quitrent equivalent to a contribution; and

and some distant countries, wild or yet un subdued, furnish recruits only when they please.

ACCORDING to the regulations of Peter I. and of Catharine II. (who has made many of them, and she has equalled this legislator in the wisdom of some and surpassed him in others), the recruits must be treated with the greatest mildness during the first year of their admission into the service, and spend the three first months in complete rest. But circumstances and the officers, impatient to fill up the numbers wanting, with men fit for service, always shorten this term of grace.

WE were assured that the number of recruits, lost by Russia during the two last wars with the Turks, was immense. She will not be exposed to this calamity in wars with the Turks alone. She will experience the same disadvantages in wars she may have with any power whatever, by the long and forced marches, which must be made by her recruits, who are subjected to one great evil, namely, the sudden and repeated transition from the most intense cold to the most scorching heats.

C H A P. XIV.

RUSSIAN Navy.—Cronstadt its principal station.—Description of this town, and the isle on which it is situated.—Its dock-yards.—Peter I. founder of the Russian Navy.—Restored by Catharine II.—Number of the ships which compose the maritime force of Russia.—Obstacles that mar the progress of this force.

THE station of the navy and admiralty was formerly on the south bank of the Neva, opposite to the fortress of St Petersburg, but every thing connected with the Imperial navy has been transported to Cronstadt, which is about twenty-nine wersts (nearly twenty one English miles) from St Petersburg, three wersts from the coasts of Ingria, and fourteen from the coasts of Carelia.

THE harbour of this town is in the isle of *Ritzkar*, called also, and more commonly, the isle of *Retow-Zari*. Peter I. chose it as the most secure on this sea, and as being the most proper, by its situation, to serve as a bulwark to the capital he had just founded. In fact, the only passage, by which ships of a certain size can approach St Petersburg, is a fruit canal to the south of this isle, whereof one

side

side is commanded by Cronstadt, and the other by Kronschlot and the citadel.

KRONSCHLOT stands on a small sandy isle, and is only an wooden building of a circular form, surrounded by wooden fortifications, that advance into the sea---A garrison of a hundred men is kept there. The citadel is another small wooden fort, built upon a neighbouring sand bank, and may contain thirty soldiers.

EVERY ship must pass between Cronstadt and these two small fortresses, where they are exposed to the fire of the opposite batteries. In the other passages, there is not more than eleven feet of water. When these works were constructed, they might pass for good fortifications, but at present they are weak scare-crows, that would be insulted by any powerful fleet, that would attempt the passage.

THE isle of *Retou-Zari* is a point of land, or rather sand, in the middle of which there is a range of granite rocks. By sea it is about twenty six wersts from St Petersburg, six from the coasts of Ingria, and twelve from the coasts of Carelia. It is about a league in length, and half a league in breadth. When Peter I. conquered it from the Swedes, it was quite waste, presenting nothing to the eye but some old pines blacked by the weather, and now there are on it about thirty thousand inhabitants, inclusive

inclusive of about twelve thousand sailors, and fifteen hundred men in the garrison. In this isle there are pasture, vegetables, and the fruits that thrive in northern climates; such as apples, pears, gooseberries and strawberries.

CRONSTADT is built on the eastern extremity of the isle. It is defended towards the sea by a strong mole, and towards the land by ramparts, which could not stand a serious attack, but fortunately there is none to be feared from this side. The town is very irregularly built, and like all in Russia, occupies more ground than necessary for its inhabitants. The houses are chiefly of wood, only those facing the harbour are of brick covered with plaster. Among the latter we distinguished the Marine Hospital, the Caserns, the Marine Academy, a School, wherein more than three hundred and sixty Cadets are instructed and supported at the expence of the crown. They are admitted at the age of five, and may stay till they are seventeen years old. They are taught drawing and mathematics, principally those branches applicable to ship building and navigation. Those farthest advanced, make a cruise every year on the Baltic; but these short voyages are not sufficient for making a seaman. Also without foreigners to fill the places of pilots and officers, the Russian navy would not have made such rapid progress, for Thesis and Theory only reason, and

examinations before admirals, which are their consequences, cannot make a failor, who with all his theory knows not what he is about, when practice is necessary.

CRONSTADT has one port for ships of war, and another for merchantmen. Hard by the port for merchant men, there is a canal, and several dry docks for repairing men of war. This work, begun by Peter the Great, and neglected under his successors, was not finished till Elizabeth's time. But Catharine II. who was sensible of its utility, was eager to enlarge and complete it. Before the reign of this princess, ships of a certain burden only could be repaired there, and now it serves for building as well as careening ships of the line.

At the extremity of these docks, there is a large reservoir, which contains enough of water to fill them all. This water is afterwards pumped out by a fire-engine, with a cylinder six feet in diameter. It were to be wished, that they had imitated the docks at Brest or Portsmouth, and instead of the fire-pump, they had substituted sluices. From the head of the canal to the extremity of the last, it is four thousand two hundred and twenty one feet. The bridges of these docks are faced with stone, and the bottom laid with granite; they are forty feet deep, and a hundred and five wide, and capable of receiving nine ships of war.

Nothing can give a higher idea of the ability, genius and perseverance of Peter I. than the state, in which he found, and that in which he left the Russian navy. At the beginning of his reign, he had not a single ship on the Baltic sea. We have seen him employed on the lake near *Taoussa* and there superintending the building of small vessels. It was his genius trying its powers, and what at first seemed only the amusement of a young man, afterwards produced the most glorious event of this prince, for which history and posterity already begin to acknowledge their obligations to him.

In the year 1695 he had laid siege to Azoff, but in spite of his own efforts, and the courage of his troops, this enterprize was not crowned with success, because it was impossible to take this town, without blocking up the harbour. Peter, who then had not a single ship, discovered his wants, and was obliged not to raise the siege but to suspend it; for he did not give up his plan, and his courage was rather excited than discouraged by this kind of reverse. To make it up, he with incredible dispatch constructed several ships. Some were begun at *Ce-ca*, then transported over land to the *Don*, but at *Voronetz*, and all other ports, the greatest part was built in less than a year.

He then renewed the siege of Azoff, and to the extreme surprize of the Turks, laid before this city,

two ships of war, twenty three galleys, two galiots and four fire ships. With this small squadron, which had come down the Don as far as the Black Sea, he blocked up the port, dispersed the Turkish galleys and took the city. He signalized this astonishing event by entering Moscow in triumph, and by causing a medal be struck with an inscription in the Russian Language to this effect; *Victorious by thunder and the waves*. This success was only the prelude to greater exploits. As the security of his new conquests on the Black Sea required a powerful navy, he brought skilful ship-builders from every quarter. It was after he had fixed and set them to work at Voronetz, Azoff and Taganrok, that he set out on his travels, without his own dominions. On his return in the year 1699 he reaped the advantages of the attention he had paid. He took a general review of his naval force on the Black Sea, and with inexpressible pleasure counted ten frigates, the largest of which carried fifty guns, and the smallest twenty six; but in three years afterwards this same fleet was tripled, and had ships of sixty guns. This rapid increase, which looks like something magical, would appear incredible, if it were not attested at great length by every historian. To these great exertions, those of the Romans on a similar occasion after the first Punic war; can scarcely be compared.

PETER did not stop there. He no sooner saw himself in possession of Cronstadt, than he began to do things as astonishing on the Baltic, as those which he had executed on the Black Sea, and the equipment of the fleet on that sea, is an event so remarkable, that it forms a kind of æra in the Chronology of the Russian Nation. But at Peter's death every thing changed appearance. His genius, his activity were not transferred to his successors. The navy was neglected, and was in so bad a state at the time of Catharine the Second's accession to the throne, that it may be said of this princess, that she created it a new. Like Peter, she invited to Russia several English ship builders, and in particular Admiral Knowles, who acquired fame by his knowledge of naval architecture. She likewise invited from Britain sailors, who taught the Russian sailors, yet raw and awkward, the art of manoeuvring. Under her auspices, Europe, with astonishment has seen the Russian Flag displayed in Archipelago, and the Turkish Fleet destroyed at *Tchefme*, by a squadron come from the north.

If a fleet consisted of hulls and rigging alone, Russia might have her's more formidable than any other nation, for she has within herself whatever is necessary for the building and equipment of ships. The principal places for building are Cronstadt and Archangel. Those of Cronstadt are built of oak,

but those of Archangel of larch, a kind of fir that is not at all durable, especially in an engagement. The oak they use at Cronstadt is scarcely of better quality. It comes from the provinces of Kasan and Astracan, but it is tender and porous, and does not receive the same preparation, that is given in the different parts of Europe, to ship timber, which is allowed to lie several years in salt water, in order to make it harder and fitter for building. In Russia it is no sooner arrived in the dock yards than it is wrought up. The consequence is, a Russian ship must be repaired in six years, and in fifteen is totally unfit for service.

UKRAINE and the province of Moscow furnish hemp, and masts are found in the extensive forests between Novogorod and the Gulf of Finland, or in the provinces dismembered from Poland. Wi-burg furnishes pitch and tar. There are manufactures of Sail-cloth and ropes in different provinces. In short the magazines of St Peteriburg and Archangel are always abundantly stored with these various articles.

At the end of the war 1788, the Russian Navy in the ports on the Baltic consisted of, forty eight ships of the line, eighteen frigates, twelve prames and a hundred and twenty galleys. This fleet is commanded first by the Grand-Admiral of the fleet, who is the Grand Duke of Russia him-

self. Secondly, by the Commander-in-chief of the Galleys and an Admiral of the fleet. Thirdly by six Vice-Admirals and eight Rear-Admirals, who do the duty of Commodores. The Prince of Nassau-Siegen was the only Vice-Admiral, and Mr Spiritow the only Rear-Admiral, that were employed during our stay in Russia. There are three orders of Captains. Those of the first have the rank of Brigadiers, those of the second of Colonels, and those of the third order, have the rank of Lieutenant Colonels. They are all decorated with the military badge of St George, but they are knights only of the fourth class. A navy officer, that passes into the land service, is advanced two steps. In the organization of this body, Peter has shown the value he affixed to it, and the preference he gave it over the army. The sailors reap the advantages of this preference. They have more provisions than the soldiers, and almost double pay.

In times of urgent danger Russia could make a considerable addition to her navy, but she would bring on board only an awkward multitude, for in spite of all the advances this empire has made in naval affairs; although she has in a very short time become more powerful on sea, than any northern state; it may well be said, that her navy is many degrees behind those belonging to the different states of Europe; on a level with which she presumes to place it. The

Russian

Russian navy would still be in a more incomplete state, but for the British and Dutch, to whom it is indebted for a part of what it is, with regard to building; manoeuvring and discipling the fleet. But several obstacles are in the way of the farther progress, of which it is susceptible. Of these the chief are; a want of ports in the ocean, the limited extent of coasts belonging to Russia, and what she has, being obstructed with ice the greatest part of the year, and the small number of experienced seamen she could furnish, if she wanted to *man* her fleet with her own subjects only. Russia has no port on the ocean, but Archangel, and even it can be useful only to commerce, because of its great distance from the European seas, and the necessity there is for doubling the north cape, situated in the seventy second degree, and only in the middle of summer, open for a communication with the rest of the globe.

It is a fact ascertained, that a power, which possesses only a small extent of coast, cannot have a great force at sea, without very great difficulty. Now Russia has no coast but that from Riga and Wiburg to the head of the Gulf of Finland, which is only a span for an empire so extensive, and of so much the less value, because the Gulf being confined between two lands, without tides, and inaccessible for at least five months of the year, is not much superior to a lake, when compared with the ocean.

Here

Here we do not reckon what Russia has acquired on the black sea, nor the coasts of the white and frozen sea, which are almost a desert, nor the inhabitable countries of Kamtschatka.

In short Russia wants experienced sailors, and will not have them soon, because the constitution of her Government stands in the way. The slave, who is the only man in Russia, fit for the fatigues of the sea, is chained to the soil, on which he has been born, and the sea is the element only of freemen. During the first war that the Russians had with the Turks, chance seemed to serve them in the distance between Cronstadt and the Archipelago by the experience, which the officers and sailors acquired in this passage. The Government, it is true, keeps eighteen thousand sailors in pay, but the most part of them, have never served. A small number in time of peace make some cruises in the Baltic, or at farthest within view of the British coast. The rest are in summer employed in navigating some ships from Cronstadt to St Petersburg, which is not an apprenticeship sufficient to breed a number of sailors, who in time of war cannot be procured from merchant ships; for Russia has almost none, and the principal cause of this deficiency is, the severe prohibitions against leaving the country without a passport in the admiralty form. A merchant, who clears a vessel, is at first obliged to obtain leave from

the admiralty to take on board a certain number of Russian subjects, for returning whom he is obliged to find caution for a hundred and forty roubles for each sailor. Hence it follows, that without infringing the fundamental laws of the empire, and the brazen code of slavery, it is not possible to procure a sufficient number of seamen, to arm a fleet on an urgent occasion. In short, a state that has no distant colonies, no considerable fisheries, no extensive coasts, that can accustom its inhabitants to the dangers of the sea, cannot procure a navy capable of being formidable to the maritime powers of Europe.

The navy of Russia, however, with all its defects, is very sufficient for the defence of her coasts, for conveying her merchant men, for commanding respect on the Baltic, and for overawing the Turks on the Archipelago, who have not a better, or rather have an inferior navy to that of Russia, because the navies of these two powers are in an inverse ratio to one another. The Russian is growing better and better, while the Turkish navy is growing worse and worse every day. It is an effect, and an advantage of the good policy of the cabinet of St Peterburg, that it keeps up a good understanding with the greatest maritime powers, whom Russia supplies with naval stores, and who are therefore interested in keeping fair with her and in cultivating

tivating her friendship; but she must not expect to rival them for a long time to come.

CHAP. XV.

COMMERCE, which the European nations carry on with Russia.—What are the best frequented ports of that empire.—Archangel.—Riga.—Astracan.—Gurjef.—Derbent.—Baku.—Enzelli.—Navigation and Commerce of the Black Sea—of the Sea of Azoff.—Inland Navigation of Russia.—A Plan of the Russians for carrying their commerce into India.

THE commerce of Russia in Europe, that is, in the northern parts of this division of the globe, has been for a long time in the hands of the merchants of the Hanse Towns. But the British, who visit every quarter, having under the reign of Iwan IV. cast anchor for the first time in the harbour of Archangel, were invited by this prince to erect factories in his states. Queen Mary upon the report of the navigators, who had been received in Russia, settled a company in the year 1555, for the purpose of trading there. Iwan granted it considerable privileges, which the British, according to their system, found means of rendering exclusive.

THIS opening soon became to them a source of advantageous speculations; because the trade rising out of it, was immense and lucrative beyond all expectation. It consisted chiefly in exporting from Russia to the different countries of Europe, furs, hides, masts, flax, hemp, tallow, whale-oil, tar, pitch and leather, and in importing from these countries into Russia, woollen cloths, stuffs, modes, cotton, combed wool, &c. This branch of trade in the hands of the British, soon extended into the vast provinces, which Ivan IV. as honors for his conquest as for his cruelties, subjected to his empire. But this prince was not immortal, and his death changed the face of every thing. Iordor, his successor, far from protecting the British, suppressed or reduced their privileges almost to nothing. This prince was jealous and hostile to every thing not Russian. In the mean time, as the avarice of the merchant is as cringing, and as supple of importunity as that of the courier, the Polish, by means of a million succeeded in recovering a part of their privileges; but Boris Godunow, who afterward, came to the throne, not only would not hear of granting privileges, but even established a free trade in his states; so that the Hanse towns recovered their ancient privileges, and rivalled the British with all their advantages or local situation. The Dutch also came, for wherever the British flag lies, you soon see the

Batavian

Batavian, which in the latitudes, where there are no guns to face, soon becomes the ruling flag; because the Dutch navigator equals the British in avarice, but is inferior to him in courage, and still more in resources.

THE troubles, which desolated Russia at the time of the appearance of the false Demetrius, did much hurt to the trade of these different nations, especially to that of the British, which nevertheless recovered itself under Michael Foederowitsch. It was annihilated under his son Alexis, who banished the British merchants, being provoked, they say, at shedding the blood of King Charles the First, with whom Alexis had bands of friendship, and treaties of alliance. This allegation is not strictly true, for the expulsion of the British from Turkey, took place an year before Charles' death. The real cause of it was the offers made by the Dutch to pay a duty of fifteen per cent. on their goods, if the Czar would put them in room of the British. This took place, but did not prevent the Czar from receiving an agent from Cromwell, some time after at Archangel, and allowing the British to trade in that port on the old footing; yet neither they, nor any other nation, could obtain of Alexis, liberty to trade in any other port of his empire.

CHARLES the Second tried to procure for the British nation, the re-establishment of a commerce
entirely

entirely free, but the Earl of Carlisle, commissioned to Russia for this very purpose, alienated rather than conciliated the affection of the Czar, in favour of the British; because to the haughtiness of the courtier, he joined complete ignorance of negotiations; so he obtained nothing from the Czar, but what he could not be refused, namely, permission to trade in all parts of Russia, by paying, like other nations, the custom house duties.

ARCHANGEL, which had been under the Great Dukes and Czars, the only port belonging to Russia, in which there was any commerce, afterwards divided this advantage with St Petersburg, and the ports on the Baltic. When Peter I. came to the Empire, he even took from Archangel its privileges and ancient immunities, as being hurtful to the freedom of commerce. Elizabeth, more easy and less acquainted with her true interests, again established them all. At present this city carries on a considerable trade. It pours into the provinces of Archangel, of Lower Novogorod and Kasan, the commodities of Europe, and exports grain, hemp, flax, coarse stuffs, masts, and tallow, which come down the Dwina. It is likewise the mart for the productions of a part of Siberia, such as peltry and iron.

AT present, commerce is carried on with the greatest spirit in the ports of Riga, Revel, Narva, and Wiburg. From the first a great quantity of grain.

grain, brought down the Dwina from the provinces of Pleskow, of Smolensko and Novogorod, is exported by the British, Swedes and Dutch, and also a small number of masts. The commodities exported from other ports are the same with those brought from St Petersburg, namely, hemp, flax, leather, wax, tallow, tar, hair, ropes, rhubarb, coarse cloths, all sorts of skins and peltry, caviare, pot-ashes, grain, &c.

ARCHANGEL, which takes its name from a convent situated near the place, where the city was built, stands on the banks of the Dwina ninety-wersts from the white sea. It is five fourth's of a league long, half a league broad, and is built entirely of wood, except the *Gostinoi-Dwor*, or house of commerce, which is built of bricks. The citadel, where the governor resides, is only an wooden inclosure with fortifications of as combustible materials. In this city there are more than two thousand traders, and what is uncommon in a commercial place, living there is very cheap.

IN the 16th century the Russians carried on a considerable trade on the Caspian sea. For a long time indeed it suffered, because the caravans were often plundered by the Cossacs, on their way to Afracan. But Alexis Michaelowitsch, having subdued these vagabond hordes, the roads became safe, and the commerce of Persia revived and centered in

Afracan.

Astracan. Merchants from Bulgaria, Crimea, Armenia, Persia, even India came thither to traffic; and as the Russian ships were then coarsely built, and subject to shipwreck, the prince brought ship-builders from Amsterdam, in order to have ships more fit for resisting the tempests of this stormy sea.

THE rebellion of the Cossacs on the Don, and its consequent devastations, annihilated this trade, which, after the dispersion of the rebels, was never re-established; notwithstanding the conquests of Peter the first, the factories he erected, the company, to which he granted an exclusive privilege, and the treaties of the Empress Anne with the king of Persia to favour this company. It recovered new vigour only in the year 1762, the period, when the Empress Catharine II. suppressed the exclusive privilege of the company, and allowed all her subjects to trade with Persia. Two Russian consuls were settled at Baku and Enzelli. After all, this princess has not yet succeeded in putting a stop to the contraband trade, carried on in Shamakia and other inland towns in Persia, by the Armenian merchants, who knowing the country and the language, have a considerable advantage over the Russians.

ASTRACAN, the different quarters of which are scattered on the hills within its circumference, is built on an island, formed by the Wolga at its discharge into the Caspian sea. This city, inhabited
by

by Russians, Armenians, Persians, Tartars and Jews, may be considered one of the most considerable marts of the globe; because by means of the Wolga. commodities are easily carried thither from the Baltic ports. It is remarkable that in this city, though situated in latitude 47 the cold is extremely severe during winter, and that for two months the Wolga is frozen to such a degree, that the heaviest loaded sledges can be driven over it. On one of these hills, which Astracan encompasses, stands the Imperial Garden-Counting-House, whose principal business is, to encourage the culture of the vine and to furnish fruits to the table of the Empress or her courtiers, who make more demands than her Majesty, and reckon as nothing the labour, which a melon of Astracan costs the poor gardeners, before it arrive at maturity fit for their table.

UPON the banks of the Wolga there are great forests belonging to the province of Kafan, which furnish masts and all sorts of timber, necessary for the construction of ships destined for the navigation of the Caspian sea, which is known to be one of the most stormy of the globe.

This sea, on which the ancients and the moderns have formed so many theories, is really a phenomenon. Its length from Gurjev to M. Metizar is about three hundred and eighty six wersts, and its breadth is at no part greater than a hundred and se-

twenty five. This sea, whose waters are of an ochre-colour, has neither flow nor ebb, and is full of shallows, that prevent the navigation of ships, which draw more than nine or ten feet water.

THE fisheries there, which are very valuable, occupy and train many seamen. The Cossacs of Ural possess these fisheries on their coasts for the space of thirty two wersts, on both banks of the river Ural; and the inhabitants of Astracan possess all the rest belonging to Russia. There are caught the sturgeon and beluga, whose eggs furnish abundance of what the Russians call *Caviare*; a kind of dish, of which they are very fond, and we shall have occasion to speak. The dry and salt fish also form a very important article in the diet of the Russians. The Caspian sea in particular abounds with sea-dogs, whose flesh the Cossacs are very fond of, and from which they extract oil in considerable quantities.

THE coasts are divided among the Russians, Persians, and Tartars. Gurjet and Kissliar are Russian ports. Gurjet is at the mouth of the Jaik. It is a fortress, and the least of those raised along the Jaik, but its works are the most regular and the best constructed. It has only a single gate, which leads towards the river. The houses are a hundred and forty in number, all of wood, except the governor's and powder magazine. The population consists of the garrison, composed of two companies of fusiliers,

leers, a squadron of Cossacs, and some Astracan merchants, who carry on a little trade with the Kirghis-Tartars, who border on that country.

KISLIAR is on the east coast, and covers the frontiers towards Persia. Formerly ships could enter into the arms of the *Terek*, which runs south; but at present it is shut up by sands, and goods are unloaded more than twenty five wersts from the fortrefs, that is on *Terek*, and about seventy wersts from its mouth. It is inhabited by the Cossics, and some Tartars, whose houses are made of clay or bricks not burnt. From Astracan this city receives European goods, besides a quantity of grain for the use of the colonies, which the Russians have on the banks of the *Terek*, and the inhabitants of *Caucasus*, who are not far distant. The merchants in *Kisliar* carry on commerce with the ports of Persia, and besides have a contraband trade with *Shamakia*, *Derbent*, and even *Tefflis* in *Georgia*; but this trade is liable to be annoyed, and even pillaged by the numerous hordes of robbers, that wander in these countries.

AMONG the principal ports of the Caspian sea belonging to Persia, the first is *Derbent* in *Shirvan*, which, they maintain, was built by *Alexander the Great*, and called *Iskander*. This city is situated at the foot of a mountain, which is a continuation of the *Ussmenian* mountains. It is important, on ac-

count of the fortrefs, which defends it, and which nature and art have contributed to render impregnable, or at leaft fufceptible of the longeft defence. The bulk of the inhabitants of this city are Armenians, and they alone poffefs its trade, which confifts of falt, filks, both raw and wrought, that are brought from Shamakia, which is only about forty-four werfts from Baku, the moft commodious port on all this fea. Baku is fituated on the north at the foot of Bifchbarmak, a mountain famous for its fprings of Naphta, a kind of bitumenous oil, very inflammable, of which they carry on a great trade in that country. The Gaur, known under the name of Guebers, and worfhippers of fire, come into this canton to pay worfhip to God, whom they adore under the emblem of fire: From this city, (of which alfo the Armenians have the trade), filk, falt, but efpecially plenty of naphta are exported. An extenfive trade with Perfia is alfo carried on at Enzelli, or Sinfili, a city built of bulrufhes, with a grand gulph on the fouth-weft coaft. This city is only ten werfts from Rafcht, the capital of Ghilan, which ftands in the centre of this province. The Ruffians have preferved their right of having a conful at Rafcht, with thirty foldiers, and a church of their own. They carry thither European goods, which they fell at great advantage, and bring from

it silks and stuffs manufactured at Ghilan, which are esteemed the best in Persia.

THE Bucharrians, a people very much given to trade, inhabiting the south-west part of Independent Tartary, go in numerous caravans into Russia. There are in that empire, several colonies of those Tartars, that maintain a correspondence with the merchants in their own country. The principal markets they frequent are Tomsk, Kiatka, and Orenburg, of which the last is the most considerable, and has its chief trade with Kaskar, Tashhent, and Semerka. These caravans carry into Russia, gold and silver, in Persian money and Indian rupees. They bring also gold dust, which is found in the rivers of Bucharria, jewels, lapis-lazuli, spun and unspun cotton, nitre, sal amoniac, rhubarb, lamb-skins; and drive thither numerous flocks of sheep and horses. The articles they export from Russia, are cloth, Russian leather, beads, jewels, iron ware, indigo, cochenil, &c. &c.

THE Russians also trade with China, and this branch of their commerce is the most important of all they carry on with Asia. The principal mart at present is *Kiatka*, a place situated on the frontiers of the two empires. It is always provided abundantly with every kind of goods that can be got, which the Chinese buy up very keenly. The total value of this trade, in exports and imports, is for
Russia

Russia an object of about four millions of roubles ; that is upwards of seven hundred thousand pounds sterling.

PETER the Great was the first sovereign of Russia, who attempted to open the navigation of the sea of Azoff, and of the Black Sea, and export the produce of his own states by this channel. This favourite plan seemed to be on the point of being realised by the conquest of Azoff, and the erection of the fortrefs of Taganrok, when all these grand designs were annihilated by the unfortunate campaign in the year 1711, that ended in the peace of Pruth ; a peace bought by the cession of Azoff, of Taganrok and by abandoning the commerce of the Black Sea. From that time the Russians have been constantly rejected by the Turks with that haughtiness, which is the consequence of an invidious jealousy of dividing with them the navigation of their seas ; and this prohibition has been between the Turks and Catharine II. the source of a series of wars, in which both sides, rather exhausted than reconciled, laid down their arms, only to take them up again with more fury. At last Catharine has proved victorious, and her victories have procured to the Russians the free navigation of all the seas of Turkey ; the right of passing through the Dardanelles, with all the franchises relating to commerce, granted by the Turks to the nations they favour most ; the possession

sion of Azoff, of Taganzok, of the fortresses of Kinburn, Kertsh, and Yenicalc, and a very extensive territory between the Bog and the Dnieper. With the command of the mouth of the Boristhenes, Russia has built the city Cherfon in the Crimea, with the intention of making it a free port, to prepare for the two empires the means of a more extensive trade; but these plans had to combat every obstacle at first, and had not acquired any consistency, when war again broke out in the year 1787. Notwithstanding the fresh successes of the Russians, it is probable that this extremity of Europe will be capable of extensive commerce, only in proportion as the neighbouring regions shall become civilized. A communication better established between the Black sea and the eastern part of Europe, and between that same sea and the center of Asia, by its vicinity to the Caspian sea, might give to the exchanges of Europe greater ease and resources; but it is only in a long succession of years that one can discover this revolution, in which Russia will not engage, or will not be able to engage, till she shall have acquired in Europe a greater degree of influence, at which she will doubtless arrive, if the successors of Catharine II. resemble her; for in an arbitrary government, the fate of the empire depends wholly on the will of the prince. One or many geniuses succeeding one another, make it flourish; but

if one or more weak men come after these, all is lost, all is destroyed; like a field which the arm of labour has cultivated, and that of idleness suffers to be again over-run with brambles. According to the activity of Catharine, and the hopes that the Grand Duke furnishes, many speculations have been made on the extent and the value of the commerce, which Russia will be able to carry on in the Black sea, and upon the revolution, which will be the consequence of this removal of a part of the Baltic commerce to the ports of the Mediterranean. It is looked on as a thing certain, that the southern provinces of Russia, will by these means procure an outlet for exporting their superfluous productions; that the Russian ships will open to themselves, a very advantageous trade with the Crimea, and the Austrian provinces through Kilia Nôva, with the Turks at Constantinople, and with the Greeks of the Levant; That the iron of Siberia, the grain, hemp and flax of Ukraine will be brought into the ports of the Black sea, and through the Dardanelles into the ports of the Mediterranean; and that thus France and Spain will provide themselves with naval stores, much more easily and at a cheaper rate than from the Baltic sea, and the northern ocean. These plans, which have appeared only chimerical dreams to those, who do not reflect on the wonders, which a perseverance so indefatigable as that

of the Russians is capable of producing; these plans are already realised in a great degree, and it is probable that circumstances and Russian patience, which nothing discourages, will one day accomplish them all.

EQUALLY indefatigable and greedy of gain, the Russians carry to Constantinople and Gallipoli, which are the principal ports on the sea of the Marmora, peltry, leather, sail-cloth, cordage, anchors, tar, pitch, steel, iron, salt-fish, caviare, butter, sea-horse-teeth, wax, tea, musk, castor oil, colours, paper, coarse stuff and corn. There they buy raw and wrought silk, cotton stuffs, muslins, turkey stuffs, carpets, Angora goats hair, Greek wines, oil, and all sorts of fruits, tobacco, pipes, spiceries, saffron, opium, and other drugs, pearls, precious stones, gold, silver, &c.

It is since the cessions, that the Turks have been obliged to make to Russia, that this trade, and that carried on upon the sea of Azoff, has really been able to take the name of commerce. The objects granted are considerable, and of the greatest importance to Russia. First she obtained the country round the sea of Azoff. Secondly, all the Crimea; thirdly, the fortrefs of Kimburn, and fourthly, the country between the Dnieper and the Bog. We are going to give an idea of the importance of these different cessions.

THE district situated along the sea of Azoff, comprehends, besides a great extent of country to the east and west, the fortresses of Azoff, of Taganrok and of Peteroffk. The first is no more of the same importance that it was under Peter I. The branch of the Don, on which it is built, is at present so gorged with sand, that the smallest ships have much difficulty in entering it. The goods which were formerly carried to Azoff, are now commonly landed at Taganrok and at Peteroffk. Merchant vessels are built at St Demetri or Rostof, whence they come down the Don by another branch of this river. In the harbour of Taganrok there is only seven feet of water, so that vessels designed for this harbour must draw only five or six. Catharine, whose eye extends every where, has made this city much more convenient by several magazines and other buildings, which she caused be erected during the war before last. Besides the sailors, who frequent these passages, put a particular value on the salubrity of the air, they breathe at Taganrok.

PETEROFFSK, built during the second war, which Russia has had with the Turks, stands at the mouth of the Dnoba, and commands the frontiers of Turkey. The situation of its harbour is most advantageous, because it has a direct communication with the ports of the Crimea, and it is deeper than that of Taganrok. Before the Russians became masters

of the Crimea, these fortresses had full command of the navigation of the sea of Azoff, and the country first ceded by the Turks was guarded by a chain of little forts, which still extends from Peteroffsk to the Dnieper.

THE forts of Kertsch and Yenicale on the east coast of the Crimea, and near the north entry of the canal of Caffa, were of the greatest importance before the last war, because they commanded the passage of the north sea to the sea of Azoff.

KINBURN situated at the mouth of the Dnieper, and opposite to Oczakow, was the only harbour, that the Russians possessed on the black sea. Before they had seized on Oczakow, it bordered with the frontiers of the territory of the Turks and made them respect those of Russia. It might yet hamper their navigation on the Dnieper. This place was destined to be the principal mart for the commodities sent from the provinces, through which this river runs; but the port furnishing no safe anchorage, because of the shifting sands, the new city of Cherson is become the real market of the trade carried on in that latitude.

THE possession of the territory, between the Bog and the Dnieper, likewise opens a safe communication between the Black sea and the beautiful provinces, through which the Dnieper runs. This important territory, so essential to the existence of this

new trade, was principally inhabited by hordes of wandering Tartars, and by Saporovian Cossacs, who dwelt in the Dnieper, and rendered its navigation very dangerous by their piracies.

THE Russian provinces most interested in this trade, because they lie on the Dnieper and the Don, are those of Smolensko, Mohilof, Ukraine, New Russia, Bielogorod, Woronetz, Slobodskai, and Azoff. This vast country abounds with all sorts of grain, hemp, flax, leather, masts, logs, honey, wax, and tobacco. The Empress has already caused several cities be built in the countries which have been ceded to her by the Turks, of which the principal are Cherfon, Catharinenflaf and Marianopoli.

CHERSON stands on the Dnieper, about twelve wersts below the mouth of the Ingul, and is built chiefly of hewn stone. It is designed to be the principal market of these provinces, but if this commerce become extensive, this market will be better placed in some other place, below the bar of the Dnieper, that is about fifteen wersts to the south of Cherfon. There is in this city a Dockyard for the construction of large ships, and several men of war and frigates, as well as merchant ships, have been already launched.

CATHARINENSLAF, or the Glory of Catharine, is built not far from the place where the little river of Liltzin runs into the Samara, and is to be the capital

capital of the government of Azoff. Here is a colony of Greeks and Armenians come from the Crimea. Here are also other settlers come from different nations, who have done material service to Russia, in the different wars they have had with the Turks.

MARIANOPOLI was built on the coast of the sea of Azoff, between the rivers Mius and Calmius. These three cities, as well as the numerous villages, that have been erected in a country, which was inhabited only by vagabond hordes, are at this day full of Russians, Armenians, Greeks and Tartars, who have forsaken their wandering life.

THE eye of a traveller, who in Germany and Hungary has admired the majestic course of the Rhine and the Danube, is very differently surpris'd, when he arrives and runs over the banks of the Don and Dnieper, which form the communication between the provinces, which we have just mentioned, and the seas of Turkey.

THE Don has its source in the little lake of St John, near to Tula, in the government of Moscow, and after having traversed a part of the provinces of Woronetz, Ukraine, Slobodskai, and all the province of Azoff, it divides into three branches, near Tcherkask, which lose themselves in the sea of Azoff. This river has so many windings, and is so full of shallows, that it can scarcely be navigated but

in spring, and when the snows melt. Its mouth is also so gorged with sands, that, except during this season, flat bottomed boats only can pass into the sea of Azoff. The countries, through which the Don runs, are covered with vast forests, of which the wood is floated as far as St Demetri and Rostof, where frigates are constructed for the sea of Azoff.

THE navigation of the Don will become very advantageous, if success attend the attempts to transport the iron of Siberia, and the commodities of China and Persia, by this river, into the Black sea. It was by this channel that they, as well as the productions of India, formerly arrived.

SOMETIMES the iron of Siberia, and the commodities of China, are sent by means of different canals, as far as the Wolga. The commodities of Persia are also transported as far as the Don across the Caspian sea, and from the Wolga to the Don there is a passage of no more than eighteen wersts.

SINCE the Russians acquired a part of Lithuania, and the country between the Don and the Dnieper; and since the Saporovian Cossacs have been wholly dispersed or kept under; the navigation of the Dnieper has become less dangerous. The river has been freed from various obstructions, and now it runs freely from its source to its mouth in the provinces of the Russian empire.

ALTHOUGH

ALTHOUGH the course of this river be more than five hundred and thirty wersts, its navigation is interrupted only once by a series of cataracts, which begin below the place, where this river receives the Samara, and extend the length of thirty wersts. They are however not so dangerous as represented, and may in the spring be passed by loaded barks, even without much danger. At other seasons, goods are unloaded at Kameusk, opposite the mouth of the Samara. Thence they are carried over land to Kitchask, which is only about thirty wersts off. There they are embarked anew to be carried down to Cherson without interruption. If this trade receive much addition, this river by laying out some millions of roubles, might be made navigable in all seasons of the year, in spite of these cataracts.

THE establishment of a trade between the ports of the Black sea and those of the Mediterranean, has been encouraged by the Empress. She has diminished the duties on exports and imports, and helped to form a company for carrying on the commerce of the Black sea.

AFTER the peace in 1783, four ships for the first time sailed for St Peteriburg, with a cargo consisting of iron, flax, hemp, sail cloth, skive, &c. This squadron was fitted out at the expence of the Empress, who gave up all the profits to the new company. But the jealousy of the Turks, ruined this enterprize.

enterprize. Under different pretences, they prevented the ships from passing the Dardanelles. The cargoes were sold in the Levant, and Mediterranean, and the vessels returned, without having gained their principal object. Fresh troubles, which rose respecting the Crimea prevented the formation of new adventures of this kind till the year 1779, but since the peace, which was concluded at that period between the Russians and Turks, several Greek vessels under the Russian flag, coming from Azoff, and the Black sea, have with freedom, passed the Dardanelles. This passage is only disputed with the Russians, when the Turk forgetting his last defeat, and his forces not engaged with those of Europe, wishes once more to try the fate of arms; and he never wishes to do this, till he be stirred up by the Imans, Opium, or some foreign power, that wants to produce a diversion, in order to draw advantage from it.

This is the way by which the Russians attempted to free this famous passage, which to them now is no more an obstacle. A ship of their nation, belonging to government, and loaded with salt beef, in the year 1780, sailed from Cherson for the port of Toulon. She was allowed to pass as far as the Dardanelles, and was soon followed by other five, loaded with iron, which got fortunately into the ports of the Archipelago. In the month of Novem-

ber 1781, a like number of ships failed from Cherſon for the ports of France, with cargoes of hemp and tobacco, and their voyages had the ſame ſucceſs. In ſhort, in the year 1784, ſome other veſſels made the ſame voyage, but the laſt war interrupted this riſing commerce, which ſome writers have repreſented as capable of cauſing a ſpeedy revolution, in the general commerce of Europe, and yet it is nothing, or almoſt nothing.

WE ſhall add to the details juſt now given, and for the honour of the Sovereigns of Ruſſia, that there is no ſtate on earth, where inland navigation is ſo extenſive as that of the Ruſſian Empire. In ſhort, goods may be transported by water to the diſtance of near three thouſand werſts, that is to ſay, from the frontiers of China to St Peterſburg without any interruption, but that of a ſpace of about forty werſts. They may alſo be transported, without being diſembarked even a ſingle time, from Aſtracan to St Peterſburg, an extent of nine hundred and fifty werſts.

THE communication by water from St Peterſburg to Aſtracan, or what is the ſame thing, from the Baltic to the Caſpian ſea, is formed by the famous canal from Wiſhnei-Wolſhok, which is worthy of the reign of Catharine II, and in reſpect of the labours it has cauſed, exceeds the immortal works of the Romans, and equals their ſolidity.

RUSSIA, which is the country for plans, whereof the execution of several has astonished Europe, formed one of the most gigantic in the year 1783. It is true, it was upon an extraordinary occasion. Driven from their ordinary road by the war, which Hyder Ally and the British were making on one another, some merchants to the north of Bengal, after having traversed immense countries, had come with their goods to the frontiers of Siberia, where they had been received with transport, and they had promised to return. The board of trade at St Petersburg, being informed of this novelty, had immediately projected a branch of commerce with the Indians, and to forward it, they had fitted out a fleet at Astracan, to seize upon Astrabad, which is the most southerly port of the Caspian sea, and the spot whither the Indians could most conveniently come to trade. But the Kadschares, an invincible people, who abhor slavery, and can defend themselves against it, dispersed the fleet, and the enterprise had the most miserable success. In the mean time, the court of Russia was not discouraged by that, and till a more favourable opportunity delayed a second attempt, on which she entered with so much the more propriety, as the inland navigation established between St Petersburg and Astracan, must extend the views of Russia to the trade of India; because by establishing this communication,

she

ſhe removed the obſtacle the moſt difficult to be ſurmounted, by the commerce that may be carried on in this quarter. But if ever Ruſſia ſucceed in this attempt, the India trade will be annihilated in England, which flouriſhes only by means of it, and in France, which has the moſt powerful motives for re-eſtabliſhing the commerce there, which ſhe had from the time of the famous Duplex. Theſe two powers, which have long been rivals and will at laſt be friends, will doubtleſs oppoſe the plans of Ruſſia, that not many years ago was in the balance of Europe only a ſuperfluous weight, of little account, but either is or pretends to be, at this moment, a preponderating weight, which will ſoon make thoſe of greater influence than herſelf vaniſh in this chimerical balance, which fortune lifts or depreſſes at her pleaſure.

C H A P. XVI.

MINES in Ruſſia.—Theſe of Woetſk.—Of Bereſofoka.—Of Koliwan.—Of Nertschinſk.—The ſalt pits of Stro-ganoff.—Of the Ileck and Siberia.

ONE of the moſt extenſive branches of commerce in Ruſſia, is that, which ariſes from the mines; they form an important article in the revenues of the

Emprefs. As a prerogative of the crown, ſhe poſſeſſes all thoſe mines, which yield gold and ſilver, that have been, or may be diſcovered on all the lands of her dominions. As for the braſs and iron mines, ſhe works ſome on her own account, and theſe are the moſt valuable. Others are given up to the proprietors of the eſtates, in which they are ſituated, or to the perſon who has diſcovered them, on condition of a certain conſideration being paid to the crown, and an indemnity annually, or at once, being paid to the proprietors of the eſtates.

THE mines of Woetſk, ſituated near Olonetz, between the lake of Onega and the White ſea, are the firſt which the Ruſſians had. Gold has been dug in them, but at ſo great expence, that they have been given up ſeveral times. Catharine II. ordered the works to be reſumed in 1772, on plans leſs expenſive. But the undertaking is far from being lucrative, for the mines do not furniſh annually more than ninety five hundred weight of copper, and nine pounds of gold duſt.

THE mines diſcovered in the neighbourhood of Catharineburg, between the Piſchma and the Bereſofoka, and poſterior to thoſe juſt mentioned, although pompouſly named *Gold-Mines* by the Ruſſians, are only copper-mines; becauſe the gold wrought in them is to copper, as one to thirty, and the annual produce of this precious metal never exceeds

exceeds two hundred and sixty six, and is often below two hundred and thirty three pounds; which would not pay the expence of working, if manual labour were not at a low rate in these countries, and if in addition to all that, for the misfortune of humanity, the despot did not employ the unjust resource of averages, which are so fatal to the unfortunate peasant, who would perish under the knout, if he dared to conceal the smallest quantity of the mineral, which is watered with his sweat.

THE mines of Russia, the most famous and which make the best return for the labours of the unfortunate people employed in them, are those of Koliwan, between the Oby and the Irtysh, on the frontiers of Siberia, and towards the country, which the Chinese Kalmucs inhabit. These mines were discovered in the year 1725, by Jakins Nikitisch Demidoff, a merchant in Moscow, as famous for his singularities as his riches. Some Peasants in the neighbourhood of the Oby had lost some cattle, and were traversing the country in search of them, when some considerable bits of minerals were noticed among their feet. They brought samples of them to Demidoff, who had founders in their country, and told him the place whence they had taken them. Being better informed than these countrymen, Demidoff knew the value of the articles they had found, and flew to Moscow to solicit letters patent, to permit

mit him to work the rich treasure, contained in the mountains of Koliwan. What is singular, and proves the ignorance of the Russians is, that the college of mines, who saw these samples, granted a patent only for copper mines, whilst Demidoff extracted two fifths of silver from his minerals. In silence and secrecy he continued this gainful work for near twenty years. Then rich enough, or afraid of being betrayed, and it is astonishing he was not, he delivered up his grant to the Empress, and received from her under the name of indemnity, an annuity of three thousand roubles. The silver dug from these mines is mixed with the proportion of three to an hundred parts of gold, and is sent to St Petersburg. From the accounts of the board of mines, those of Koliwan produced, since they were discovered in 1725 till 1786, about three millions five hundred and twenty thousand pounds of silver, and forty eight thousand pounds of gold, which yields at an average, a produce of fifty nine thousand pounds of silver, and sixteen hundred pounds of gold per annum.

THE mines and founderies of Koliwan employ near forty thousand men, exclusive of the peasants in the neighbourhood of Tomsk and Kufnetz, who redeem their capitation tax by cutting wood, furnishing charcoal, and transporting the mineral to the founderies.

SINCE the year 1765 the board of mines have discovered a way of paying the expences of working those of Koliwan, by coining the copper drawn from them, which was in a manner thrown away, on account of the carriage, which was absolutely necessary to make it an advantageous concern. Now it is carried to Suzunskói, which is some wersts from thence, where it is coined into pieces of two copeks, with which the workmen are paid. The silver cast into ingots in the same city, is transported to St Petersburg by convoy, when the season permits.

NEXT to the mines of Koliwan, the Russians place those of Nertschinsk, situated on the Nertscha, towards the frontiers of China, to the south east of Siberia; and those of Argunskoi on the banks of Argun, situated almost in the same country. They are even thought more productive than those of Koliwan, although less abundant, because they require less manual labour, and besides those of Koliwan want the lead necessary for working them, and to remedy this deficiency, it must be brought from England. The mines of Argun and Nertschinsk produced from the year 1741 till 1786, upwards of forty eight thousand two hundred and sixty six pounds of silver, and eight hundred pounds of gold.

It is principally in the mines of Nertschinsk, that the criminals transported into Siberia are employed.

Never

Never less than two thousand of them are there, and yet they constitute no more than a fifth of the hands employed in working these mines.

THE other mines in Russia are not so important, and less valuable than these. The crown has given them for the working, or has ceded the property for a compensation. Many of them belong to the house of Schuwalow, and to the different families of Demidoff.

IN spite of the ignorance in mineralogy, with which some travellers have reproached the Russians, it has been remarked that these people work their mines with much more advantage than ever the Spaniards did those of Potosi or Peru, and that the difference in favour of the Russians was eighty per cent. on gold, and fifty per cent. on silver. The advantage, it is said, depends on this; the Spaniards use quick-silver instead of lead, and the former is not only more hurtful to the health of the workmen than the latter is, but also causes a greater evaporation in the parts of the gold.

IN a country where vegetation is almost in every quarter nipped by the rigour of the climate, the riches, which mines yield, are doubtless an invaluable resource. But if the Sovereigns of Russia, instead of thinking on peopling their dominions, which have so much need of population, preserve this warlike spirit, which not only destroys population

lation, but makes deserts of the finest countries; the immense treasures that Siberia contains, and cannot be torn from the earth, but by force of arms, will become an useless gift, which nature seems to have sent them, as an indemnification for those she denies, in a country, where she appears, only barren or a harsh step-mother. Gmelin, Pallas, and Abbe Chappe, who have travelled over Siberia, unanimously agree, that the mines of this country are inexhaustible in the strictest sense of the expression, but the greater part, or perhaps the better part still want hands to work them. It is therefore, a long reign of peace that the Russians need, in order to enjoy these blessings; if gold be at all times a blessing.

THE inexpressible advantage, that Russia may draw from her mines, had not escaped the sagacity of Peter I. and to be convinced of this, it is only necessary to read the multitude of regulations on this head. He granted not only in his own name, but in that of his successors, the preservation of the privileges of those, who should undertake the working of mines. His pleasure was, that every person who discovered a mine on the estate of another, should receive from the proprietor a great recompence; that if such mine was not begun to be wrought within the year, the person who discovered the mine, should have a right to work it, and that the land should belong to him, within the circumference of a circle of two

hundred fathoms diameter, for making to the proprietor, an annual payment of two per cent. for the favour, and as much to the crown for every mine not producing gold nor silver. Those of the last class, adds the law of Peter I. shall belong to the discoverer, wherever they be situated, and on the single condition, that he sell the produce to the crown only. The bowels of the earth were not however opened, even after all these encouragements. Either timid or defective in calculation, the Russians then averse to industry, were at first afraid of the eventual expence, and they remained in a state of inaction. But Peter, who speculated alone, better than all the Russians together, undertook the mines already discovered, on his own account, and made of them immense profit. The courtiers then imitated their master, and thence the mines of Schunallow and Demidoff.

For the purpose of improving this branch of administration, the school of mines was instituted at St Petersburg, where the young people, who are admitted, study all the parts of mineralogy. When they are instructed they are sent into Siberia, where they direct the principal mines. It is said, that this school has produced some excellent scholars, who by proceedings as simple as ingenious, have saved, in the mines under their direction, the sweat of the

the miserable, and augmented the produce of the works.

THE salt pits would be an object of as much importance to the Russians, as the mines are, if they were wrought with skill and fidelity, but the eye of the master cannot be extended to the extremities of so vast a horizon as that, under which the immense regions of Russia lie. He sees only what is around himself, and those interested in cheating him contract this horizon as much as possible, and present it to him always under flattering appearances.

PETER I. made in this department of government some wise laws, which have been improved by his successors, and by Catharine II. in particular, who has profited by the experience, which is the result of time, and by the abuses, which it discovers. Yet, in spite of these precautions, the inhabitants of that empire are obliged to fetch salt from Spain, while magazines established with wisdom, in different parts of the empire, would not only provide Russia and the adjacent provinces, but also the countries lying on the Baltic, and those lying towards the north, which are deprived of this mineral, of the first necessity; for there are salt-pits in almost all Russia. One of the most famous is in the government of Kasan, and belongs to the family of Stroganoff, who have been in possession of it, since ever it was wrought. That situated near Orenburg,

on the borders of the Ilék, is the most productive, and furnishes the largest field for observation to the naturalist, who runs over it. The salt of this pit is most beautiful, and of the best quality. It is taken from a kind of rock about four werstis from the river. The length of the rock is eight hundred fathoms, and the breadth about five hundred. It is so solid, that it has not yet been possible to found it. With a miner's wimble, however, they have penetrated to the depth of twenty seven fathoms; but time, sweat, and instruments, have not ascertained a complete knowledge of the depth of this mass.

FROM the year 1784 till 1787, more than a million of pouds* of salt, were taken from this rock, and transported into different parts of the empire, by the Wolga, the Biela and the Kama. The workmen in this mine, who amount to two hundred, receive half a copek for every poud of salt, they prepare for transportation, and to do this, they have only to cut the rock, which resists the pick-axe, like the most solid rock, but in a certain direction, it splits with the force of a pin. They receive six copeks for transporting a *poud* from the mine to the little river of Alchlaer, where it is shipped for Orenburg, and the neighbouring markets. This salt is

fold

* A poud is a Russian weight of forty pounds—about thirty seven English

fold in the country at twenty five or thirty copeks the poud, which is about a half-penny the English pound. It is calculated that this pit may yet furnish salt for near two centuries, supposing the depth to be no greater than it is already known to be. In order that the working may be more productive, and less expensive, the government has lately made an agreement with some Cossacs, who are to dig fifty thousand pouds a year, and transport them to the magazines of Orenburg. There are in the neighbourhood of this pit, some very deep lakes of salt water, to which great virtue is assigned by the Kirghis, and in which they bathe of their own accord, when afflicted with the least disease. The physicians, who have had an opportunity of judging of these baths, all agree, that they are good for all pedicular diseases. There is one astonishing circumstance attending these waters, namely, their surface is as cold as ice, while the deeper you plunge, the warmer you become, and at the bottom, no person can stay more than two or three minutes. To the investigators of the secrets of nature, we leave the office of explaining this phenomenon, which is attributed to the action of the rays of the sun on the salt particles, with which these waters are impregnated.

THERE are also some considerable salt pits in the neighbourhood of Bachmut, near Donetz, which is an arm of the Don. They belong to the crown,

and

and do not yield it more than fifty five thousand roubles a year. This is owing to the avarice of the managers, who are too far distant, for their conduct to be inquired into; and no people have more need of being called to account than the Russians, when they possess any trust. Every nation, that like them lives under the yoke of despotism, resembles them in this point. This resemblance ought not to astonish us, since it is inherent in human nature. The slave, who watches the moment, when his master turns away his eyes, to steal something from him, is the image of the Russian, of the Turk, of almost all the unhappy slaves of Germany, and perhaps also of the solemn Spaniard, who is this day as near a state of slavery as the Turk.

NEXT to the salt pits just described, those of Siberia would be the most important, and would exceed them even in produce, if they were attended to, and received the working, of which they are susceptible. But the want of hands, the distance, which renders carriage very costly, and the rigour of the climate are obstacles, which oppose the revival of these salt pits, which any other where, would be a treasure, for which nature would be thankfully acknowledged.

C H A P. XVII.

Of the civilization of the Russians, and what should be thought of it.—The houses of the Great.—Their way of life.—That of the common people.—Their food.—Their drink.—Manner of salute among the Russians.—Their haughty look.—National pride.—Anecdote.—The Russian ladies.—Their dresses.—Marriage.—Singular customs.—Funerals.—Manners and customs.—Russian baths.—How built—How and by whom administered.

CATHARINE II. who in all parts of administration, has showed herself the rival of Peter I. and surpassed him in many respects, by having had the advantage of circumstances, and the lessons of time; Catharine II. it is said, applied herself chiefly to the means of softening the rude manners of the Russians, whom climate, education and prejudices kept in a kind of roughness, which was found even in the capital, and on the steps of the throne, in spite of those pompous descriptions of a total change in their manners, and customs, which Voltaire and the Panegyrists of Peter I. have attributed to him in exaggerated strains, and at the expence of truth, at least of probability; for even the manners of Peter were not mild, and a thousand facts attest, that
 during

during his whole life he was affected by the rusticity of his first education.

It is true, that a nation may appear to have made great progress, if it be compared only to what it was in former times, when it lived far from instruction, and that intercourse with foreigners, which procures it. But this progress is reduced to almost nothing, when it is compared with other nations truly civilized. When a person arrives in Russia, he expects, after what he has read, to find the mind of the nation generally cultivated, enlightened and mild, and he is astonished at the degree of barbarity, into which the majority of that nation is plunged. It must be acknowledged that the first nobility, have in their intercourse with one another, in their manner of living, and the reception they give to visitors, adopted the tone of our southern courts; they have even carried politeness and elegance as far as any other nation, but there is a great difference between civilizing a nation, and only a few individuals. Although much may be said on this pretended civilization of the Great, we will not dispute it with them, but we will ask, if what are in Russia called *bourgeois*, merchants, freemen, bear any resemblance to us in any point of civilization, especially without the limits of St Peter-sburg. As to the peasants, they still preserve their beard, their national dress, their old manners, and
in

in their external appearance and way of life, yet resemble our ancestors. They have perhaps a few more vices, and an infinite number of wants, that they had not formerly.

THE houses of the Lords and principal nobility are furnished with much elegance. They have saloons, boudoirs, cabinets of natural history, in which nothing is contained, and libraries into which nobody enters. All these apartments are most magnificent, divided and furnished like those of France or Britain thirty or forty years ago; for the new improvements of these two countries do not reach Russia, till they are old fashioned and disfigured.

THE tables of the great, and of those who live in the same style with the great, are served with profusion, and in the French manner, but they affect not to despise the dishes of their own country. Common viands, and those of the daintiest kind, are in that country equally esteemed, and yet fashion and pride induces them to imitate the ancient Romans, who on their tables collected the productions of the most remote countries. So on the table of a Russian nobleman, and in the same entertainment, the *Stalk* of the Wolga, the veal of Archangel, the mutton of Astracan, and the beef of Ukraine, are set at the side of the pheasant of Hungary or Bohemia; and along with the wines of Bourdeaux, Burgundy, or Champagne, it is not unusual to see those of Hun-
Vol. I. C g gary

gary and Greece. It is the practice also in great houses after dinner to present dried or pickled herrings, neats tongues, bread, butter, cheese, with different sorts of liquors, especially Caviare, a dish peculiar to the Russians, made of the eggs of a sturgeon, pickled or dried.

In great houses, dinner is set on the table generally at three o'clock afternoon. The French way of service is observed, and after dinner is over, the guests withdraw into another room, where coffee is handed about. Fashionable houses have generally a circle of company at night, where much politeness and ease prevail. They sit down to play at seven o'clock. Some play, some converse, and some dance. Among other things, tea is as regularly filled out as in Britain. They sup at ten o'clock, and generally retire about eleven or twelve at night.

THE common people live very parsimoniously. A Russian of the lower class breakfasts on a piece of bread and bit of garlic, clove by clove, and he quenches the thirst which this repast must give him, by a large draught of *Spittin*, which is a mixture of tea and mead. In the streets of St Petersburg and Moscow there are spittin-merchants, as there are prison-merchants in Paris. They wear the same dress, and carry the same kind of cistern, and like them too stroll about, and sell at a cheap rate.

The Russian's dinner is not better than his breakfast. It is commonly dried or pickled fish, on festival days Caviare, and very seldom flesh.—He sups as he dines.

AMONG the different kinds of drink, which he uses, and relinquishes readily for brandy, which he is passionately fond of, and drinks to excess, we remarked *Quafs*, a kind of beer made by the fermentation of a portion of barley, rye, and oat-meal mixed together, and brought the length of fermentation by the heat of an oven. This beverage when one is accustomed to it, is agreeable, refreshing, and, according to the proverb of the Russians, good for fattening. Another beverage, which he prefers to *Quafs*, and with a propriety not to be disputed, is a kind of mead, wherein there is a part of the juice extracted from birch-trees, when the season permits. The Russian thinks this liquor wholesome and delicious, and we have seen people, who preferred it to French wines. It sparkles and frothes like Champagne, but although the Russians wished to persuade us so, we found in this beverage, neither the colour nor taste of Champagne.

AMONG the different customs that are peculiar to them, and by which they continue as firmly as by their religious dogmas, their manner of salute is remarkable. The gentlemen make a low bow, and the ladies, instead of a curtsy, give a nod with

the head. Sometimes the gentlemen, as a mark of great respect, kiss the hand of the ladies. When two people are of equal rank, or when the lady wishes to be very polite, she kisses the gentleman's cheek, while he kisses her hand. Often when she is stooping to give this kiss, the gentleman prevents her, without any resentment being shown him. If he be a man of very high rank, while the lady is attempting to kiss his hand, he prevents her by giving her a kiss on the cheek. The gentlemen, and particularly relations, salute one another, by kissing the hand first, and then embracing. When a Russian enters into a room, before saluting any person, he turns towards the *Bog*, makes three signs with the cross, says a short prayer, and then salutes the company.

THE Russians, when they address one another, never join to their names any title of honour, of whatever rank they be, even of the first distinction. They call one another by their christian names, and by a name proceeding from the family, which is formed by the addition of the particle *Witsch* to the christian name of the father; sometimes by that of *Of*, or *Ef*. The first form is used by people of rank the second is for those of all other classes.—*Ivan*, *Iwanowitsch*, or *Iwan*, *Iwanof*, means *son of Ivan*. *Peter Alexiowitsch*, or *Peter Alexeof*, means *Peter son of Alexis*.

FOR the ladies, the particle *Efna* or *Ofna* is employed; as *Sophia Alexefna*, Sophia, daughter of Alexis; *Maria Ivanofna*, Maria, daughter of Ivan.

THERE are some great families who are distinguished by a surname, such as *Romanof*, *Galitzin*, *Scheremeto*.

THE manners, the societies, and the amusements of the Russian nobility, have all the external forms of politeness, but of that *Teutonic Politeness*, that is always stiff and overstrained. Besides there are few people that have so much haughtiness in their manner as the grandees of that country, and so much national pride as the Russians—Ask them for what reason—They think themselves the most warlike people on earth. It was proceeding on this opinion that a Russian admiral, who had got the command of a squadron for the first time, in the year 1788, wrote to Catherine II. that the Swedish fleet, on his first appearance, had run into port, *because it was sensible of the danger of having to do with Russians*. And observe, when this Braggart wrote so, the Swedes, only a few days before, although with an inferior force, had proved to the Russians in a way not a little spirited, that they were not afraid of *having to do with Russians*.

IF the Russian nobleman affect to be courteous and affable, the common people, (and we rank them after those, who form the body of courtiers), the

common people, we say, are not at all communicative, and apt to undervalue every thing not Russian, or not done in the Russian manner. As to the women, the case is quite different. They are infinitely more complaisant than their husbands. Long black hair, an eye-brow nicely arched, a fine eye full of fire, a stature tall and well proportioned, a neck like that of *Venus de Medicis*, and a complexion such as imagination would give to Flora, distinguish the Russian women in general. To these beauties they join almost all the gentleness of the dove, and the open look of freedom. When education is given them, they seldom fail to improve greatly by it, without diminishing the precious qualities of attentive wives, and careful mothers.

THEIR dress is very like that of the Germans, except the pelisse, which the climate and custom render of general use in Russia. We noticed that the head dress of the married women is not the same with that of the unmarried. The wives wear a cap of an oval form, and above a silk handkerchief, neatly put on, such as our ladies sometimes wear now-a-days; and it adds to their natural graces. The unmarried women, instead of a cap, have a crown of ribbons, to which they fix their beautiful hair, ornamenting it with pearls and jewels, if they have any. When we saw them, we thought we saw those

ancient

ancient Grecian ladies, whose dress has been transmitted to us on medals.

BEFORE the days of Peter I. marriages were preceded or followed by several superstitious and ridiculous customs and ceremonies, which this prince and his successors banished far from the capital and principal cities of the empire. But neither St Peterburg nor the chief cities consented to abolish the *Druschka* or Bridegroom's assistant. There are men at St Peterburg and other places, who follow no other profession, but that of *Druschka*. In order to discharge the office well, a man must be of a certain age, of a clumsy make, wear a long bushy beard, and possess gay and lively humour; for at marriages the *Druschka* is to serve as the buffoon of the guests.

ON the day, that the marriage is to be celebrated, the *Druschka*, early in the morning, muffled in a cap of a conical shape, presents himself at the door of the bride, and proclaims her marriage with a loud voice, inviting all within hearing of him to the nuptials. The form of the proclamation is in these words. *The young prince of ——— and the young princess of ——— invite you amicably and with impartiality, to come to their nuptials, and to eat the bread of alliance, and drink the mead, which the future spouses have prepared, and they will pour it out to you in the cup of friendship.* This form which

which is every where and for all classes the same, is so much the more laughable, as the titles of prince and princess are never omitted, even in the marriages of the most miserable slaves; and as any person that on this invitation of the *Druschka* should come to the marriage, would be hooted and not admitted, because those wished to be guests, are invited in another way, and are warned that they are not invited by the *Druschka*, in order to persuade them, that they are sincerely expected.

WHEN the young couple set out for the church, it is he who begins the procession, and till he arrives at the temple, he repeats his invitation, and speaks an infinite number of foolish things, that keep the party in good humour.

PETER likewise suppressed the formula used by the pope, when the bride and bridegroom were at the foot of the altar. *Brother*, asked he at the bridegroom, *do you think yourself capable of becoming the husband of this young woman?—Yes—Will you beat her, when reason requires it?—Yes.—I forbid you in the name of God, to leave her, when she shall be sick, or forsake her, when she shall grow old.* This was formerly a practice among the Russians.

THE custom, or rather the obligation of the precept for a man to beat his wife subsists still in Russia, and we can attest it, as we have been witnesses of it, a thousand times every where. We will add also,

also, that this custom is in force, not only among the populace, where the husband seldom fails in his duty, but among the first classes of the empire.

BEFORE we were assured by experience, we imagined it a traveller's story, when we were told that a Russian wife, who is not beaten by her husband, thinks herself despised by him. But it is a real truth, and we heard the young wife of a counsellor, enter a complaint to her mother, who sharply reproved her son-in-law; and he to please his dear half, and her family, drubbed her heartily three or four times a month.

It was a practice in Russia, which might have the most fatal consequences, and Peter I. and Catharine II. have endeavoured to remedy it, namely, that of burying a person so soon as he had uttered the last sigh. One cannot, without shuddering, think on the prodigious number of those, who may have been victims of this precipitate burial; but a later law of Catharine's, ordained the space of three days between the moment of the death, and the interment. This custom among the Russians, arose from the horror they have at death, and whatever can recall the remembrance of it. It is among them more or less expressed, according as they are more or less ignorant; and there are some of them, who in stupid superstition, are equal to the savage hordes, that border with the frontiers of Russia, of whom

these very Russians speak only with disdain, although they are not more enlightened.

WHEN a person in Russia has breathed his last, his relations, his neighbours, though they may have been his enemies, form a circle at the foot of his bed, and make the air resound with their lamentable cries. They tear their hair, rend their clothes, and express all the signs of the most poignant grief. They add to this scene, which is only a farce, of which nobody is the dupe, another more ridiculous still; They remind the dead, as if he were capable of hearing them, of all the injuries he has done them during his life, and this is accompanied with the bitterest reproaches. After the dead has been lamented, and called to account, they set about burying him. For this purpose, the popes and mourners are engaged. The latter are women, who make a trade of following funeral processions, uttering cries of grief, as if they were really affected. This sort of mourners is to be found among a great number of nations, but particularly among all those of Asia.

THE funerals in Russia are conducted with all the pomp, that the circumstances of the decease, or his friends can admit of; and the man, who would have denied himself a rouble for his most pressing wants, would order twenty to be expended on his ostentatious funeral; so true is the maxim, that of all the
passions,

passions, vanity is doubtless one of the most foolish. There is yet one remark to be made on funeral processions in that country, namely, the address of the priests, who brought them into use, and that these Reverend Gentlemen, are every where equally ingenious.

BESIDES the sums, which the popes receive for masses, that must be said for the happiness of the souls of the dead, they are likewise invited, and never fail to attend the dinners, that are called *Commemorations*; *orgies* kept up for nine days after the deceased relation has been committed to the dust, and at certain periods, such as the day of his birth, and that of his annual festival. These entertainments are given at the foot of the *Bog*, who was the object of the veneration of the deceased. Mead and strong liquors are not spared, but as they drink in presence of the *Bog*, the popes get drunk without shame and without remorse, and the relations imitate them out of gratitude to the deceased, and to banish the sorrow, which his death has brought upon them.

We had almost forgot one thing scrupulously observed at interments in Russia. A passport from the pope is put into the hand of the corpse, expressed in these terms. *I subscribing, certify that the bearer of these presents has been confessed, and has had the sacrament administered according to the rules*

prescribed by the church, and that he has on his death-bed, shown the signs of the sincerest repentance of the faults he may have committed while he was in life. He is therefore recommended very strongly to Saint Peter, to whom God has entrusted the exclusive right of granting an entry into paradise; who is intreated to open it to him without any difficulty, when he shall present himself, in the faith of which, &c.

THE Russians are not the only people, whom their priests have persuaded that such passports are indispensable. In Europe no Spaniard, nor Portuguese is laid in the dust, till he have in his breast a bull from the Pope. The Mahometans, in their vast empire, never go to their prophet, without a *Bon du Mellah*; and in the greater part of the colonies of Africa, people never pass from this life to the other, without being furnished with it. Whence it follows, that from one extremity of the globe to the other, men are the dupes of their priests, who differ from one another, only by more or less impudence.

It was the priests, who in Russia had annexed a religious opinion to the preservation of the beard, the suppression of which, Peter I. made a matter of too much importance, and insisted upon it with too much severity; for during his life time, a man was obliged to be shaven, or cashiered, or at least heavily fined. It is reported, that he had barbers station-

ed at the gates of Moscow, who without pity shaved all that came in their way, or made them pay without delay, the fine prescribed by the law, which was from a copek to a hundred roubles, according to the circumstances of him, who wished to save his beard. Now a days long beards are less frequent. Knowledge, time, the example of the great, and ridicule, have driven them out of fashion, more than the fine, which Peter had set on those, who were attached to them.

IN the provinces distant from the capital, there is yet a number of people, that have for their beard a religious respect, to such a degree, that they would rather suffer themselves to be cut to pieces, than a hair of their beards to be touched; for when one by chance drops, they carefully pick it up, that it may be buried along with themselves, and presented to St Nicolas, who will acknowledge none for a good Russian, or a good christian, who shall not present a beard untouched.

IN Russia the sovereign and almost only remedy for all sorts of diseases is the steam bath. They can be got every where, and at a cheap rate. It is generally taken in a house built of wood, as near a river as possible. This house consists of a single room, with a small window hermetically shut. Old women furnish and heat it by means of a fire they kindle, under a vault of granite stones, about four feet

feet high. When these stones are made sufficiently hot, water is thrown upon them several times, which instantly produces an abundant steam. Then several small flint stones, red hot, are taken from the fire, and thrown into troughs full of water, which is warmed to different degrees. Half an hour after, the persons who are to use the bath, go in and remain in it, while a woman continues to throw warm water on the stones, which operation heats the room prodigiously. Then those in the baths lie down on a kind of table, and the woman lays them over with soap, and rubs them slightly with a bunch of branches, covered with leaves, or with flannel; and when their bodies are covered with a bright crimson froth, which is the effect of the steam, they pass, if they are rich people into apartments adjacent to the bath, and gradually warmed; if common people, they are at less ceremony, and go very deliberately and duck themselves in the river near the house, or roll among the snow, where several persons have assured us they receive the most delightful sensations. The women married and unmarried, go through the same process, without being uneasy at being seen, in the dress worn by our great mother before the fall.

Near Novogorod we saw a bath, a little different from that we have just mentioned. It was a house wider and more convenient than the last, and we could

could continue in it for some time. The room was furnished with a row of broad forms, placed like steps above one another, almost as high as the ceiling. There were in this room about twenty naked people. Some were lying on the forms, some were sitting, and others standing; Some were rubbing their bodies with soap, or with small branches of oak, whose leaves were tied together like a switch; some were pouring warm water on their heads, and others cold water; a small number exhausted by the heat, were standing in the open air, or plunging several times into the Wolkof, which was running at the foot of the bath.

It is with justice, that the strength of the constitution of the Russians has been generally ascribed to this practice of passing suddenly from excessive heat to extreme cold, when they bathe; but other causes concur to produce this effect. The peasants change their clothes, without paying any attention to the change in the temperature of the air. During the same day they are to be seen covered with a single shirt, and a pair of drawers, or wrapped up in the warmest clothes. Beds are to them a luxury absolutely unknown. They sleep sometimes on the height of their stove, sometimes on the floor, clothed, or almost naked. Their cottages are excessively warm, because of the great number of people collected into a small space, and because they are
continually

continually heating their stoves, even in the middle of summer, so that when they go out, it is almost like passing from a hot bath to the open air. Their children are hardily brought up, and from their early years, accustomed to opposite extremes. They are to be seen running in the streets, or standing at the doors of their houses, without any clothing, but their shirt, even when it rains or freezes.

THE rigour of the climate has been assigned as the cause of the little progress which the Russians have made in the arts and sciences, compared with the other nations of Europe. But if the climate produce a necessary effect on the human mind, where must bounds be set to intellectual capacity. Shall we suppose a point, at which it is at the greatest perfection, after which it is enfeebled in proportion as we remove from this point. Is this influence constant, or is it accidental? If it is constant, why is modern Greece no more the country of knowledge and fine arts? Why was Iceland, which is so near the pole, formerly the only country of letters in the north? Why are the Swedes more enlightened than the Russians? Why are not the Russians of Astracan, more civilized than those of St Petersburg and Archangel?

SEVERAL obstacles arising from the nature of the government, from the religion, but chiefly from the absolute slavery of the peasants, have hitherto opposed

opposed the easy diffusion of knowledge through this empire; and these causes alone explain this fact, without any necessity existing for recurring to the influence of the climate, or to the harshness of nature towards the Russians. A short sketch of the history of their learning, and of its actual state, is besides sufficient to refute all these assertions founded on a theory contradicted by facts.

C H A P. XVIII.

Learning of the Russians.—*Wolodimer, the first Christian Grand Duke.*—*His son Jaroslaves.*—*Both endeavor to enlighten their subjects.*—*Ignorance of their age.*—*Nestor, the first historian that Russia has had.*—*His chronicle.*—*Other historians*—*Theophanes.*—*Sherbatoff.*—*Pois.*—*Lomonjoff.*—*Sien Jakoff.*—*Russian theatres.*—*What they were formerly.*—*What they are at this day.*—*National theatre.*—*Catherine II. patronises the sciences.*—*Masters of the French language.*—*An academy.*—*Foreign works translated.*

It would be the height of weakness to pretend, as some writers have done, that the Russians were informed, even enlightened, when they embraced christianity, about the tenth century, under the reign of their Grand Duke Wolodimer, when the

monks have called *the Great*, because he affected their childish ways, and loaded them with wealth. This was, without a doubt, the way to procure from heaven the pardon of his sins, which were numerous and heinous. His predominant passion was for women, and he carried it the length of brutality, yet he was canonized. He deserved to be so, say the Russian monks, for whom Wolodimer was a sort of divinity, because, by his repentance, he made expiation for his sins, which were the errors of youth. Of what avail are repentance and expiation, reason and philosophy answer, when we consider rape and adultery, two crimes whose injuries cannot be repaired? In consequence of these crimes, and the penitence of Wolodimer, every reasonable man must regard this pretended saint as a crowned robber, on whom deification has been conferred, as it was on Nero or Caligula, on Clovis or Charlemagne; characters, that differ from one another only by the crimes wherewith they are stained.

WOLODIMER'S son, Jaroslaw, who ascended the throne in the year 1018, brought several priests from Constantinople, who were reported to him to be scholars and philosophers, but they confined their instructions to translating some hymns and psalms from the Greek into the Russian language, for the music of the churches. This prince also founded a sort of seminary at Novogorod, for three hundred students,

students, and gave this city, what the Russians call, its first code of laws. This is said to have been the date of learning in Russia, and it would have made greater progress perhaps, if, for three centuries, it had not been almost extinguished by the Tartars, who brought the nation under the most oppressive yoke, and kept the little knowledge it had begun to acquire, shut up in a small number of cloisters.

ABOUT the fifteenth century, when these barbarous masters had been conquered and expelled by this Iwan, who was the Alexander of his country, the Russians gradually emerged from that profound ignorance, in which they had been so long sunk. They were not civilized, as some would make us believe, but they became less savage, and more humane to the foreigners, who under the Czars, Iwan's successors, landed in Russia, as in our days, Cook did on the island of Otaheite. Yet it may be presumed, that under the shade of a cloister, some monks cultivated letters, for while Poland, Sweden, and Denmark were yet in ignorance, the Russian nation had already a writer esteemed in his day, who employed himself in compiling the history of his own country. This historian was Nestor, a monk, who was born at Bielozero, in the year 1056. He had learned Greek at Kiow, and had formed his taste, by reading the authors of the Byzantine history. His chronology, which has been servilely

copied by Lomonosoff and the Germans, begins in the year 860, in the reign of Rurik, regarded as the founder of the Russian monarchy, and ends at the death of Jaroslaw, which happened in the year 1054. It is preceded by an introduction, in which Nestor describes Russia, and the neighbouring countries, as well as the history of the emigration of the Slavonians, their manners, their establishments, &c. His style favours strongly of the age in which he wrote, and his chronological exactness is at once disgusting and valuable for its use in fixing the date of events.

THIS work continued in obscurity for more than six hundred years, and is still scarcely known to the Russians of modern times, the origin and exploits of whose ancestors he unfolds with a description very often minute. Prince Radzivil gave a manuscript copy of it to the library of Konigsberg, and it remained there unknown, till Peter I on his way through that city, caused it be translated and sent to St Petersburg. This work was afterwards translated into German, and published by Muller, who has not improved its style. This chronology has become a classical book in Russia. It has been continued by three other annalists till the year 1203; and the translator, Mr Muller, observes, that Nestor and his three continuators, form such a long and ancient series, as few nations can boast of being able

able to show. What a number of books Mr Muller did not know, when he risked this assertion! He adds, that much fewer monkish miracles and legends are to be found in this work than in the systems of chronology composed in cloisters during those ages of ignorance. This is not little praise to a philosopher, who is often obliged to make researches, which framers of legends render so disgusting. Since the year 1203, this succession of annals in Russia has been interrupted. It can produce none but some obsolete books of chronology, containing the account of the principal events, that have taken place in the different principalities, into which Russia was then divided, Cyprian, a Russian metropolitan, was the first who began in the fourteenth century, to write the general history of the nation. The chronology of Nikon, which may be ranked with Nefior's, contains all the annals of Russia, from the date when the last ends, and comes down to the reign of Alexis Michaelowitch, which abounded with events, and seemed to announce the reign of Peter, which was still more prolific.

Next to Nefior and Nikon, he who merits to be distinguished in the literature of the Russians, is theophanes Procopowitch, archbishop of Novogorod, who was very active in introducing into Russia a taste for literature, and encouraged the sciences by his example and protection. He was born at

Kiow

Kiow in the year 1681, commenced his studies in this city, and finished them at Rome, where he spent three years. At his return, he made himself be noticed by Peter, who charmed with his abilities, knowledge, and politeness, was at great pains to attach him to himself. He followed the prince into Persia, and accompanied him in the war against the Turks. Peter employed him in the reformation of the Greek church, and placed him at the head of the synod, which this prince established after the suppression of the Patriarchal dignity. His favour supported him under Catharine I. and in the year 1736 he died archbishop of Novogorod, and metropolitan of all Russia. His principal work is the life of Peter the Great, which he has not brought down farther than the battle of Pultowa, and which is better worth consulting than that written by Voltaire. It is generally esteemed, in spite of the partiality remarkable in it, as often as the historian speaks of his benefactor. This error of his mind does honour to his heart.

Monsieur Le Clerc, in his history of Russia, maintains that Theophanes had persuaded Peter to introduce the protestant religion into his dominion, and that this prince was disposed to follow his advice, when death prevented him; but he quotes not the authority on which he founds this important assertion. If this change had taken place, it would
have

have proved the genius of Peter, more than any other; for to speak as a politician, there is no worship more suitable to Russia than the protestant form, and the legislator, in matters of religion, ought to prefer that only, which is perfectly adapted to the country, to which he gives laws.

AFTER Theophanes, nobody had thought on writing a history of Russia, which had any method. Prince Kilkof, who was long ambassador at the court of Charles XII. was the first who planned this undertaking. The Swedish monarch made him be arrested, in defiance of the laws of nations, and Kilkof, in order to divert the sufferings of eighteen years' captivity, wrote an abridgment of the history of Russia, which has been published by Muller, with remarks, in which he rectifies the errors, into which Kilkof had been necessarily led, by the want of books.

VASSILI-TATISSICHFF, another Russian historian, who from the year 1720 till 1750, was engaged in collecting materials for a history of his country, made a rich collection, part of which was burnt by accident, and the fragment published by Muller, in three volumes 4to.—But the honour of writing a complete history of Russia, was probably reserved for prince Sherebatoff. It is he, who, along with Muller, has contributed most to clear up the Russian annals. He was patronized by the Government,
and

and obtained free access to the archives of the empire; an advantage, without which, no man can write the history of a country. Thus Prince Sherebatoff is enabled to cite authorities scrupulously. Justice has been done to his exactness and love of truth, which the general run of historians seldom make walk hand in hand.

WITH regard to the poetry of the Russians; they formerly had only a few songs, and a collection of psalms composed by a monk; and as said by Scheraskof the poet, who celebrated Peter as Boileau did Louis XIV; the muses waited for the reign of this celebrated man to make their appearance in Russia. Lomonosoff and Sumorokoff were the first that distinguished themselves. The former brought the Russian language to a considerable state of perfection, and enjoyed the greatest advantage from this attention. He was born of poor parents in the year 1711. His father was a fish merchant at Holmogory. Chance gave him education. His natural ability, it is said, discovered itself, by reading the Song of Solomon, which, though ill-translated, inspired him with such a passion for poetry, that he ran away from his father, and took refuge in a monastery, where he had an opportunity of studying the Greek and Latin, and prosecuting some studies. The academy of sciences, who were witnesses of his
first

first success, adopted him, if we may use the expression, and sent him at their own expence to the university of Marburg, where he studied four years under the celebrated *Wolf*. While in that country he applied to a science, which suits but ill with poetry. It was chymistry, in which he succeeded so well, that at his return to Russia in 1741, he was admitted into the academy, and made professor of chymistry. The Empress Catharine II. honoured him, in the year 1764, with the title of a counsellor of state, which he enjoyed but a short time, for he died the same year.

Lomonosoff distinguished himself in various kinds of literature, but his poems in particular have raised him to the first rank among Russian authors. The most esteemed are his odes, in which he has taken Pindar for his model. In them, if you believe the Russians and Germans, you will find the force and sublimity of the Greek poet, and the energy which he had not. The Count of Schuwaloff, whom Voltaire introduced into notice in France, has translated into French, one of the best pieces of verse, that Lomonosoff has composed. It is his epide upon glass, wherein there are many very ingenious thoughts, which the Count of Schuwaloff, or rather Voltaire in his name, has rendered much more ingenious in his translation.

ALEXANDER Sumorokof, who is the Corneille of the Russians, and the founder of their theatre, has not contributed less to the improvement of the poetry of his country, and in order to form a proper estimate of his dramatic merit, it is proper to tell in what state, he found the stage of his own nation, when he embarked on this enterprize.

BEFORE the time of Peter the Great, a few students in the monasteries of Kiow and Moscow, sometimes acted dramatic pieces drawn from scripture, in which consisted the excellence of our stage, when it was in its infancy. Demetrius Tooptalo, Archbishop of Rostof, had distinguished himself particularly in this kind of Drama. He was the author of, the *Sinner*, *Esther*, and *Abasuerus, the birth of Christ and his resurrection*; and all these pieces were thought excellent by the Russians, who strove to load their memories with them. They were acted with the greatest success, till the reign of Elizabeth, who had a decided taste for these pious farces, especially when she was in her fits of devotion.

THE students of surgery in the hospital of Moscow were the first laymen, that mounted a stage. They employed the great hospital hall for their exhibitions, and screens supplied the place of decorations. Staehlin saw a piece acted, whereof Tamerlane was the hero. According to his report, nothing could be more ridiculous than the whole of this show, where
the

the most indecent scenes were often tacked to events borrowed from scripture. He says, that he has seen the Empress' maids act a comedy in a hay-loft, about the court stables, or in unfurnished houses. Other strolling companies acted in the public squares, but every where it was only the rough waggon of *Theſpis*, and burlesque obscenities, equally offensive to good sense and decency, the most unaffected. Such was the Russian stage, when Sumorokof brought forward his tragedy of Kores. An excellent actor at same time appeared on a stage at Jaroslaws. His name was Fedor Wolkof; He was born in the year 1729 at Kastroma. His father, who was a merchant in easy circumstances, charmed with the forward abilities of his son, instead of burying them in a dull counting-house, sent him to study at Moscow, and young Wolkof became the *Garrick* of Russia. After having exhibited pious dramas to his countrymen for some time, he introduced upon his stage the plays of Lomonosoff and Sumorokof, and they were well received. It is reported that Wolkof, as industrious, as passionately fond of the stage, painted the decorations of his theatre with his own hands, worked at making dresses, and very frequently gave a play *gratis*, in order to inspire his countrymen with a taste for theatrical entertainments. But they, notwithstanding this encouragement, for a long time preferred

the riotous amusements of the tavern, to those of the theatre.

IN the year 1752 the Empress Elizabeth having heard of Wolkof's fame, brought him and his company to St Peterfburg, and there upon the Court-stage, he played the tragedies of Sumorokof. For the purpose of improving this company, Elizabeth sent four of the principal actors to the school of Cadets, where they staid four years, were instructed in the accurate pronounciation of the language, and again appeared on the stage with that urbanity, that is only to be acquired in the capital. Soon after this, Elizabeth established a national theatre, of which Wolkof was the chief actor. In order to excite emulation, she appropriated a sum of four thousand five hundred roubles, (about a thousand pounds sterling) to be divided among the actors according to their abilities; and allowed them besides to act once a week for the public, and their own benefit. As in addition to all, the court bore the whole expence of the play, this theatre got into the best state, and along with the productions of Sumorokof, translations of Moliere, and some other French comic writers were played. In a short time, the players, who possessed ability, without having the stately look of the actor, who knows his own consequence and reckons on it, were successful in gaining the public favour, along with that of the
Empress

Empress Catharine, which they have always enjoyed; She has augmented the sum appropriated by Elizabeth, for the salary of the comedians, to a thousand roubles, nearly four thousand pounds sterling. Two celebrated actors Wolkof and his brother were ennobled, and the Empress gave them estates and peasants; for the former are of no value without the latter in Russia; so that in the north as well as in the south of Europe, players are found manorial lords! Talents ought to be rewarded, but to assimilate the artist to the hero, who sheds his blood for his country, is the height of extravagance; and when Catharine gave lands to Wolkof, what did she reserve for brave Potemkin, the conqueror of the Turks? The eldest of the Wolkofs acted for the last time at Moscow, in the tragedy of Zemira, and died shortly after, at the age of thirty five. He acted tragedy and comedy equally well, was a little of a musician, and a very good poet.

As to Sumorokof, to whom the Russian stage is so much indebted, he was of the cast of nobles, and was born at Moscow in the year 1772. He had a regular course of study in the house of cadets at St Peterburg, and had given early proofs of his abilities and poetical genius. At that time he dedicated his whole time to the study of the best Latin and French authors. His first productions:

productions were some love songs, which the Russians admired and got by heart. Count Schuwaloff took him under his protection, and procured him that of the Empress Elizabeth, from whom he obtained every thing he wished to have.

WHEN Sumorokof had brought on the gout by age and study, he gave himself up wholly to tragedy, and cultivated it with the enthusiasm he had imbibed from Racine, of whose works he was passionately fond. He then exhibited his tragedy of Koref, which was in some degree the first Russian play, that was not a compound of ridicule and impertinence.

THIS literary phenomenon attracted the attention of Elizabeth. Koref at first had been played only by the friends of Sumorokof. She wished it to be acted in her presence on a little court theatre. The applauses bestowed on the author encouraged him to indulge his genius. He in succession exhibited Hamlet, Arifona, Sinafet, Truvok, Zemira, Dimifia, Vitzlaf, the False Demetrius, and Miciflaf. His Comic Muse was not less prolific. She has produced several comedies, Triffoinus, the Judge, the Divorced Couple, the Tutor, the Ill Gotten Fortune, the Envious Man, the Hypocrite, the Imaginary Cuckold, the Rival Mother, the Gossip and the Three Rival Brothers; He acted also the Operas of Alceftes, and of Cephales and Procris.

SUMOROKOF had no room to complain of his age and country. Elizabeth raised him to the rank of Brigadier, made him director of her theatre, and settled on him a pension of eighteen hundred roubles. Catharine II. made him a counsellor of state, gave him the order of St Anne, and loaded him with honours and favours till his death, which happened at Moscow, in the year 1777, and in the fifty first year of his age.

WITH so many advantages Sumorokof had it not in his power to be happy. He had the character, as he had the ability of a poet. Sensible of it in the extreme, spoilt by success and the insipid praises that accompany it, he could not bear criticism, even when it was well founded; and he had formed of himself and his art an idea, bordering on extravagance.

It was not by patronizing men of agreeable talents only, that Catharine II. made herself commendable. The schools, which she founded through all the provinces of this vast empire, furnished all classes of people with the means of instruction; and encouragement given to those, who distinguished themselves, spread a general emulation. Notwithstanding the grounds of complaint, that some individuals may have against this princess, the impartiality, which we profess, constrains us to allow, that Catharine has done all in her power to enlighten

her country; she has favoured the sciences, and contributed to their progress with so much zeal, that if an author receive not from her some mark of distinction or liberality, his work must appear destitute of merit.

SHE has taken particular care to establish schools for the French language, which had become one of the parts of education little regarded in that country; and after all you can hardly conceive any thing more ridiculous than the French taught by the generality of the teachers, to be found in the capital; but yet they were worse some years ago. A Prussian officer told us an anecdote on this subject, which he had from Monsieur Bushing, the celebrated Geographer, who was for several years resident in St Peterburg, superintending some young nobles at a boarding school. The Empress having been informed that there was in her states a great number of French tutors, who not only did not understand Latin, but were even ignorant of the simplest elements of their own language, issued an order, that all the masters of the French language, and tutors in private families, should present themselves before a commission, which she named for the purpose of examination. Among the thousands of *Ignorants* that appeared before this tribunal, there were two that astonished the commissioners by their gross stupidity. One of these two having
been

been examined on the modes of the verbs, answered that, *as he left Paris fifteen years ago, he could say nothing about the actual modes of his country, where they were changing from day to day.* The other was a Livonian, who had never been in France, and for two years had, instead of French, taught the gibberish of his country, to the daughters of a nobleman, who lived in a southern province of Russia.

IN consequence of a desire to communicate to her subjects the learning diffused through the rest of Europe, Catharine II. also appointed a committee for the purpose of translating the best books, ancient and modern, into the Russian language, and she appropriated an annual sum of four thousand one hundred roubles, (about nine hundred and forty pounds sterling,) to defray the expence.

THE following are the titles of the principal books that have been translated.—The Characters of Theophrastus, Elian, Herodian, Diodorus Siculus, Terence, Cicero *de finibus*, Cæsar, Ovid's Metamorphoses, Tacitus on the Germans, Montesquieu on the Grandeur of the Romans, La Chalotais on Education, A Part of Busching's Geography, Voltaire's *Candidus*, St Evremond's Dialogues, Different Articles from the Encyclopædia, Tasso, Gulliver, Joseph Andrews, Jonathan Wild the Great, Amelia, Rollin's Treatise on Study, The French Academy's Dictionary, The Henriade, The Devil

on Two Sticks, Gelert's Works, Anderfon's History of Commerce, Robertfon's History of Charles V. Pallas on the Mongol Nations, An English Grammar, The Iliad and Odyſſey, Lucian's Dialogues, Milton, History of Sobiefki by Abbe Coyer, Spirit of Laws, Mallet's History of Denmark, History of Voyages, Virgil's Eclogues and Georgics, Cicero *de Natura Deorum*, Plato, Heſiod, Discoveries of the Ruſſians by Core, Marmontei's Incas, Bielſield's Political Inſtitutions, History of the Houſe of Bradenburg, Sul-ty's Memoirs, Blackſtone's Commentaries, Writers of the History of Auguſtus, Pope's Eſſay on Man, Locke on Education, Titus Livy, A Part of Horace, Travels of Anachariſis the Younger, Buffon's Works, &c.—Doctor Young's Travels in Ireland have been tranſlated by expreſs orders from the Empreſs, with a view of diſſuſing the knowledge of practical agriculture through Ruſſia.

A greater number of claſſic authors have been tranſlated in Ruſſia, and thoſe in higheſt repute have been printed in the original at Moſcow and St Peterſburg. The editors indeed are generally foreigners encouraged by Ruſſian nobles, who cultivate a liberal learning.

We ſhall conclude this article of the literature of the Ruſſians with a word on Mr Keraſtoff, brother to the counſellor of ſtate, and vice-preſident of the college of mines. This celebrated man ſpeaks almoſt

vated till the reign of Peter the Great, and had no grammar till that of Elizabeth in the year 1754. It was Lomonofoff who digested it, for the education of Catharine's new born son. This book is very far short of the perfection, that should exist in such works, as ought to be elementary, and within the reach of every body. But Russia is not the only nation, where a national grammar has yet to appear. Except Spain, we know of no nation in Europe, that can boast of possessing one. The Spanish academy in a body composed it, and in it produced a book truly classical, which in respect of the branch called *Universal Grammar*, ought to be translated into all languages.

THE Russian language, or rather the Slavonian, is one of those most abundant in proverbs. A small work that came from the press of the university of Moscow, contains a collection of more than four thousand, and the greatest number most striking, both by the truth that characterises them, and the epigrammatic wit, which they contain. Sancho Panza in the Russian translation recently made, is as entertaining as he is in the Spanish language, which is one of the most proverbial in Europe.

THE Greek language is taught only in a very few of the Russian schools. Men of the world are almost as ignorant of it there as among us, and to be acquainted with it is a mark of distinction among the ecclesiastics.

ecclesiastics. So that those persons in Britain, who think the Greek is the language of the Russians, are widely mistaken, for Latin is more common among them than Greek. There are really none who study it but the monks, among whom it becomes indispensable, because of their connection with the church of Constantinople.

THERE is no language, which a merchant, who intends to travel far into the north, ought to learn with more attention than the Slavonian, because with its different dialects, it is spoken through a greater extent of territory, than any other language of the world. It is the language of Bohemia, of Moravia, Croatia, Carinthia, Carniola, Slavonia, Bosnia, Servia, Albania, Dalmatia, the greater part of Hungary, Bulgaria, Poland, and in short of all the Russias; so that a traveller, who has it, can make himself be understood from the frontiers of Germany to the sea of Kamtschatka.

THE kind of Slavonian spoken by the Russians, is not so pleasant as that spoken by the Hungarians. It also abounds with *Oaths*, some of which are imprecatory and so strongly forbidden, that whoever utters *Matjews*, a word not capable of being translated, is declared guilty of high treason, if it be spoken against the prince.

THE Russians have also very frequently in their mouths, the words, *Curwin-sin*, *Bledkin-sin*, which signify

signify, Son or Daughter of a W—re; and *Sabatschkin*, meaning, Son of a B—ch; *Roman*, a Pagan, *Nemtschin*, a German, because they reckon it a dishonour to be a German; yet it is to the Germans that the Russians are indebted for what they are at this day: It is from the Germans that they have the sciences, the arts, and the industry that are to be found in Russia. When a German arrives there, though the Russians know his name, they take delight in calling him *Iwan-Iwanowitsch*, John son of John, an expression that answers nearly to the French *Jean-Farine*, and the English *Silly-Body*. The good German bears the banter without distressing himself, picks up the roubles of the Russians, who have no industry, then returns to his own country, telling himself he is not such a Silly-Body as the fools, who have enriched him at their expense.

Among the foundations, whose object is the progress of the arts and sciences, our attention was drawn to the Imperial academy of sciences in St Peteriburg, which was instituted by Peter I. This prince, having observed, during the course of his travels, how much learned societies contributed to the progress of knowledge, formed the design of erecting one at St Peteriburg. He consulted the celebrated Leibnitz, who gave him information respecting the different learned men, whom he should invite to Rus-

known to mathematicians and to the Empress, had been invited to fill a place suitable to his abilities; but the sordid interest which he discovered, and which vexed Leibnitz, who had extolled him to the Empress, made the court of St Petersburg averse to the solicitation, which his abilities, his pride, and love of money seemed to challenge. He received an invitation, fiddled about terms, and no answer was made him.

DURING the short reign of Peter II. the pensions of the members were not paid, and the court absolutely neglected the academy; but the Empress Anne restored it her protection, and the roubles appropriated for its support. She also added a seminary for the education of the youth, under the inspection of the professors. These two establishments prospered for some time under the direction of Baron Korff, but at his death, that is to say, towards the end of Anne's reign, an illiterate man was appointed president of the academy, and the ablest among the academicians left Russia. At the accession of Elizabeth, this illiterate president retired, the learned members were recalled, and the academy recovered fresh vigour. The first plan of its institution was extended and completed, and to the twenty five thousand roubles of original foundation Elizabeth added four thousand eight hundred, which raised the whole endowment to six thousand seven

seven hundred and five pounds sterling. At this very period Lomonofoff was admitted into the number of the Academicians.

CATHARINE II. always animated with the desire of diffusing instruction through her empire, has taken the academy more particularly under her own protection. Among the Directors she has made changes very useful to the whole body. At this present time it is a muse, very generally known in the north, who is invested with the title of *Director* of this academy; the Princess Dashkew, who is a member of the academies of Stockholm and Berlin, and might if she wished for the honour, be a member of all such institutions in Europe; for on the banks of the Thames, as well as on those of the Seine, it affords the greatest pleasure to see abilities united with the graces of the fair sex.

THE Princess Dashkew enjoys the favour of Catharine II. and is well entitled to it, because it is she, who along with Count Panin, first formed the plan of the famous revolution, that set Catharine on the throne; and the Princess was so much the more deserving of the Czarina's gratitude, as she happened to be sister to the mistress of Peter III.—We shall have occasion to speak more at large on this revolution, which surprized Europe, and owed its success solely to the pusillanimity of him, that provoked it.

THE Princess Dashkew has advised the Empress to reform a number of abuses, which had slipped into the academy, as they do into all institutions of this kind. Catharine too has cast a severe eye on those men, who are academicians only for the emoluments. She wished to have, and she has found laborious men, because with money people may get whatever they wish to have. She has also inspired them with a new ardour for undertaking and conducting researches.

On her recommendation, the most intelligent professors have travelled through the different provinces of the Empire, and as the funds of the academy would not have been sufficient for the expenses of these different tours, the Empress has made it a present of nine thousand roubles, (two thousand and twenty five pounds sterling) an act of munificence, which she has renewed as often as occasion required.

The objects of these travels have been explained in the instructions delivered by the academy to the different persons, who have undertaken them. Orders were given to make enquiries into the different kinds of water and soil; the best methods of cultivating desert and barren grounds; the local diseases of men and brutes, and the best mode of treating them; the best way of rearing, cattle, and particularly sheep, bees, and silk worms; the situation best adapted

ed to fishing and hunting; minerals, commerce and other objects of industry; in short into the formation of a collection of indigenious plants. It was also recommended to them to rectify with care, the longitude and latitude of the principal cities; to make astronomical, geographical, and meteorological observations; to mark the courses of rivers; to draw exact maps; to explore and describe carefully the manners and usages of different people, their customs, and dialects; the antiquities and traditions believed among them; their civil and religious history, with the prejudices connected or flowing from it: In a word, they were to investigate and remark whatever could contribute to the discovery of the real state of the empire, in all these points.

By means of these philosophical excursions, which have been made with equal exactness and judgment, we may assert, without fear of being contradicted, that there is perhaps no country, which can boast of having, simultaneously, produced so great a number of excellent works, on its internal state, its natural productions, its topography, its civil and moral history, and on the usages, manners, languages and customs of its different tribes.

THE Gentlemen, to whom this laborious but honourable task was committed, were, first Doctor John George Gmelin, then Messieurs Pallas, Ge-

orgi, Falk, Rytſchkoff, Lepechin, Samuel George Gmelin, nephew to the Doctor, and Guldenſtaedt, to whom we beg leave to draw the attention of our readers for a moment.

DOCTOR John George Gmelin was a German phyſician, and profeſſor of Botany in the academy of Sciences of St Peterſburg, from the day of his admiſſion. In the year 1733, he was commiſſioned by the Empreſs Anne to travel over Siberia and Kamſchatka. The companions on his journey were M. de Liſle de la Cloyere for drawing maps, and Mr Muller for other particulars; he himſelf took charge of the natural hiſtory. The reſult of the journey of theſe three academicians was a volume of travels in Siberia, which, as ſoon as publiſhed, were tranſlated into all the languages of Europe, becauſe they contained the moſt exact accounts of Siberia; an immense country, of more than twelve hundred leagues in length, from eaſt to weſt, and five hundred in breadth from north to ſouth. Mr Gmelin has alſo publiſhed his *Flora Siberia*, which among Botanists is in great requeſt.

Mr Pallas, ſo juſtly celebrated for his great knowledge in natural hiſtory, is ſon to Simon Pallas, who was profeſſor of Anatomy at Berlin, and firſt phyſician to the charity hoſpital of that city. He was born in the year 1741, and went through his firſt ſtudies.

studies, partly at Berlin, and partly at Gottingen. He prosecuted them afterwards in Holland, and in the year 1760 passed as Doctor in medicine at Leyden. The value set on his abilities by the celebrated Gaubius, procured him an establishment at the Hague, where he applied chiefly to his Researches on Zoophytes; a work, which discovered as much genius as method. The reputation he had acquired by his different writings, induced Catharine II. to invite him into Russia, as Professor and Inspector of the Cabinet of Natural History. He arrived at St Petersburg in the year 1767, and left it in June 1768, to travel for the purpose of making observations on all the provinces subject to Russia, in company with the learned gentlemen before mentioned. He visited Moscow, Wolomer, Kalimof, Murrom, Arfamas and Kasan, and after having travelled a great part of the last province, he spent the winter at Simbirsk. In the month of March the following year, he set out again, and taking his route by Samara and Orenburg, he went as far as Gurjet, a little Russian fortress, situated at the mouth of the river Jaik or Ural: There he examined the countries that border on Kalmuc Tartary, and those, which lie on the Caspian sea, and returning by the province of Orenburg, he passed a second winter at Ufa. After having made several excursions into the neighbouring countries, he left Ufa on

the

the 17th of May 1770, continued his route across the mountains of Ural as far as Catharineburg, inspected the mines of this district, from thence proceeded to Tcheliabinsk, a fortress in the Government of Orenburg, and in December advanced as far as Tobolsk. He employed the year 1771 in crossing the Altaik mountains, and tracing the course of the Irtysh, as far as Omsk and Kolyvan, whose famous silver mines he visited. He then went to Tomsk, and concluded the travels of this year at Krasnoyarsk, a town situated on the Jenisei, where he spent the winter. There the cold was most intense, for the town is situated in the sixty seventh degree of north latitude. So great was its severity, that he observed the mercury freeze; a very singular phenomenon, of which he has given a very exact description.

HE left Krasnoyarsk on the 7th of March 1772, and directed his course towards Irkutsk, crossing the lake Baikal on his road to Udinsk, Seligenkoi and Kiakta, where we have remarked the commerce between Russia and China is principally carried on. Having penetrated into the part of Dauria, that lies on the south east of Siberia, he advanced between the rivers of Ingoda and Argoun, as far as the neighbourhood of the river Amour, and following the limits, which separate the Russian empire from the countries inhabited by the Mongol hordes, that
are

are dependent on China, he returned to Selingenkoi, and spent a second winter at Krasnoyarsk.

DURING the summer 1773, he visited Tara, Jailk and Astracan, and finished his travels of this year at Tzaritzin, a town standing on the Wolga. From thence he set out on new travels the following spring, and was on his return to Petersburg, on the 30th of July 1774, after an absence of six years and one month.

THE academicians or artists, who accompanied Mr Pallas in these travels, were first Mr John Ame Georgi, a member of the natural society at Berlin, who had the charge of the expedition into Orenburg, along with professor Falk, of whom we are going to speak immediately. Mr Georgi who travelled over Dauria, and passed through Irkutsk, Tomsk, Tara, Tobolsk, Isetkoi, Ilina, Catharineburg, Ufa and the country of the Barschkires, has drawn very exact and valuable maps of all these countries. Being as complete an artist as an excellent physician, he has designed and executed a collection of prints, representing the different nations of the Russian empire, with their dresses, which are as fantastical as various. Secondly, Mr Falk, born in the year 1725, in west Gothland, a province of Sweden, a Doctor in medicine in the university of Upsal, a Botanist trained by Linnæus, and by the recommendation of this celebrated man, placed

placed as director of the garden of plants at St Petersburg. After having, in company with Mr Georgi, traversed and explored the countries just now mentioned, his principal attention was directed to the Kirghis, and the colonies adjacent to them; but carrying about with him the seeds of a frightful disease, which affects the intellectual more than the natural faculties, Mr Falk was forced to discontinue his observations and travels in order to recover his health.

Mr Falk's complaint was an hypochondriac affection, which the solitudes of the deserts, through which he was travelling, augmented instead of diminishing; and when Mr Georgi got back to Kafan, in the year 1774, he was a prey to all the violence of his disease. From the month of December preceeding he had left his bed, and had taken no nourishment, but a little bread dried in the Swedish way, called *Knacke Broed*. Every day at noon he took some slices of this soaked in a little tea, in which there was no strength. At this time he still admitted a few friends, but soon after refused to see them, and reduced himself to the most austere solitude, if we except Mr Georgi, to whom he entrusted his real and imaginary ferrows.

On the 31st of March 1774 at five o'clock in the morning, Mr Falk's huntsman, came all trembling to awaken Mr Georgi, who ran to his friend's lodgings,

lodgings, and found him lying dead at the foot of his bed.—He had blown out his brains.—At his side there was a note, which marked the disorder of his mind, but nothing of the dismal resolution he had formed of taking away his life. His papers, which were carefully collected, contained remarks dictated by philosophy, and the love of mankind, and only served on this occasion to make him be regretted by his friends, and those who knew him, for in his last moments he was gentleness itself. He carried his beneficence the length of prodigality, and in order to indulge it, he limited his personal wants to the narrowest bounds.

THIRDLY, Mr Rytshkoff, son to Counsellor Rytshkoff, who has made himself so well known by his topography of Orenburg, has given the most circumstantial accounts of the countries, which extend along the Bielaja, as far as Kama, and thence as far as Kungur. Mr Pallas was particularly delighted with the remarks this young man made on the Steppe, a desert inhabited by the Kirghis.

FOURTHLY, Mr Lepechin, a Russian by birth, but educated at Strasburg and among foreigners, left St Peteriburg in the year 1768, along with Mr Pallas, who had a particular esteem for him. Their observations were made in company with one another, till their arrival at Simblik, whence Mr Lepechin went by himself to travel over the province

of Stavropol, then visited the Steppe, which is between the Wolga and the Jaik, and in 1771 ascended the most elevated summit of the Ural. In 1772, he was employed by Mr Pallas in examining the coasts of the white sea, and discharged the duties of this appointment in the most satisfactory manner. In 1773 he finished his travels by Plefskoff, Mohiloff, the banks of the Dwina, passed through Riga, and returned by the coast to St Petersburg.

Mr Pallas has revised all these travels, and narrated them in five volumes quarto. They are very interesting, and have added greatly to the reputation he had acquired by his knowledge and character. This work has been translated into French and met with much success.

EXPEDITIONS of this kind, in wild countries, and among roving nations, more or less barbarous, have not been made without exposing the adventurers to a thousand dangers, and if Mr Pallas has concluded his fortunately, it is not without having had much to suffer, and without having been exposed to the greatest dangers. "I return," said he when concluding his relation, "with an enfeebled body and grey hairs, although I am only thirty three years of age: yet I am much stronger than when I was in siberia, and I am indebted to providence, for having preserved me from innumerable dangers."

AFTER

AFTER having distinguished himself as a naturalist of the first rank, Mr Pallas deserved to be placed among critics the most judicious, by tracing the very complicated history of the tribes, that wander in these vast regions, which extend from the northern coasts to the boundaries of India. This he has done in a book published under the title of “*A collection for the Political, Natural and Civil History of the Mongol tribes.*” He throws a new light on the annals of this people, whose ancestors conquered Russia, China, Persia and Indostan, and at different periods founded the most extensive empire, that ever belonged to a single people. At the end of these travels, we shall say a few words on this subject. In the mean time we shall remark, that the general denomination of Tartars, which hitherto the most part of authors have given to the different Asiatic hordes, has been only a mistake. Mr Pallas proves that the Mongols are undoubtedly a people distinct from the Tartars, by their figure, language, kind of government, and that they only resemble them in a taste for a wandering life, which is common to them both.

THE primitive nation of Asia, whose origin, history, and present state, are the subject of this interesting work, is indebted for all its celebrity to its founder Gengis-Kan. When his vast empire was dismembered under his successors, in the sixteenth

century, the Tartar and the Mongol hordes, who had formed only one and the same state, separated anew, and from that time have remained distinct and independent of one another. Mr Pallas divides the Mongol horde into three principal tribes, Mongols, Oerats or Kalmucs, and Burats, and describes each of them with that precision, which characterizes his works. The last volume especially, which appeared posterior to the other three, contains a very particular account of the religion of these states. It is the religion of the *Dalai Lama*, of *Thibet* and of the Sovereigns *Manfhook*, who at present sit on the throne of China. So that this work communicates things as new as interesting, which, Mr Pallas affirms, are not the result of some hear-says, like most of the accounts given of countries far distant or little known.

In June 1777, this illustrious scholar read at a meeting of the academy of St Petersburg, at which the King of Sweden was present, a dissertation on the formation of mountains, and the changes, which our globe has undergone, especially in Russia. This work has been, and it well deserved to be, translated into French. What he has written of the Tartars has met with the same favourable reception.

SINCE Mr Pallas completed his travels, he has been occupied with publishing some very curious memoris on different objects of natural history, on
the

the nations of that part of Asia, through which he travelled, and other subjects equally interesting. He has been engaged with the publication of a magnificent work, which the Empress has ordered to be printed at her own expence, containing a complete description of all the vegetables, that grow in the Russian Empire. This work has been rendered very valuable, and at same time very dear, by the great number of engravings published along with it, and representing the rarest and most useful plants.—In a word, Mr Pallas has been charged with arranging, and publishing the manuscripts left by Samuel George Gmelin and Guldenshaedt, two men of learning, who, like himself, have by their labours contributed to the discovery of the different parts of the Russian Empire.

DOCTOR Samuel-George Gmelin, nephew to the Gentleman, who travelled by the orders of the Empress Anne, was at first professor of natural history at Tubingen, where he was born in the year 1715. He was afterwards brought to Russia, and admitted a member of the academy of St Peteriburg. In June 1768, he left this city and visited Moscow, Woronetz, Azoff, Kafan, and Astracan. In the years 1770 and 1771, he took a survey of the ports on the Caspian sea. He examined with particular attention the provinces of Persia, that are contiguous to this sea. and has given a minute description

of them, in four volumes of his travels, which have already appeared. An ardent thirst, and flattering hope of making fresh discoveries, induced him to attempt a like expedition in the western parts of Persia, which are constantly infested with numerous gangs of banditti. With this intention, in the month of April 1772, he set out from Enzelli, a small town in the province of Ghilan, on the south coast of the Caspian sea, surrounded as he was with difficulties and dangers. Till December 1773, it was not in his power to reach Sallian, a town situated at the mouth of the Kur. Thence he penetrated as far as Baku and Kuba in the Shirvan, where he was graciously received by Aly Feth, Kan of that country. Having been joined by twenty Cossacs belonging to Ural, he continued his route, and was only four days journey from Kisliar, when he and his companions were arrested on the 5th of February, by the order of Ulnaci, Kan of a very small territory, which he had been advised to go round, instead of crossing it, because this Kan's neighbours knew Ulnaci's bad intentions. The Kan's pretence for this shameful piece of conduct was, that the Russians had given an asylum to several families of his subjects, who had deserted from his dominions about thirty years ago, and he was consequently entitled to detain Ulnaci and his companions, till these ruffians were restored to him. Thus the un-

fortunate

fortunate Gmelin was given up to all the horrors of the most cruel captivity. Fatigue, uneasiness, unwholesome diet, and the inclemency of the climate completely ruined a constitution, already reduced by pleasure, to which he was excessively addicted, and undermined by the toils of several long journeys.

IN the month of July of the same year, in which he was arrested, he died at Achmetkent, a poor village of Caucasus. It is said that vexation at having lost a part of his papers or his collections, which were very rare, hastened his death. At the time he was taken prisoner, some of his manuscripts were sent to Killiar, and it afterwards proved a work of infinite difficulty to extort the rest from the hands of the barbarian, who kept him in confinement. The care of arranging them, for the purpose of making a fourth volume, was at first committed to Guldenshelt; but death prevented him from ever putting a hand to the work, and Mr Pallas was entrusted with this precious task.

JOHN ANTHONY DEUCHEMIN was born at Nige in the year 1705, was admitted into the royal college at Berlin in 1753. In 1756 he became Doctor in the University of Frankfurt by the Order, in the year 1767. The different languages he knew, and his acquaintance with natural history, made him be chosen as a coadjutor in the plan of travelling pro-
posed

posed by the academy of sciences. He was invited to St Peterburg, and arrived there in the year 1768. At first he was named assistant, then a member of this academy, and professor of natural history. In the year 1768, he set out on the projected travels, and was absent for seven years.

By way of Moscow, where he continued till the year 1769, and of Woronetz, Tzaritzin and Astracan, he proceeded to Killiar, a fortress situated on the west coast of the Caspian sea, near the frontiers of Persia. In the year 1770, he visited the country watered by the Tereck and Alskai, to the eastern extremity of Caucasus. The following year he penetrated into the district of Ofset, which forms the highest part of this range of mountains, and travelled over this country, protected by a guard of Ofsetians, furnished by Prince Heraclius, from whom he received assistance of all kinds. As he staid some time at his ease among the Ofsetians, there he composed Vocabularies of the language spoken by that people, made researches into their history, and discovered among them some remains of christianity. He then pursued the northern ridge of Caucasus, and proceeded into Georgia, where he was admitted to an audience of Prince Heraclius, who was then encamped, about ten wersts from Tssilis.

Prince Heraclius, or as he is called in that country, *Czar Isak*, who defended himself so boldly against

against the Turks in the war 1770, and at present reigns over all Georgia, Kaket, &c. is a man of sixty years and more. His stature is ordinary, his complexion swarthy, eyes large, visage long and his beard but small. He spent his youth at the court, and in the armies of the famous Nadir Shach, where he formed a great attachment to the Persian manners and customs, which he introduced into his own states. He has seven sons and six daughters. The Kans of Perha respect him, fear him, and often take him for mediator in their differences. He is looked on as a prince of great courage, as an able general, and his Georgians are esteemed the best soldiers in these countries. Although he has only a revenue of little more than a hundred thousand pounds sterling, he keeps an army of six thousand men. He is fond of show and expence. Guldenstaedt accompanied him on an expedition along the river Kur, eighty miles into the heart of Georgia, and returned along with him to Teflis, which is the capital of this prince's dominions. He passed the winter there, and in the following spring he examined the country, followed the prince into the province of Kaket, and advanced to those on the south, inhabited by Tatar Turcomans, who are subject to Heracles.—He was in the suite of a Georgian nobleman, whom he cured of a dangerous disease.

IN July he travelled over the country of Imret, which lies between the Caspian and the Black sea, and is bounded by Georgia on the east, by the country of Osset on the north, by Mingrelia on the west, and by Turkey on the south.

THE sovereign of Imret, styled the Prince, or Czar Solomon, having prohibited, when he succeeded to the regency, the scandalous traffic which the nobles of his dominions made of their peasants, drew on himself the resentment of the Turks, interested in this branch of commerce. They got him deposed by their intrigues, and forced him to fly to the mountains, where he lived for sixteen years, wandering and living like a savage, concealing himself in woods, caves, and the thickest forests, where often his valour alone was not able to defend him against the assassins, who were searching for him. At last in the war 1770, he was again set on the throne by the Russians. This prince generally wears a plain brown coat, and carries a musket. On great occasions he appears in a robe of rich gold embroidery, with a silver chain about his neck. He rides on an ass, which is perhaps the only creature of its species in his dominions. This ass, and a pair of boots, which are a rarity in that country, distinguish him from his subjects, with whom he delights to be surrounded. He has no regular troops, nor artillery, but he can assemble, when
need

need requires, an army of about six thousand men, by the found of a fort of horn. He causes his edicts to be published in the markets, which are held on Friday, by a man, who climbs a tree, and thence delivers them to the tradesmen, who on their return, communicate them to their neighbours, in their respective dwellings.

His subjects profess the Greek religion, or rather connect it with some superstitious practices, drawn from neither Christianity nor Mahometanism, but from a credulous ignorance, that kneels before every object.

FULL of gratitude for Russia, the Czar Solomon gave a very kind reception to Guddenstaedt, and assisted him to the utmost of his power. This inquisitive traveller afterwards penetrated into the ridge in the middle of Caucasus, traversed the interior of Georgia, the confines of Mingrelia, the lower and eastern Imret. After having made a fortunate escape from the banditti, who ramble through these wild regions, he returned to Kiskiar to pass the winter, and there procured a variety of information respecting the neighbouring tribes of Tartars on mount Caucasus, and particularly respecting the Lefgees. During the summer following he travelled into the greater Cabardia, the length of mount Beshtan, which is the loftiest summit of the first ridge of Caucasus. He then visited the mines of

Madshar, and arrived at Tcherkask on the Don. Thence he directed his way to Azoff and Taganrok, and ended his travels of the year 1774 at Krenfontshuk, in the government of New Russia. He was preparing for entering the Crimea the next year, but having been recalled, he returned by Ukraine to Moscow and St Petersburg, where he arrived in March 1775.

HE was busily engaged with arranging his manuscripts, but before he was able to complete their order, a violent fever carried him off in March 1781. He has published several treatises and dissertations on subjects relating to medicine, natural history, geography, and the commerce of Russia. In Goldenstaedt the Russians have lost a man, whom they will not be able to replace for a long time to come.

C H A P. XX.

LIBRARY belonging to the academy of sciences.—Cabinets of Natural History.—Anatomical collection belonging to this cabinet.—Museum.—Collection of Medals.—The Gottorp-Globe.

THE accounts of the establishment of the Academy of Sciences at St Petersburg, and of the advantages resulting from it, will be very naturally accompanied

nied with a description of the library and cabinet of natural history.

A LEARNED gentleman, long connected with this library, has remarked very justly, that war, which in most countries hurts the progress of the sciences, has been of service to them in Russia; because this library owes its origin to two thousand five hundred volumes, seized by Peter I. at Mittau, in the war against the Swedes. It was afterwards augmented by the liberal donations of this Emperor and his successors, and a few years ago there was added to it the curious collection of books, which Prince Radzivil had at Newitz, and the Russians seized upon, in the year 1772, during the troubles in Poland. It has received, and is daily receiving additions from the uninterrupted donations of Catharine II. who is *book-mad* in every sense of the word.

THE number of books in this library amounts to about thirty six thousand. The most ancient manuscripts are the lives of the saints, written in the year 1298, and Nestor's chronicle, of which we have already spoken. This chronicle, with those of Novogorod, of Pleskoff, Ukraine, Kasan, and Astracan, the genealogical tables of the ancient Grand Dukes, from Wolodimer to Iwan-Bassiliowitsch, composed in the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth centuries, may make it be reasonably presumed, that Russia is very rich in documents relating to its
ancient

ancient and modern history. These ancient manuscripts are all in the Slavonian language.

RUSSIA sustained an irreparable loss by the burning of the celebrated library of Kiow, which happened under the reign of Peter I. and made him shed tears, because it contained the most precious materials for history, of which the manuscripts kept at St James' de Waldai, and in the cathedral of Wolodimer, have not supplied the place.

IN the library of the academy there are sixteen volumes in folio, which contain the negociations of the ministers of Peter I. from the year 1711 till 1716; and thirty volumes of Prince Menzikoff's correspondence on public affairs, from 1703 till 1717. These collections would be good documents for composing an authentic history of Peter I; a work, which is still wanted, notwithstanding those published by Theophanes and Voltaire.

A MANUSCRIPT, modern indeed, but highly valued on account of the august personage, who wrote it, is the set of instructions, which the Empress sent to the committee chosen to compile a new code. They were drawn up and written with her own hand, and are kept in a beautiful vase of bronze, always set on the table, at the public meetings of the academy; a compliment not more academical than philosophical.

AMONG

AMONG other books in this literary repository, the attention of visitants is drawn to a volume, which contains the acts and epistles of the apostles, preserved not for what it contains, but because it was the first book printed in Russia. Mr Nichols, in his treatise on the origin of printing, tells us, that this same book was ten years under the press. It bears the date of the year 1564, and was printed at Moscow.

THIS library contains perhaps a greater number of Chinese books than any other, that we know of, in Europe. There are about twenty eight thousand separate numbers. Mr Leontief, who spent several years at Peking, where is a Russian church, and where some Russian students are kept, for the purpose of learning the Chinese language, has made out an exact catalogue of them.

HITHERTO Europe has stood indebted to the French for almost all that is known with any certainty of the inland state of China, but the Russians, their neighbours, are endeavouring to avail themselves of their situation, for procuring the information respecting this country, which we have not; or does not appear authentic, although certified by several authors, with the same tone, with which truth is supported. But those, who admire monks, and those monks, Jesuits; this is a powerful reason for confiding only in the Russian.

THE bonds of friendship, which have for some time connected the courts of St Petersburg and Peking, have facilitated the acquisition of Chinese books and the establishment of a seminary at Peking, and thus enabled the Russians to obtain a more complete and accurate knowledge of this country. In consequence of these advantages there have been lately published at Petersburg, several interesting works upon the laws, history, and geography of China, which have been extracted or translated from the original publications at Peking.

THE different articles, which compose the cabinet of natural history, are distributed with great judgment through different apartments, and constitute a collection of the productions of the country, which is as rich as it is curious, and has been considerably augmented by the collection of Pallas, Gaucelin, Guldentracht, and other learned men, who have travelled through the provinces of the empire.

We were shown different samples of rhubarb, gathered in the province of Schikhan, on the frontiers of China, and almost eight hundred weights from Sinkta. This precious vegetable is found on a small hill, defended by the fort Schandey, in the neighbourhood of a rich gold mine. It is not produced on the summit of the hill, which is continually covered with snow. It is at the foot, where the earth is freckled with red, resembling broad
fir .

strata of good ore, that the rhubarb of best quality grows. It has long stems, large oval leaves, and grows without any culture. The seed is broad, round and thick. The Tungusi are the people who gather it. After having pulled it from the earth, they hang it up on ropes made of herbs, and then sell it to the Bucharians, who dry it a second time and transport it on their camel, into Russia.

We had also shewn us some *virgin Edredon*, that is *Edredon unmixed*, the greatest part of which comes from Archangel. This is a sort of very soft down, which a kind of geese, very common in Iceland, cast in the moulting season. They rub themselves in their nests, to which these light feathers adhere. When the moulting is over, the country people seize upon their nests, and pile them up in large iron machines, stait above, and covered with a grate of a very few bars. They dry them at the sun, and after they have been brought to a very great degree of dryness, they beat the feathers in the cage, till the down being separated from the earth, with which it was impregnated, sticks to the grate, whence they draw it, for the purpose of making those beds or cushions, on which the Siberian endeavours to provoke sleep, which flies from his eye lids, and is enjoyed by the lascivious man in every quarter of the globe, even without *Edredon*.

THE word *Edredon*, which is written also *Aigledon*, comes from the German word *Eyder-dunen*. *Eyder* or *Ader*, is the name, which the Icelanders give to the goose, that furnishes the *Edredon*; and *Dunen* signifies feathers; whence it follows that *Edredon* is the plumage of a goose, not of the Eaglet, as vulgarly supposed.

In this cabinet, we saw the largest piece of magnet perhaps in Europe. It weighs six *pounds*, that is, about two hundred and fourteen pounds English, and attracts or can attract a block of iron of near five hundred and fifty pounds. It was taken from the magnet mountain, near the river *Werchnei-Kifil*, towards the upper Jaik. None are found on the top of the mountain, but within a compass of two or three wersts round the foot. The part of these stones exposed to the air is endued with the greatest magnetic power, but it is at same time tenderer and not so fit to be enchafed, as the part below ground.

THE anatomical collection of this cabinet is very highly valued, because it was made by the celebrated Ruysch, Anatomist at the Hague, who sold it to Peter I. in the year 1717, for thirty thousand Dutch florins, or two thousand seven hundred pounds sterling. The most valuable part of it is, a series of fetuses, from the first formation to the birth of the child, all preserved in spirits of wine. There are likewise
injections

injections of the brain, and of the eye, done with much art; and in the eye especially, there are membranes, so fine and delicate, that none but the ablest practitioners in anatomy, succeed in these injections.

FROM this cabinet you pass into the Museum, called by the Russians, the *Chamber of Rarities*, and well does it deserve this name. The ornaments found in the tombs in Siberia, several of which are of great value, first engage the attention of foreigners. These curiosities consist of bracelets, some of them weighing a pound; of necklaces in the form of serpents; of vases, crowns, bucklers, and figures of animals, all of silver and gold; sabres with hilts ornamented with jewels; Tartar idols and other antiquities. This quantity of gold work would not appear credible, if we had not seen it with our own eyes, and if some authentic documents did not prove it to be, as we have advanced; and by it we are induced to believe, that the people, who buried so many valuable articles, must have been very rich. But what idea can be formed of a civilized nation, capable of producing such works of art, and settled in ancient times on the banks of the Irtysh, Tobol and Jenisei? Mr Muller who has investigated this subject, and during his travels in Siberia examined several places, where such tombs were opened, has formed several very probable conjectures on this people,—The generality of writers on this point,

have reasoned only after his plan. The following is a specimen of his conjectures.

AFTER having described the several sorts of tombs discovered in the south part of Siberia, he adds ;
 “ As in many of these tombs, there have been found
 “ bones of men, women, horses, and also lances,
 “ bows, arrows, and other arms, it appears evident
 “ that the same superstitious notions, still prevailing
 “ in India, were in former times received in these
 “ countries, and that it was believed among them,
 “ the souls of men continued to lead in the other
 “ world, the same kind of life, which pleased them
 “ in this. In consequence of this opinion, the fa-
 “ vourite wife, servants and horses of a man of dis-
 “ tinction, were, at his death, burnt on his tomb,
 “ and interred along with him ; his arms too, his
 “ clothes, and every thing he valued most highly,
 “ went the same way. It is also, in consequence of
 “ this opinion, that the Indian wives, at this day,
 “ burn themselves on the same funeral piles, on
 “ which the dead bodies of their husbands are con-
 “ sumed to ashes.”

MR Muller also remarks, that in examining the ancient archives of Yakutsk, he found, that the same practice prevailed among the inhabitants of that country, at the time the Russians first made a conquest of it ; and that the only method, that could be devised for extirpating it, was to punish

as murderers, all such persons, as made such sacrifices of wives or domestics for the pretended service of their dead.

AFTER having thus accounted for the quantity of gold and silver found in these tombs, Mr Muller attempts to determine, who the people were, to whom it might have belonged, and he resolves this difficult question with the same sagacity. He begins with affirming, that the richest of these tombs were erected in the time of Gengis-Kan, and his immediate successors, and are to be found on the banks of the Wolga, Tobol and Irtysh; that the richest next to these are in the deserts of the Jenisei, and the least rich of all, stand in the country surrounding the lake Baikal. He supposes that all of them have been constructed by the Mongol hordes, and at different periods; and that this single people at different times inhabited the countries, where these monuments have been discovered. He founds on the following facts. Gengis-Kan laid the foundation of this extensive empire in the beginning of the thirteenth century. The wandering hordes of Mongols, who were first under his dominion, possessed the banks of the Selonga, Tola, Odkou and Anon, from the river Amour, to the Mongol desert, which terminates with the Chinese wall. These hordes were very poor, and consequently the tombs

found

found in those countries contain nothing, but what is of little value.

As soon as Gengis had reduced them to a state of subjection, he turned his arms to another quarter, and with the assistance of these warlike people, he and his successors conquered a great part of China, Independent Tartary, Persia, and all the country, which extends to the Black sea. They even kept Russia for some time under their yoke. The spoil, they had got in this immense extent of country, was almost all collected and concentrated in the places, where they had fixed the residence of the principal Kan, of whom all the rest held; for at the death of Gengis this empire was divided into several principalities. Towards the middle of the thirteenth century, the residence of the chief or supreme Kan, was at a short distance from the banks of the Irtysh, as may be seen in the travels of *Rubruquis* the missionary, who on his way to the court of the Kan Magnu, speaks of the river Jaik, as the last he crossed. So it is probable that the residence of this Kan was situated between these two rivers, and this hypothesis receives confirmation from this fact, that the richest tombs have been discovered between the Jaik and Irtysh.

But as it was towards the beginning of the fifteenth century, that this empire of the Mongols was dismembered, it must have been during the
thirteenth

thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, that these people collected the immense spoils, which the magnificent ornaments found in their tombs give room to suppose. It has too been remarked that several of these ornaments are executed with as much taste as elegance. Where then could they have been made? For the state of the arts in the east, at that time, will not allow us to suppose them the work of the people residing in the east. They must therefore be unquestionably the work of European artists, whom the magnificence of Gengis and his successors invited to their courts; and it is a fact, that *Rubruquis*, at the court of Magau, met with a Goldsmith from France, called Guillaume Boucher, who was employed by this Kan.

MR Muller however, with his usual candour, makes an exception to this general proposition, “*that all the tombs of Siberia in which arms and precious effects have been discovered, belonged to the Mongols.*” He describes some, that appear of a much more ancient date, and contain arms and utensils of copper. The latter are also preserved in the chamber of rarities. The hammers, the knives, and the swords being constantly of copper, seem to prove that the people, to whom the tombs belonged, knew not the use of iron, and consequently were prior to the Mongol hordes, and much more ancient. Mr Muller, who in all his researches has displayed wonderful

derful sagacity, supposes these people to have been the *Igurs*, or *Uigurs*, or *Hungurs*, who are believed to have been the ancestors of the modern Hungarians, and at a very remote period inhabited a part of Siberia. This is the more readily conjectured, that one of the necklaces found in these tombs bears a perfect resemblance to those worn by the Hungarian ladies at this very day. It is also said that Gengis Kan and his subjects, the Mongols, borrowed from those people the alphabet and art of printing, both of which they were utterly ignorant of. But Mr Muller gives this only as a conjecture, and admits the difficulty of deciding positively, by what people these copper arms and instruments were used, or at what precise period the tombs were erected.

WITH much pleasure and minute attention did we survey a long gallery, destined to collect the different dresses of the tribes subject to the Russian empire, of the nations of the east, and of the Chinese in particular: and also another room filled with the dresses, arms, and instruments brought from the Islands lately discovered between Asia and America, and from the places next to the continent, that have been visited by Russian navigators. There we saw some caps ornamented with long tresses of hair, in the form of the ancient helmets; dresses of sin-cater and reindeer skins, and of feathers dyed red, ornamented with leather fringes, hair and fi-
news;

news; some wooden masks representing the head of a large fish, or of an amphibious animal, which the inhabitants use in their great entertainments.

In this gallery there are also different idols, procured by Mr Pallas, which belonged to the Kalmucs or Mongol hordes, that wander in Siberia, of whom the greatest number are yet idolaters, and attached to the religion of the *Dalai Lama*. Some of these divinities are represented on coarse cloth; others are made of burnt clay, painted or gilt; a very few of bronze are brought from Tibet. These are generally grotesque figures with several hands and arms, sitting with their legs across. They resemble those, which are the objects of worship among several sects of the east: they are hollow, and generally full of relics, maxims, and prayers. Prints of the most remarkable among them are to be found in Mr Pallas' travels.

From the hall of rarities and curiosities, our guides led us to that of medals. The collection of Russian coins, which throw great light on the ancient history of this country, merit an attentive examination. In former times, small bits of leather or martin skins supplied the place of coins, and were circulated among the inhabitants of these countries; but in commerce with foreigners, the Russians bartered their commodities with gold and silver in ingots, as the Chinese still do at this day.

It is not certainly known when money began to be coined in Russia, but it is very probable that the Tartars introduced the practice.—The Russian coins are divided into nine classes.

THE *first* consists of all those, which have no legend, and they are doubtless the most ancient. On them you see sometimes a man on horseback, holding a sword, but most frequently a coarse representation of certain animals; which circumstance, according to the ingenious conjecture of a Russian historian, proves the Tartar origin of these coins.

THE *second* class comprehends the coins, that have a Tartar legend, and represent men on foot, on horseback, with scymitars, lances, or falchions in their hands: sometimes griffins, goats, birds, and swans.

IN the *third* are to be ranked the coins, which have both Tartar and Russian legends.

IN the *fourth*, those which have only Russian letters without a date.

It may be remarked on these three last classes, that, since the Russian coins bore a legend, Tartar or Russian characters, frequently both the two, are to be found on these coins, in proportion as the sovereigns of Russia were more or less under the Tartar yoke.

IN the *fifth* class we rank the coins under the Grand Dukes, from Bassili-Demetriowitsch down to Iwanowitsch.

IN the *sixth*, the coins of the princes of the blood, who possessed independent principalities, such as those of Galitz, Svenigorod, Moshaisk, Bielozero, Sufdal, Rezan, Twer, &c.

IN the *seventh* we rank those of the principal cities, which had the right of coining money: as Novogorod, Pleskoff, Moscow, Twer, &c. The coins of Novogorod are the oldest. There the Tartar money had no circulation, though commerce rendered the Lithuanian and Swedish very current.

To the *eighth* class belong the monies coined from the time of Iwan-Basilowitsch II. till the majority of Peter I. The first piece of gold was coined under the reign of Iwan, under whom the art of coining was brought to considerable perfection. This prince was the first, without doubt, who made his money be impressed with the figure of a spread eagle; but history is silent on what occasion. The first rouble was coined under Alexis Michaelowitsch. Till his time it was only a fictitious denomination, suited to accompts. In this class is a Russian ducat bearing the heads of the two Czars, Iwan and Peter, on one side; and on the reverse, their sister Sophia, with the crown, the sceptre, and the royal robes.

THE *ninth* and last class contains all the coins of Peter I. and his successors. By them may be judged to what perfection Peter brought the coins of Rus-

fia, at his return from his travels, for since that period they have not been in a more complete state in any respect.

THIS collection abounds with eastern coins. Among them are a great number of the Califs of Arabia and Samarcand, of the Kans of Bulgaria, Crimea, and Azoff, of the Mongol tribe, by the Russians called *the Gilded Horde*. Among the Indian pieces, there is one of twelve rupees, representing the twelve signs of the Zodiac. It is one of the queen of *Nourmahall's*, whose history, related in the travels of Tavernier, has more the look of an old woman's story, than a true history. These rupees are so scarce, that the first proprietor of this collection, it is said, paid a thousand crowns for it.

IN a room adjoining that of the coins, is a wax figure of Peter I. as large as the life. He is sitting in an elbow chair, and his likeness is perfectly exact, for the face was moulded on Peter's own after his death. The colours have been applied with great justness. He has black hair, eyes, and eyebrows, a brown complexion, a fierce look, and his head, according to his custom, leans to one side. He is very tall, and, as far as the attitude allows him to be measured, he must be upwards of six feet. He is dressed in the only Gala suit he ever wore, which is the same he had on the day, when, with his own hand, he placed the crown on his beloved Catharine.

Catharine. This suit is of blue silk, richly embroidered with silver; the stockings are of a flesh colour, with silver cloaks. It would have been more desirable to have seen this great man in a green uniform, with the copper-hilted sword, which is preserved in the same room, and which he wore at the battle of Pultowa. There we saw also the hat he wore that same day, which is pierced with a ball in the crown. They keep in the same room, the sailor's trowsers, the woollen stockings, the shoes and hat, which he wore at Sardam, when he wrought in the dock-yards there under the name of *Mr Peters*.

THE academy have carried their respect for the memory of their illustrious founder the length of preserving in their cabinet, the horse, on which he rode at the battle of Pultowa, his two favourite dogs, his turning-wheel, his tools, and several of his works, with a bar of iron, on which he engraved this inscription: *On Thursday, 21st February, 1724, his Majesty Peter I. having gone to Olonetz, forged this bar with his own hand.*

WITH the same respect are shown the three silver goblets, which were presented to him on the occasion of launching the three ships of the line, which had been built under his immediate direction. One of these goblets, containing sixty five medals of the Kings of France, was a present from the Empress Catharine,

tharine, who knew equally well how to make use of the virtues and vices of her husband, in order to conciliate his affection. The attention of strangers is also attracted by the model of a hundred and twenty gun ship, which William III. gave to Peter, during his stay in England. The Emperor, who had been very kindly received by the King, presented William, at the time of his leaving England, with a diamond of great value, wrapped up in a piece of common paper; a very expressive emblem of himself, and of his nation, whose qualities were still under a coarse covering.

BEFORE we conclude this article, we shall say a little of the celestial sphere, known under the name of the *Globe of Gottorp*, which is at present kept in a separate building, in order to secure it from fire. It is a large concave sphere, eleven feet in diameter, and contains a table and chairs for twelve people. The inside represents the vault of heaven, as it appears to us. The stars and constellations are marked on it by gilt nails. It is on the meridian of St Petersburg, and when put in motion, by means of a curious mechanism, it exhibits the real position of the stars. The outside is a terrestrial globe. This machine is called the *Globe of Gottorp*, because it was made after a like sphere, which Frederick III. Duke of Holstein made be constructed at Gottorp by Andrew Busching, under the direction of Adam Olearius,

Olearius, who in the construction of it had been guided by a plan, found among the papers of the famous Tycho Brache. Frederick IV. King of Denmark, made a present of it to Peter the Great, who had seen it in the year 1713, and had expressed much surprize at its construction and mechanism. The transportation of it from Gotterp to St Petersburg was not only very expensive, but even after it arrived there, it met with injuries, and in the year 1747 it was accidentally burnt. By means of the irons, that had escaped the fire, the actual sphere was constructed, with considerable additions made to it; and in the year 1751, it was lodged in the room, where it is at this present time. It is exactly of the same size with the original sphere, but much superior to it; because it is marked with all the new discoveries of geography and astronomy, which the former wanted. The meridian and horizon were made by Mr Scot, an English mechanic very justly famed.

C H A P. XXI.

ACADEMY of arts.—Society of agriculture.—By whom founded.—How patronized by Catharine II.—The corps of Cadets.—Account of this institution.—Convent for daughters of nobles.—Observations on this establishment.

THE academy of arts founded by the advice of Count Schuwaloff, under the Empress Elizabeth, was annexed to the academy of sciences, and had at that time a revenue of eighteen thousand roubles—about four thousand pounds sterling. Forty students only were admitted, but Catharine II. has made a separate foundation of it, and assigned it a revenue of thirty four thousand roubles, and increased the number of students to three hundred. For the accommodation of this academy, she has erected a large circular building on the banks of the Neva. Students are admitted into it at the age of six, and continue till they are eighteen. They are clothed, boarded and lodged at the expence of the crown. They are taught reading, writing, arithmetic, French, Dutch, and drawing. At the age of fourteen they are allowed to choose one of the arts taught in the academy, which are divided into four classes.

First,

First.—Painting in its different kinds, as historical pieces, portraits, battles, landscapes, architecture, mosaic, enamelling, &c.

Secondly.—Engraving on copper and stones.

Thirdly.—Sculpture on marble, wood, ivory and amber.

Fourthly.—Clock and watch making, the art of turning, of making instruments, of casting statues of bronze or other metals, of imitating fine stones, and medals of gilding, varnishing, &c. Prizes are annually distributed among those, who excel, and twelve of those, who have gained four prizes, are selected to travel at the Empress's expence. When they settle afterwards in any of the inland towns, they also enjoy a pension of two hundred and seventy roubles, or sixty pounds sterling, for four years.

YET hitherto great advantages have not been reaped from an institution so laudable, and so well calculated to make the fine arts flourish. The most part of the students make great progress, while they continue in the academy; several even complete themselves in foreign countries, but the most eminent often settle abroad, or if they return home, they soon fall into that indolence, which seems characteristic of the nation. The cause perhaps depends on the little encouragement they receive in Russia. The sovereign may form artists, and rear them by force of expence, like foreign plants, but

unless the same kindly care be taken of these plants till they come to maturity, they languish for want of culture. But it is impossible for the best disposed monarch, or any nobleman, who may be eager to imitate so good an example, to diffuse a taste for the arts in a nation, which is not yet capable of judging, or forming a just estimation of them. From the moment that artists of merit are not distinguished nor employed, they not only cannot possess that emulation, which is the soul of their professions, but even cannot acquire the necessary means of subsistence.

THE free Oeconomical society, established at St. Peterburg for the advancement of agriculture, is an institution too important, and too useful to be passed over in silence. The following was the occasion of its foundation.

ONE day at table, the present Empress expressed herself, with great force, on the advantages, that would result from a society of this kind. Count Alexis Orloff, surnamed Tcheshmenski, from his victory over the Turks at Tcheshme, like an attentive courtier, who considers the wishes of Majesty, as so many mandates; Count Orloff, who was among the guests, from that moment formed the resolution of executing what his august mistress wished for; and in concert with fourteen persons of rank and knowledge, convened an assembly in June 1765, which

which drew up the regulations and fixed on the form of a regular and permanent agricultural society. This plan was presented to Catharine II. who made this answer, written with her own hand.

“The design, that you have formed for the encouragement of Agriculture and Oeconomy, is extremely agreeable to us, and your exertions are a proof of your zeal and love for your country. We consider your plan and rules as worthy of our approbation, and we allow your society to assume the title of. *The Free Oeconomical Society.* We not only consent that you should use our arms, but to express our good wishes in the most explicit manner, we allow you to take for a seal, a hive in the middle of our Imperial arms, to which bees are carrying honey, with these words for a motto. *For utility.* Moreover we grant to your society, six thousand roubles (£ 1333: 6: 8.) to enable you to purchase a house, either for holding your meetings, or making a collection of books on agriculture: Your labours will prove extremely advantageous to you and your posterity, and will enhance our regard for you, in proportion to the zeal, you shall employ.”

October 21, 1765. (See *id.*) CATHARINE.

This society is composed of a president, who is changed every four months, and of an unlimited number of members. The conditions for admission,

are proposed by three members, and rejected or admitted by a plurality of voices. It is supported chiefly by the voluntary contributions of its members, many of whom are distinguished equally by fortune and rank. In the year 1789 the total number was two hundred and eight.

THE assembly sits once a week and hears essays read on agriculture and the subjects connected with it. Such as are judged worthy of being published, are printed at the expence of the Empress, and the profits of the sale revert to the society. But the work is sold at a very cheap rate. Twelve copies are sent to the Governors of each province for distribution. These essays are written in the Russian language, and appeared at first under the title of *Treatises of the Oeconomical Society*, in ten volumes, from the year 1765 till the 1775. This title has since been changed into, *Continuance of Treatises*, &c. and instead of being published three times a year, a few volumes only are occasionally published. Since these changes, the first volume appeared in 1779, and the second in 1780. In 1789 there were eleven. The society distributes premiums annually, consisting of gold and silver medals, or a sum of money sometimes equivalent to six hundred roubles (£ 133 : 0 : 5.) to those, who have most ably discussed the questions, which the society has proposed.

THERE

THERE are at St Petersburg two foundations for the education of the nobility. One called the Corps of Cadets, the other named the Convent of Young Ladies.

THE building occupied by the Land Cadets, was in former times the palace of Prince Menzikoff. It now stands in Vassili-Ostrof, and is one of the most beautiful edifices in St Petersburg. The number of persons lodged there, including cadets, is at least two thousand. This institution is indebted to the Empress Anne and to the counsels of Marshal Munich, for its first foundation; but it has been much improved, and its funds have been considerably augmented by Catharine II. who may be considered as its founder. Its annual revenue is a hundred and thirty five thousand roubles (£ 30,000 sterling) and has accommodation for six hundred, sons of noble families, among whom, there are sixty boys of inferior rank, destined to be the tutors of children of family; and here receive an education suitable to their destination. The sons of noblemen must enter into the national service, and are almost all in uniform: some of them are designed for a civil line. They are admitted at the age of six, say sixteen years, and are arranged in five classes. They are taught French, English, Dutch, Arithmetic, Fortification, Tactics, History, Geography, Dancing, the Use of Arms, Riding, sometimes Draw-

ing

ing and Music. Those, who show a disposition for study, learn the Latin and Tartar languages.

THEY are divided into a certain number of companies, and are regularly exercised. In summer they are encamped for six weeks in the neighbourhood of the city. Premiums are distributed among those, who excel, either in their exercises or in their studies. These premiums consist of books, gold and silver medals, ribbons, stars, &c. Whoever has won a prize six times, travels into foreign countries, with a pension of six hundred roubles.

THEY are brought up in a very hardy manner. No fur cloathing is allowed them, even in winter. They use fives very moderately, and are accustomed to all kinds of exercise, especially running and leaping. Mr Betskoi, who is the director of this institution, for the education of these young people has adapted the gymnastic system laid down by Rousseau in his *Emilius*; and they are so nimble, that it is a pleasure to see them perform the feats, which our rope-dancers would not do better than they. For instance they leap in all directions upon a leather horse, of which the highest part is at least six feet, and perform on this machine every thing, that we have seen done by the Ashleys in their riding school. Their exercises give them the free use of their bodies, open the chest, and make them strong and active. In the different departments of
thi

this house great attention is paid to neatness, and the young people enjoy excellent health.

ONCE or twice every winter the cadets are permitted to give a masquerade and a ball to the principal nobility. On this occasion some of the young ladies, at the school for the daughters of the nobles, are invited to dance, with the cadets of the higher classes. We were present at one of these entertainments, where we remarked as much elegance and order as decorum.

THE cadets also act a play, and sometimes with more success, than the comedians of the palace. They supply the female characters in a manner quite grotesque, when it is not ridiculous. Tickets for these kind of plays, are not easily procured, because a crowd always resorts thither, and the palace gentry engross them.

THE convent for the daughters of nobles stands at the extremity of the suburbs of Alexander Neufki. The house is a large square building, which the Empress caused be raised for a convent. Catharine II. has wisely employed it for the present institution, to which she has assigned an annual revenue of seventy thousand four hundred roubles (£ 15,644 sterling.) It was opened in the year 1764, for the admission of two hundred young ladies of quality, and two hundred and forty daughters of commoners.

THE Empress has since added fifty supernumeraries, who are all daughters of nobles and called boarders; and Mr Betkoi, the director of all these useful institutions for education, who was at St Petersburg during our stay there, generously supports forty commoners' daughters at his own expence. The young ladies are admitted at the age of five or six, and leave school at eighteen. Madam Lafond is the manager of this house. She is the widow of an old military gentleman, born in France, and brought into Russia in the hope of making a fortune there. The appointment of Madam Lafond is a proof that her husband has not been disappointed of his expectation. It is said this lady has many enemies, and that she brings them on herself by her pride.

In former times the young ladies, whether nobles or commoners, received the same education, without any difference, relating to their rank and fortune. This plan has been very prudently changed, and they are now brought up in a way more suitable to the situation, they may expect in life. This is a wise measure; for surely it is a very bad present made to a merchant, or any other person of the class of burghesses; that of a wife brought up with the airs of a fine lady, who must have a numerous suite of servants, and disdains to stoop to the domestic affairs of her family. Whether of noble or plebeian

plebeian birth, these boarders are divided into four classes, distinguished by the colour of their dresses, whereof that of the nobles is of finer quality, than that of the rest. If we approved of the difference in the education of these young ladies, we disapproved very much of the distinction of dress. It is an insult to those, to whom accident has not given noble birth, and it may have the worst of consequences.

ALL without distinction are taught to read, to write, to cypher, and the different kinds of needlework; but the daughters of nobles by themselves get lessons of history, geography, Russian grammar, and have masters for the French, German, English and Italian languages. They are also taught music, drawing and dancing. Instead of these lessons of amusement, the commoners are trained to the cares of a family. They themselves sew and wash their linen, and what our young citizen's daughters will not believe, or pretend not to believe: they are taught to bake and cook. This part of education qualifies them, at their return home, for the management of every minute circumstance connected with farms, where a sensible wife is so indispensably requisite.



PHILOSOPHICAL,
POLITICAL, AND LITERARY
TRAVELS

IN

R U S S I A,

DURING THE YEARS 1788 & 1789.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH

OF

CHANTREAU

WITH

A MAP AND OTHER PLATES.

VOLUME SECOND.

P E R T H :

PRINTED BY R. MORISON, JUNIOR,
FOR R. MORISON AND SON, BOOKSELLERS, FIFTH
AND
VERNON AND HOOP, BIRCHIN-LANE, LONDON.

1794.



CONTENTS

OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

- CHAP. I. Page 1. Environs of St Peterburg. Czarskoff's Monuments erected in the gardens of the palace in honour of the Counts Orloffs and Marthal Romanzoff Oranienbaum, built by Menzikoff. Particulars respecting this celebrated man, the companion and favourite of Peter I. Immense influence, which he possessed. Anecdotes. Menzikoff's fall under the Czar Peter II.
- CHAP. II. P. 17. Continuation of particulars respecting Menzikoff. He is arrested. Script of the orders, with which he is decorated. Sudden change that is produced on his person. He is banished to Rensenburg, and thence to Yakoutka, in the extremity of Siberia. He is five months on the road. Tells his wife. Character of this Lady. Menzikoff with his own hands digs the grave, in which she is laid. His arrival at Tobolsk. Humiliation. Interesting Anecdote. Menzikoff's fall in his exile. He loses his daughter. He dies. His children recalled. What becomes of Oranienbaum after his disgrace.
- CHAP. III. P. 25. Petersburg. Its gardens. Mampulsky, or the Dutch House. The mountain of sledges. Peter Moritzkin's house. Schmalzburg. Historical details. Anecdotes. Siege of the city. That of the castle. It is the battle of the Czar. Persons of mark, and of those, Maria, sister of Peter I. The Czar's Father-in-Law, Count Piper, minister to Charles XII. Prince Ivan.
- CHAP. IV. P. 39. Origin of Catherine I. The young Princess through which she is introduced to the Czar. She is made Empress. Her death. Precocious death of young Peter. The Czar's Son. An anecdote. The situation of the young Empress. Her husband. She accompanies the Czar on his expeditions. Her behaviour on the death of the young Peter. His fall and being put to death. Her death. Her grief on the young Peter's death.
- CHAP. V. P. 55. Intrigue, which is the subject of this chapter, after the death of her husband. Her death.

wish to exclude her. Menzikoff's party prevails, and Catharine is proclaimed. Menzikoff reigns under her name. Death of this princess. Her character. Anecdotes of her brother.

CHAP. VI. P. 75. Particulars respecting Alexis Petrovitch, son to Eudoxia. Education of this prince. Character given of him by Bruce. His manners. Imprudent acts. Flight to Naples. Return to Russia. His trial. Condemned to death by Peter. Tragical end of his confidants. Punishment of Gleboff. Particulars respecting Princess Sophia, wife to the Czarovitch. Her misfortunes, and death. A fabulous story made on her.

CHAP. VII. P. 90. Peter III. His marriage with Catharine. Children born of them. Dislike at one another. Dependance, in which Elizabeth keeps young Peter. He fixes his residence at Oranienbaum. Regiment that he forms there. He prefers foreigners to Russians. Attempts to alienate Elizabeth's affection from him. Elizabeth dies. Peter ascends the throne. Exiles recalled from Siberia. Biren. Munich. Particulars and anecdotes of this General. Lestocq. Count de Hordt. Particulars respecting the latter.

CHAP. VIII. P. 105. Administration of Peter III. He makes peace with the king of Prussia. His reform. Murmurs excited by them. His imprudence. Particulars of this Czar's private life. Of Catharine his wife. Of the Countess of Woronzoff, Peter's mistress.

CHAP. IX. P. 120. Peter III. forms the plan of confining Catharine. A party is formed to save this princess, and raise her to the throne. She consents. The revolution effected. The troops and senate declare in her favour. She is proclaimed Empress of the Russias. Irresolution and pusillanimity of Peter III. He wishes to enter into an accommodation. His proposals are not listened to. He wishes to fly to Constatadt. He is refused admittance. His despair. He abdicates the crown, and delivers himself up into the hands of Catharine. He is carried to Rottcha where he dies.

CHAP. X. P. 132. Impostors, who give themselves out for Peter III. Pagarichaw is the most famous among them. His rebellion. He raises a commotion among the Cossacs.

CONTENTS.

Cossacs of the Jaik. Why they are dissatisfied. An anecdote. Pugatshew's success. His hypocrisy. His atrocities. His marriage. He is defeated by Prince Galitzin. He appears again in the country. New ravages. Death of the unfortunate Lowitz. Count Panin marches against Pugatshew, who is defeated. He is abandoned by his own men. He is executed at Moscow. Catharine II. repairs the mischiefs he had done.

CHAP. XI. P. 162. Details respecting the unfortunate Iwan III. He is dethroned by Elizabeth. Anecdotes. He is brought up in a fortress, and transferred from prison to prison. At the age of sixteen he is confined in Schlüsselburg. How he is treated. Elizabeth sees him, and converses with him. Effect, which this interview has on this prince. How Iwan is guarded at Schlüsselburg. Person of this prince. His intellectual faculties. His character. Visit paid him by Peter III. Particulars of this interview. Peter mitigates his lot. He wishes to restore him his liberty. The courtiers dissuade him from this intention.

CHAP. XII. P. 175. Mirowitsch, a Russian officer, forms the extraordinary project of delivering Iwan III. His motives. Means of accomplishing his design. He bribes several soldiers of the prince's guard. He employs force to win at his room. The officers entrusted with the charge of Iwan resolve to massacre him, rather than deliver him to Mirowitsch. Impression, which Iwan's corpse make upon him. He surrenders himself a prisoner. Is tried—and executed. Accounts respecting Iwan's family. Character and description of Anne, Iwan's mother. Fortresses, to which this family is successively transferred. Treatment, which they experience. Anne's death. That of her husband. Catharine II. takes care of their children.

CHAP. XIII. P. 191. Departure from St. Peterburg on our way to Moscow. Preparations for this journey. Highways. Villages. Peasants' huts. Accounts of the people in the country. Their way of living. Post-houses. Difficulty in procuring fresh horses. What is the cause of it. Way of obviating this inconvenience.

CHAP. XIV. P. 200. Arrival at Novogorod. Historical accounts of this city. It becomes a democratic republic.

- How it loses its liberty. Description of this city. Bonitza-Gorod. Views. Monastery of Iwerskoi. Vishnei Volofchok. Canal, to which this city gives its name. Twer. Descriptions. Humane institutions of Catharine II. Commodities and commerce of Iwer.
- CHAP. XV. P. 217. Moscow.—History of this city. Its situation. Its population. Contrasts it presents. Its divisions. The Kremlin. Khitai-Gorod. Beloi-Gorod. Zemlionoi-Gorod. The sloboda or suburbs. The Moscow. The palace. Particular descriptions. The churches. Inside of a Greek church. Enormous bells.
- CHAP. XVI. P. 232. Religious houses, situated in the Kremlin. Viefnowitshoi. St Michael the Archangel's cathedral. Burying place of the Czars. Grave of Iwan Basilowitsch I. That of Iwan Basilowitsch II. Sovereignty of the Romanoffs. Michael Federowitsch. Fedor his son. Alexis Federowitsch, father to Peter I. Particulars of this prince. His clemency. His marriage with the beautiful Natalia Cyrillowna.
- CHAP. XVII. P. 247. Church of the Assumption. Morosoff, Governor and Minister to Alexis. He receives a terrible lesson from the people. Its consequences. Burial of the Patriarchs. Job. Philarethes. History of Nikon.
- CHAP. XVIII. P. 257. Commerce carried on at Moscow. Market of houses. Foundling hospital. Account of this institution. Monastery of Troitskoi. Saint Sergius its founder. Account of this Monk. Description of the Monastery. Tomb of Mary, Queen of Livonia. That of Boris Godonow. Account of this Prince.
- CHAP. XIX. P. 271. Departure from Moscow. Forest of Wolkonki. Villages. Peasants. Their cottages. Roads. Posts. Viatina. Dogorobusch. Smoleniko. Description of this town. Lady. Tolitzin. Entry into Poland.
- CHAP. XX. P. 280. Philosophical accounts of the Tartar tribes subject to Russia, but little known. The Barschkarians. The Burattians. The Czuwachians. The Kaliums. The Cossacs. The Mongols. The Mordwans. The Ostiacs. The Sameicides. The Tungusians.

PHILOSOPHICAL, POLITICAL,

AND

LITERARY

TRAVELS IN RUSSIA,

DURING THE YEARS 1788 & 1789.

CHAP. I.

EXTERIORS of St. Petersburg.—Gzarkofels.—Monuments erected in the gardens of the palace in honour of the Counts Orloffs and Marshal Romanzoff.—Oranienbaum, built by Menzikoff.—Particulars respecting this celebrated man, the companion and favourite of Peter I.—Immense influence, which he possessed.—Anecdotes.—Menzikoff's fall under the Czar Peter II.

WE have, in the former volume, laid before our readers all the most important facts connected with the government of Russia, and the different institutions, which owe their existence to the Czar Peter I. and to the celebrated Empresses, who succeeded him, and appeared to have sat on the throne, solely for the purpose of ex-

tending and improving the plans, which Peter had only been allowed to sketch; for the legislator, who has rescued his country from barbarism, and given it laws, with the view of diffusing knowledge and civilization through all its parts, has been engaged in nothing but a beautiful dream, if time and circumstances rear not a stately and solid edifice on the foundation he had laid.

We are now going to give an account of the different excursions we made in the neighbourhood of St Petersburg, before we took final leave of this capital. The places we visited, independent of what has been already narrated, would be capable of giving an advantageous idea of the Russian monarchs; these were Czarko-felo, Oranienbaum, Petershoff, and Schluffelburg, which are so many palaces, or country-houses, whither the Czars retire to enjoy a little respite from the toils of government, or throw off the yoke of court etiquette, equally heavy and fatiguing: a yoke, which in spite of all that has been done by Peter, by Catharine I. Anne, and Catharine II. to banish it, continues yet at St Petersburg what it was at the court of the proud Charles V. and his haughty successors, who at this day have even the arrogance to make their domestic laws, while they serve them. It is not rules that destroy etiquette; it is opinion, which is in-
 formed, or contents to be informed by reason.

CZARCO-SELO is an Imperial palace about twenty wersts from St Peterfburg, and the favourite residence of the Empress in summer. There she lives in a more retired manner, than when at Petershoff; another house, of which we shall take notice in a little. This palace, built by Elizabeth, is of brick done over with plaister and white stucco. Its length is out of proportion, and its architecture is as heavy as tasteless. The principal pilasters, the front ornaments, the statues, which support the cornice, are of wood, as well as those intended to ornament the roof. This is all gilt, and the immense gilding gives to the whole, not a grand, but dull and awkward appearance. The rooms, which are large and magnificent, are furnished in the old fashion, and their magnificence is equally tasteless and insignificant. Those, which are more modern, and have been furnished by the present Empress, are less sumptuous and done with more taste; but they discover the age of the royal proprietor, by the fashion of the furniture, which has been at least thirty years out of date. We were shown a very handsome *Boudoir*. There is a room richly incrusted with amber, sent in a present from the king of Prussia, that generally excites admiration.

THE gardens of Czarko-selo are in the English style, and agreeably diversified by meadows, woods, and waters. Among several bridges, which you

frequently meet with, you are struck in particular with the view of one built on the model of the bridge of *Palladio*, which is so much admired in England, at a country seat belonging to the Earl of Pembroke. That of Czarko-felo is still more magnificent, because the lower part is of granite, and the colonnades of marble. This marble was cut and carved in Siberia, by an Italian artist, who wrought there nine years. From Siberia it was brought by water to St Peterfburg, and thence to Czarko-felo by land.

This marble has then been placed in its present situation only by force of roubles; but this expence, which wou'd be foolish in a private individual, is not so in an Empress; because she displays her munificence, and makes money circulate among those, who acquire it only by the sweat of their brows, and surely this is much preferable to the gorging of selfish courtiers.

Divers monuments are interspersed through the gardens of Czarko-felo, and some of them designed to do honour to persons, who have distinguished themselves in the service of her Majesty. The first of this kind is the arch erected in honour of Prince Orloff, for having gone to Moscow to check the progress of the plague, which was then desolating that city; an action truly heroic, and more meritorious, than that of having been engaged in conquering

quering a province. The second is an obelisk erected to the glory of Marshal Romanzoff to perpetuate the memory of his victories over the Turks. The third is a monument dedicated to Count Alexis Orloff, with a Latin and Russian engraving on brass of his celebrated victory at *Tchefme*, in the year 1769, which proved the ruin of the Ottoman fleet, committed to the flames by the victorious Orloff, to whom the Empress gave the surname of *Tchefmenfki*, (Conqueror at *Tchefme*) as in ancient Rome that of *Africanus* was given to Scipio.

The palace of Oranienbaum, which we saw after Czarko felo, is situated on the sea coast, thirty six werfts from St Peterburg. It was built by Menzikoff, when he enjoyed a degree of grandeur, at which a subject seldom arrives. The origin of this favourite is differently reported. Some say that he was an apprentice to a pastry cook. Others make of him a small-pye-merchant, that walked the streets of Moscow; and this is the most probable opinion, and adopted by Weber, Maftein, and Bruce. According to these authors, Peter having stopt to prattle with young Menzikoff, was so struck with his vivacity and smart repartees, that he took him into his service, and made him rise quickly to the summit of his greatness. Others affirm that he was son to a servant about court, and that accident placed him near the person of the Emperor. But all these tales are unworthy

unworthy of credit, and it was Baron Lefort, who placed him with Peter. This foreigner, who had to combat the hatred of the Russian lords, who could not forgive him for enjoying the prince's favour to their exclusion, and also charged him with the innovations he suggested; this very Lefort was well pleased to have a man near the Czar, at his devotion, who giving no offence to his enemies, could serve him as a spy, as often as his own engagements removed him from the Emperor. Young Menzikoff was so much the fitter for this character, as he possessed an inexhaustible fund of humour, and was admitted into the highest families of Moscow, like a sort of buffoon, amusing companies with burlesque songs, which the courtiers were weak enough to repeat in the very antichambers of the palace. Peter also was entertained with the humour of young *Alexajchka* *, repeated his songs, and was accustomed to see him, because Lefort was continually pointing him out. At length he took him into his service, admitted him into his most intimate confidence, which he shared with Lefort, till the death of this officer, and possessed alone during the life of the prince.

THE first date of Menzikoff's fortune was the raising of that company of fifty young Russians, which
after

* Menzikoff was called Aknis, of which the diminutive is Alexajchka.

after Lefort's plan, Peter clothed, armed, and disciplined after the German manner, and which afterwards became the regiment of guards, called Preobaschenskoi. Lefort, who was colonel of this company, made Menzikoff be admitted into it, and soon after his admission, made him go through his exercise under the prince's windows, who was charmed with him, and from that moment swore he would attach him to himself. It must be remarked, that the prince, who formed this resolution, was only fifteen years of age, and expressed no wishes, but those inspired by Lefort, who for the happiness of the Russians, was a man endowed with the rarest qualities, and worthy of modelling the prince, after whom so many others ought to copy. What tended most to confirm Peter's attachment to Menzikoff, was the conformity of age, and the passive devotion of the latter for his master; for Menzikoff then and ever after, distinguished himself always by the zeal, with which he proceeded to whatever could please the Czar. In his plans of reform especially, he afforded him the greatest assistance, either by taking the execution upon himself, or removing such obstacles, as might thwart them, which the Boyards, attached to their old prejudices, found means to raise up; or by kindly receiving and caressing, especially under the eyes of his master, the

foreigners, whom this prince had drawn to his court, and Menzikoff had the address to fix there.

FROM the moment that he had been placed by Peter, Menzikoff, by the advice of Lefort, had applied himself to study his master's character, to bend himself to it without reserve, and to bear without a murmur, not only the disagreeable follies of Peter's violent and impetuous temper, but even patiently endure the worst of treatment. His obedience therefore was always that of a devoted slave, who joins the most rigid punctuality to the most literal execution of the orders he receives. Even the office of Hangman he did not decline, when Peter ordered him to discharge it, at the time of the rebellion of the Strelitz, in the year 1688. In Peter's presence, Menzikoff cut off the heads of twenty of the principal conspirators, and reckoned it an honourable office. Peter quoted him, as an example worthy of imitation, to the Boyards, who refused to assist at these executions.

MENZIKOFF by his ability as a statesman and warrior also, won the confidence and esteem of Peter. During the campaign 1695, he was always at his side, and assisted the prince greatly in the conquest of Azoff. In the year 1697 he saved his life. Some Russian lords and fanatic priests had formed a conspiracy against the Czar. Menzikoff in disguise had introduced himself among the conspirators.

tors. He finds means of withdrawing himself without being noticed, goes and calls on Peter, who is at Lefort's, amusing himself, informs him of the risk he runs, and of the place where the conspirators are assembled. Peter goes thither in force and surprizes them, causes them to be executed, and returns to his amusement.

MENZIKOFF accompanied Peter on these travels, on which so many truths and falsehoods have been written, and was made a prince of the Holy Empire in the year 1706: from that time he rose rapidly to the first dignities of the civil and military orders. On some occasions he was even permitted to represent his Sovereign, by giving public audiences to ambassadors, whilst Peter, disdaining the pageantry of royalty, appeared in his train like a plain individual. In short the ascendancy, which this favourite had acquired over the Emperor, which Catharine supported with all her influence, was carried so far, that it was believed among the weak, credulous Russians, that Menzikoff had thrown a spell over the mind of his master.

It is a fact that this favourite incurred the Czar's resentment twenty times, and as often calmed it with a single word. He seemed to hold in his hands the springs, which moved this fiery but elevated soul. One day the Czar threatened to ruin him. *Very well, Peter, & but will you do it?* said the minister

to him, *You will destroy your own work*, and this expression appeased the Czar. Yet when Peter returned from his campaign in Persia, Menzikoff, who was not ignorant of the just grounds of complaints, that had been formed against him, fell from an excess of boldness and security, into despondency and despair, and, for this once, he thought himself undone. He did not show himself before the Emperor at the time of his arrival at St Petersburg; He continued in his palace on the banks of the Neva, pretending bad health; and either to support his excuses, or because fear and uneasiness had really made him sick, he was in bed, when the Czar's visit was announced to him, and this redoubled his fears. The Prince had crossed the Neva, had come without any attendants and without giving Menzikoff any notice of his coming. He sat down on the bolster of his bed. Menzikoff did not dissemble that his real distress was the mortal anguish, into which his master's resentment, which he had deserved, was throwing him. He did not attempt to excuse himself, he confessed himself criminal, and appeared only to wait for the severest chastisement. This confession affected Peter, who besides had undoubtedly taken his resolution, when he determined to visit him, whom he might have punished. *Alexajekka*, said he to him in a friendly tone, take courage, you have committed a great fault,

fault, you have almost ruined my country; but I cannot forget that you have saved it, and that I am indebted to you for my life and my empire.

NOTWITHSTANDING all this, after the affair of Stettin, Menzikoff thought he was on the point of receiving the chastisement, which his conduct on that occasion had justly merited; but the danger he had then brought himself into was a ground of humiliation for his enemies. The following is the fact. In the year 1713 he was besieging Stettin, the capital of Pomeriana, and was on the eve of taking it, when seduced by the intrigues of Baron Goerts, particularly by * four hundred thousand livres which he received, he consented to deliver up this place to the King of Prussia, Frederick William I. upon some vain promises, that were never realised. Stettin since that time, has remained in the possession of Prussia, and the country, which it commands, is the most beautiful part of Pomeriana. Peter was irritated, and Menzikoff, who was not ignorant of this, but knew the character of his master, formed a very singular plan of defence, and when he came home observed a line of conduct still more extraordinary. He retired to his palace, and went not to court. The Czar made him be asked, why he came not thither; He answered proudly, that it was not the practice for persons, who returned home, to make the first visit. Peter more pro-

* £ 1,000,000, nearly.

voked than ever, collected some Russian Lords known to be enemies to Menzikoff, bid them follow him, telling them that they were now to see, if he knew how to humble a guilty and insolent subject. He goes to Menzikoff's house, loads him with reproaches, behaving with all the violence of which he was master, being almost ready to beat him. Menzikoff intreats him to be kind enough to hear him in private; and with great difficulty obtains a hearing. He passes into a small room, and then assumes a firmer tone. *You love glory, says he, and I thought I was serving you. Charles, your rival has given kingdoms; I wanted you to do greater things than Charles, and one of your subjects to give away provinces; an honour, which never happened to any prince, but you. Is not this much more valuable than a possession so distant from your dominions, which you would not have been able to keep?* Peter, naturally struck with whatever was great, (yet this was only romantic) was very much astonished at this answer, and after the first impression, Menzikoff had no difficulty in persuading him of whatever he chose. The Czar went out, holding him by the hand, in the sight of all those, who were expecting a very different spectacle. Menzikoff, triumphant, accompanied his master to the ship, which was waiting for him on the Neva. Peter went on board alone. Then Menzikoff gave orders, that all those, who had come to be witnesses

ses of his humiliation, should attend him back to his lodging; an honour they owed to the man, who was the first in the empire next to the Czar. None durst refuse, because they were afraid of his power, and still more of his vengeance, which was terrible. It was that of a courtier, who durst attempt any thing whatever.

AT the death of Peter I. Menzikoff's power became still more unlimited. Catharine I. who owed her elevation to the throne, to the intrigues, and activity of this minister, out of gratitude gave up to him the reins of her empire, and was only ostensible sovereign; while it was Menzikoff alone, who reigned in reality, and at his pleasure. His authority therefore continued good till the death of Catharine, who with a view to confirm it more, gave orders in her will that Peter II. her successor, should marry Menzikoff's daughter. Is not this clause a complete proof of the favourite's ascendancy over his mistress, and also of her gratitude?

BUT heaven ordered things quite otherwise. The intrigues, despotism, arrogance, and disrespectful conduct of Menzikoff towards Peter II. changed the face of affairs, and hurled this favourite from the summit of greatness into the most abject humiliation. The circumstances of his disgrace are related in Manstein's memoirs, a work of some character, to which its accuracy and impartiality will entitle

it. Yet we think we will do an office acceptable to our readers if we lay before them a particular account of the different causes, which operated the downfall of this celebrated man, and of the engines, which his enemies put into motion, in order to accomplish it.

PRINCE Dolgorouki and Count Ostermann were the implacable enemies of Menzikoff. Both of them employed all the manoeuvres of intrigue for the purpose of ruining him, and their success was the greater, as Menzikoff did not at all suspect them. Dolgorouki, in particular, to much cunning joined a degree of dissimulation, of which Menzikoff did not think him capable; and Count Ostermann, from the time that he quarrelled with this minister in council, affected to wish to live retired, from public affairs. Menzikoff had taken young Peter to Petershoff, to give him a few days amusement in hunting, or rather to keep him entirely in his power. Count Ostermann being informed of this excursion, considered it the most favourable conjuncture, he could wish, for the execution of the plot he had laid for overthrowing Menzikoff. He waited on all the senators and principal officers of the Guards, disclosed to them his intentions, and found them animated with sentiments exactly correspondent to his own. Every one of them said, he was ready to sacrifice his fortune and life to rid his country of such

such an odious tyrant, as Menzikoff. He then prescribed the rule of conduct they were to observe. He had taken care to advise Prince Dolgrouki of his measures, and success. He had given him to understand that if he and his son were successful in preventing the marriage, which the Emperor was on the way of being forced to conclude, the least recompense Dolgorouki might expect was, to see his own daughter occupy the place of Menzikoff's. Osterman added, "*that he knew it was the object of his ambition, and it only depended on himself, to see it successful with so much the more ease, as it was the wish of the nation, and as his illustrious birth rendered his pretensions as legitimate as reasonable.*" The Dolgorouki are one of the first families of the Empire, and are sprung from that Wolodimer, who invited the followers of Christ into his country.

WHETHER Count Ostermann spoke sincerely or not to Prince Dolgorouki, his words had the effect he wished and expected. The latter flattered with the hopes of seeing his daughter raised to the throne of Russia, promised to do every thing required of him. The sole difficulty now consisted in engaging the Czar to escape from the vigilance of Menzikoff, who did not allow him to remain a moment out of his sight. Young Dolgorouki was fixed on to make the proposal to Peter. He was the Czar's only companion in his amusements, the on-

ly confident of his sorrows, and slept every night in the same room with him. This intimacy gave him an opportunity of knowing the young monarch's disposition towards Menzikoff. Young Dolgorouki promised to deliver the prince into the hands of the Senate, and in the execution of this plan displayed the prudence, which is generally the fruit only of age matured by experience. He concerted measures with Ostermann, who on his part acted with so much address, that the senate was to be assembled, as it were by accident, at some distance from Petershoff. When the night appointed for putting the plot in execution was come, young Dolgorouki seeing that all was quiet, came to the Emperor's bed side, and proposed to him to deliver himself, by a speedy flight, from the slavery, in which Menzikoff kept him. Peter, who was undoubtedly already prepared to take this step, dressed himself in haste, went out at a window along with his favourite, and they together crossed the garden by favour of the darkness. So soon as they got on the outside of the wall, they were received by a great number of noblemen, who were waiting for them, and by whom they were conducted to the place, where the senate was assembled. Without stopping to deliberate, they set out straight for St Petersburg, in order to be at the greater distance from Menzikoff.

C H A P. II.

CONTINUATION of particulars respecting Menzikoff.—
He is arrested.—Stript of the orders with which he is decorated.—Sudden change that is produced on his person.—He is banished to Renneburg, and thence to Yakoufka, in the extremity of Siberia.—He is five months on the road.—Loses his wife.—Character of this Lady.—Menzikoff with his own hands digs the grave, in which she is laid.—His arrival at Tobolsk.—Affronts.—Humiliation.—Interesting Anecdote.—Menzikoff's life in his exile.—He loses his daughter.—He dies.—His children recalled.—What becomes of Oranienbaum after his disgrace.

NEXT day, when the servants entered into the chamber of the prince, and saw he had made his escape, they ran to inform the minister, who was yet buried in sleep. By this piece of news, he learned the danger, which threatened him, and continued sometime, as it were, overpowered with the blow he had received. His hopes however to be revived, because he thought he still had some friends.—How counsellers impose on themselves! He rose and set out immediately for St Petersburg. Imagining the power was yet in his hands, he was meditating the most cruel vengeance against those who had carried off the monarchy; but measures were

too well taken, and his ruin too sure. When he wished to go to the palace, he saw the guard was changed, and the garrison was under arms. He continued to advance, but was repulsed with menaces. Then assured of his destruction, he turned towards his own palace, but no more found on his way that crowd of courtiers, who had been accustomed to surround him. The storm had already dispersed them, as it disperses timid doves; and scarcely had he entered his hotel, when he saw himself surrounded with grenadiers. The officer, who commanded them, advanced, and ordered him to be arrested in the name of the Emperor. He imagined, what is customary with all discarded favourites, that if he saw his sovereign, he might again get into favour, and recover his authority; but the answer he received, was an order to depart for Renneburg. This was a considerable estate that belonged to himself. This order deprived him of all hopes, and showed the certainty of his ruin. He in the midst of his grief, exclaimed: *I have committed great crimes, but is it the Emperor's part to punish me for them?* These words were remarked by all who were present, and confirmed the suspicions he was under respecting the death of Catherine I. Some respect was shown to him that day. The officer who was appointed to guard him, told him that the Emperor gave him permission to carry with him his most valuable

luable effects, and to be attended by as great a number of servants as he chose. He was imprudent enough to wish to display before the public eye, a pomp, which was unbecoming his present, and would have been unupportable in every other situation. He spent the rest of the day in making preparations for his journey. He was carried off next day at noon, in order to gratify the people with the sight of his humiliation. Some even say, that he himself wished to set out at this hour, because he thought the sympathy of the spectators would reach the monarch. His outset resembled a pompous procession, rather than the departure of a man disgraced. He and his family were in one of the most splendid carriages. His other carriages, of which the number was considerable, followed him. His baggage, servants, and horses formed a numerous train. He affected to salute all, who were in the windows, on the right and left hand. If, in the croud of people, that flocked about him, he noticed any person whom he had occasion to know, he named him, and bade him farewell.

THIS pompousness which Menzikoff had affected even in his disgrace, gave too great advantage to his enemies, for them not to profit by it. To the view of the young monarch, they represented him as an ambitious man, whom nothing could humble: who, when prostrate on the ground, desired the arms

that had but overthrown him. They provoked the resentment of a young man, and it will be easily believed, they had little difficulty in raising it. Besides, Peter hated Menzikoff too bitterly, not to listen to and follow the counsels, which tended to ruin him. He dispatched a second detachment of grenadiers after him, and ordered the commanding officer to strip him of the badges of the orders of Russia, and even of those which he had received from foreign powers. At this act of degradation, Menzikoff became a new man.—His ambition and vanity left him. He appeared to be stript of these as if he had been relieved from cords, with which he had been bound; and becoming all at once as humble as firm, he appeared only a philosopher, ready to brave the vicissitudes of fortune. He answered the officer; *Take back these tokens of my foolish vanity. I have them all collected in this coffer, expecting well, that the first act of my humiliation would be to strip me of them. I should have had them on me, that this act might have been the more humiliating.* The orders, which the officer had received, did not rest there. He told him, he must alight from his coach, with his wife and children, and ride in waggons which he had brought for the purpose. *I am prepared for every thing,* Menzikoff again replied; *execute the orders that have been given you. The more you take from me, the fewer causes of uneasiness you will leave me.* *I only*

only pity those, who are to profit by these spoils. He alighted from his coach, and mounted into a little waggon, with a tranquillity, which equally astonished and affected all present. His wife and children mounted into other waggons. His equipage and servants were taken back to St Peterburg, and Menzikoff continued his route, without having the consolation of conversing with his wife and children. When accident gave him an opportunity of seeing them, he exhorted them to yield to the storm without desponding. The resignation inspired by philosophy and sound religious morality, which differ very little from one another, is of the greatest service in disgraces, and furnished him with sentiments calculated to confirm the courage of these unfortunate companions of his suffering.

In this way did Menzikoff arrive at Renneburg, which was rather a city than a village. The castle was magnificent. He had built fortifications, which rendered it capable of defence, and he had established a market or fair, which was held every year in the month of June. Thither the Tartars, the Cossacs, &c. brought commodities of all kinds. Menzikoff, in his dignity, feasted himself with the pleasure of leading there a philosophical life. Although removed from court the distance of a thousand wersts, he still appeared to his enemies, to be too near. They apprehended every thing from his intrigues.

trigues, and the creatures he had made. Their jealousy rose so high, that they advised the Czar to banish him to Yakoufka, which is in the extremity of Siberia, and more than six hundred wersts from the capital. He was allowed to take with him only eight servants. Before his departure, he was stripped of his clothes, and equipped in such a dress as the Russian peasants wear. His wife and his children were not treated with more delicacy. They were obliged to assume the same dress. Their gowns were of coarse stuff, covered with a pelisse. For a head-dress they had caps of sheep-skin. Princess Menzikoff, born with a delicate constitution, and accustomed to all the conveniencies and advantages of opulence, soon sunk under trouble and fatigue. She died on the road in the neighbourhood of Kasan. Her husband had the courage and resolution to exhort her to meet death, and she expired in his arms. This separation plunged him into the bitterest sorrow. In a beloved wife, for whom he had always possessed a friendship mixed with esteem, he lost his sweetest consolation. Natalia Arsenieff (this was her name) was descended of an illustrious family in Russia. Her beauty attracted the eyes of all, and her virtue, which had preserved itself un- sullied by the corruption of courts, and from the pride, which the splendor of her fortune might inspire, procured her the esteem of all who knew her

Her

Her memory is revered by the Russians. Her sister Barbara Arsenieff, who was as arrogant as Natalia was modest, contributed not a little to the disgrace of her brother-in-law, by offending some of the best families of St Petersburg by her haughtiness and insolence. Far from reproving her, the imprudent Menzikoff applauded her pride. He even answered Catharine I. who sometimes complained of her, that his sister-in-law was a model of greatness of soul.—How grossly was he mistaken?—Let us return to his unfortunate wife.

MENZIKOFF himself was obliged to perform the last offices to her. With his own hands he dug the grave, in which he laid her. It was in the very place, where she died. Scarcely did they give him time to shed tears over the grave of his unfortunate wife; they forced him to continue his route to Tobolsk, the capital of Siberia. The news of his approach had arrived before him, and the people there were waiting with impatience for the sight of a man in chains and degradation, under whose nod all Russia trembled but a short time before. On his arrival at this city, he was struck with the appearance of two Russian lords, who had been banished there during his administration. They had come out to meet him, and loaded him with abuse, while he was crossing the city on his way to the prison. Far from expressing any resentment, he said to one of them:

Your reproaches are just · I have deserved them. Gratify yourselves, since you can get no other revenge on me in the state, in which I am. I sacrificed you to my policy, only because your virtue and character were offensive to me. Turning to the other, he said to him ; I was altogether ignorant of you being in these places. Do not impute to me your misfortune. Doubtless you have had some enemies about me, who have taken me unawares, and obtained the order for your banishment. I have often asked why I did not see you. I received evasive answers, and I was too much occupied with public business to think on the affairs of individuals. However if you think that names will in any degree alleviate your suffering, you may load me with them.

A THIRD exile burst through the croud, and by a refinement of vengeance, covered the faces of Menzikoff and his daughters with mud.—*Ab ! it is at me,* cried the father, overcome with sorrow, *It is at me you ought to throw it, not at these unfortunate creatures, who have done you no harm.*

THE GOVERNOR, by Peter's orders, sent to him in his prison, five hundred roubles, to answer the demands of himself and his family. The unfortunate Menzikoff obtained leave to expend them in the purchase of whatever might be most necessary for him in the place of his banishment, to enable him to support the frightful misery, which was awaiting him. This precaution was taken for the com-
fort

fort of his children alone. For his own part, he was entirely resigned to the will of the Supreme Being, who supports in his disgrace, the man, who is capable of forgetting it, so far as it respects his fortune; but he could not, without shuddering, look at the deplorable fate of the unhappy victims of his faults. He bought saws, hatchets, and implements for cultivating the ground. He provided grain of all kinds, and salt meats, for the subsistence of his family, till the habitation he was going to possess, should be brought into a situation fit for supplying their wants. He also furnished himself with nets for fishing, and when all these purchases were made, he begged that the remainder of the money might be distributed among the poor people of that quarter.

THE space allowed him for staying at Tobolisk being expired, he was ordered to set out with his unfortunate family. They were put into a waggon without a cover, which was drawn only by one horse, sometimes by dogs. They were six months on their way from Tobolisk to Yakoutka, and during this long and painful journey, they were exposed to all the inclemencies of the external air, which is extremely cold in these climates; yet the health of none of them received any injury.

SOME days before he arrived at *Yakoutka*, he met with an occurrence which produced in him the highest emotion, and recalled the bitter remem-

brance of his disgrace. He and his family had alighted at the cottage of a Siberian peasant to take some repose, when he observed an officer of his acquaintance come in. He was returning from Kamtschatka, where he had been sent under the reign of Peter I. with a commission relative to the discoveries, which Captain Bering had been sent to make on the sea of *Amur*. This officer had served under Menzikoff, who recollected him at once, and saluted him by his name. The officer surpris'd to hear himself named in a country so distant, asked how he knew him, and who he was himself. *I am Alexander*, replied he, *I was very lately Prince Menzikoff*. The officer had left him at the court of Russia, in such an elevated and brilliant situation, that it appeared to him beyond all probability that it really was Menzikoff, whom he met in such a state of abjection. It seem'd more natural to think, that it was some peasant deprived of his reason. To undeceive him Menzikoff took him to a kind of window, which let in a little light into the cottage. The officer considered him for some time with an attention mix'd with astonishment; and at last thinking he recollected him, exclaimed quite confounded; *Ah, my Dear Prince, by what series of misfortunes has your Highness fallen into the deplorable state, in which I see you. Let us supersede titles, interrupted Menzikoff. I have already told you my name is Alexander.*

The

The officer, quite uncertain still, observing in the corner a young man tying the sole of his boots with cords, said to him in a low tone, and pointing to Menzikoff, *Who is that extraordinary man? It is Alexander, my father*, replied the young man aloud; *should you, who are under so many obligations to us, not know us in our misfortune?* Menzikoff, uneasy to hear his son answer with so much pride, ordered him to be silent. *Excuse*, said he, *the rudeness of this young man's humour: it is he, whom in his infancy you dignified to caress and dandle in your arms; these are his sisters, these are my daughters.* While uttering these words he showed the officer two young women, dressed like country girls, sitting at a table, and soaking some crusts of black coarse bread with milk in a wooden bowl. *This one*, added he, *had the honour of being betrothed to Peter II. our Emperor.*

This conversation and scene you may well believe, produced great astonishment in the officer who heard and saw them, but the name of Peter II. excited in him new surprise. Having been separated from Russia by an immense distance for four years, he was in the most absolute ignorance of all the events, which had changed the face of the empire. Menzikoff related them all, beginning with the death of Peter I. and ending with his own banishment. He announced to him, that he would find Dolgorouki and Ostermann at the head of the go-

vernment. You may tell them, added he; *in what a state you met me. Their hatred will be flattered with it. But assure them, that my soul is more free and calm than theirs, and than it ever was in the time of my prosperity.* Perhaps he said nothing, which was not very true, at least his external appearance did not contradict his sentiments. The officer could not see nor hear him without being much affected. With his tears he watered the hands of his old General, who was not a little moved with them, but shed none. He saw Menzikoff again mount his dull waggon, in the most deliberate manner, and for a long time, followed him with his eyes, uncertain whether he should pity or admire him most.

WHEN arrived at the place of his exile, Menzikoff occupied himself with the cares of providing for the wants of his children, and taking the precautions necessary to diminish the horror of their banishment. He began with clearing a pretty large space of ground, assisted by the eight servants, who had accompanied him. He sowed some seeds, which gradually furnished his family with pulse, thought on enlarging the cottage destined for him, and felled trees for building. His example encouraged his domestics, and in a short time he had constructed a house, large enough to lodge his children and attendants. This house consisted of an oratory and four rooms, of which he took the first to himself and his

his son, the second was occupied by his daughters, the third was allotted for his servants, and the fourth was kept as a store-room. His daughter who had been betrothed to Peter II. who was to have been the Czarina, and reign over all the Russias, undertook the charge of the kitchen; and the other daughter that of mending the clothes and washing the linen. Each of them was assisted by two servants, who did the hardest part of the work. Soon after his arrival, there were brought him a bull, four cows big with calf, a ram, and some ewes, together with great number of fowls to form a poultry yard. Menzikoff could not imagine to whom he was indebted for this favour, for during his prosperity he had not had the prudence to make a friend, who could relieve him in his distress. His children enquired when they returned to St Petersburg, but in vain. They learned only that this present had come across the deserts from Tobolsk.

EVERY morning the family repaired to the oratory, where Menzikoff said prayers. He renewed them at noon, evening and midnight. Misfortunes had made him devout, and his example, more than his orders, attracted every body to this pious exercise. The sweets of solitude had driven passions from his mind, and established tranquillity there, but it was sometimes disordered by remorse, and the sorrow
of

of seeing his children involved in misfortunes, of which he was the cause.

SCARCELY six months had elapsed since he came into this desert, when his oldest daughter was attacked with the small pox. He acted to her as nurse and physician. He had recourse to all the remedies he thought would prove salutary, but these, as well as all his cares were unavailing. His daughter every day was drawing nearer and nearer her end. He then quitted the office of physician, to assume that of priest, and encouraged her to meet death with fortitude. She submitted to it with that firmness, which sufferings and religion impart, and expired in the arms of her father. As soon as she was dead, he fixed his countenance stedfastly on her's, and watered it with his tears; then showing himself superior to grief, he said to his two remaining children; *learn of your sister how to die.* Afterwards in the middle of his servants he chanted the prayers, which the Greek Ritual has appointed for the dead, repeated them several times during the twenty four hours, caused her be buried in the oratory, which he had built, and marked to his children the place, where he himself wished to be interred. It was at her side. His son and his surviving daughter were seized with the same disease, and at the same time. He was multiplied, so to speak, gave them the same assistance, he had given to her, whom
he

he had so recently lost, but with more success, and they both soon recovered their health.

At last sorrows, still more than fatigue gradually undermined the health of Menzikoff. They were the more poignant, that he confined them all within himself, and showed nothing but firmness before his children, to prevent them from discovering all the horror of their situation. He sunk under his sufferings, was seized with a slow fever, which became the more dangerous, that he braved it for some time with a view to conceal from his son and daughter the state, in which he was. His strength was exhausted and he was obliged to keep in bed. Seeing himself near the moment, when he was to be for ever separated from his children, he called them to his bed-side, and addressed them in these words. It was his daughter, who repeated them, and adding that she has often had occasion to recall them to remembrance. *My dear children, I am bordering on my last hour. Death, of which I thought has been familiar to me, since ever I have dwelt here, would have nothing terrible to it to me, if I had it give an account to the Sovereign God, only of the time, which I have spent in this part of my life. Hitherto, my first children, your father has been preserved from corruption: you will give your souls of innocence better a life than I have done. It is*

return thither, only recall to mind the examples I have given you here.

THE firm tone, the calm manner, with which he delivered these words, made them think him yet far from his end. But to bid them his last adieu, he had summoned up all his strength, which forsook him, as soon as he had done speaking. He stretched out his hand to give his blessing to his children, and a slight convulsion carried him off.

THIS unfortunate family perished not in this horrible desert, which the recent loss they had sustained, must have rendered still more horrible. At the time of Anne's accession to the throne they were recalled to St Peterburg. The daughter was married to Gustavus Biren, brother to the Duke of Courland, and never forgot her residence at Yakoufka. The son was promoted in the army by the same Empress, and showed himself worthy of her favour. Menzikoff's grandson is at present a member of the Directing Senate, a Lieutenant General, a Knight of the Order of St George, and Aide-de-camp to Catharine II. We were assured that his behaviour is such, as will never compel him to end his days at Yakoufka.

At rnk Menzikoff's disgrace Oranienbaum was converted into a Marine Hospital; but Peter III. took it again into his possession, and made it his favourite residence. The middle of this edifice is the same
with

with that built by the favourite; and consists of two stories, which contain a number of small apartments, of which the most remarkable is that, which to this day is called Menzikoff's chamber. It is the same in which he slept. The wainscoting is painted black, and ingeniously executed. It is ornamented with cyphers of his names, and emblems of the orders, with which he was decorated. Hard by it is a hall with baths after the Turkish mode; which receives no light, but through a sort of garden-mat, which makes it more like a dungeon, than the baths of a great lord. The stove for warming this bathing house is placed with as much awkwardness as danger, and has not been repaired by any of these parasites, whom Catharine supports as artists, and who possess no other art but that of deceiving.

To the old edifice, Peter III. added wings, which are long buildings of one story, and more suitable to a farm than a palace. From this first part of the building, you go to the fortress, and on your way observe, with no small pleasure, a small model of a citadel, which Peter III. caused be made, when he was seized with a passion for military studies. It was to illustrate the lessons of fortification, which he received. This kind of fort, which is only a castle of cards, is surrounded with a fosse, and a rampart defended by bastions. Peter III. made it be constructed when he was only Grand Duke. In it

there is a building, that he called the Governor's house, but he possessed it commonly himself, and received in it only his officers and favourites, while the rest of his court was in the palace. At the side of this house were the caserns for a small garrison, which served as an amusement to the prince, and some wooden houses for the principal officers, with a small Lutheran chapel, where divine service was performed to the soldiers of Holstein, for whom the prince had a predilection. The Governor's house is a brick building, with seven or eight windows in front, and contains about eight small rooms. It remains exactly in the same state, in which Peter III. inhabited it. We were shown the furniture he had collected, and the bed in which he slept the night of his deposition. It was furnished with a white satin cover, and curtains of crimson and silver brocade; the tester was ornamented with red and white feathers. Adjoining to this room is a handsome closet, hung with light brown silk, on which are different figures embroidered by Catharine II. when she was only Grand Duchess.

From the fortrefs we were conducted to a large gallery of pictures, collected by Peter III. Among several portraits of this unfortunate prince, they show one, where the resemblance is striking. He is drawn in his Holstein uniform, his complexion is fair, and his hair is white, but there is no expres-
sion

nion in his features, and in his looks and face something effeminate is observable.

IN the garden there is a very elegant square building, erected by the Empress' orders, when she was Grand Duchess. It contains eighteen apartments, of which each is furnished in a different style in the Greek, Turkish, Chinese, &c. It stands in the middle of a very thick wood, and as the road to it is of a serpentine form, strangers do not observe it, till they are close upon it. The surprize, occasioned by this unexpected sight, has made the building get the name of *Ab! Ab!*

CHAP. III.

PETERSHOFF.—His gardens.—Monplaisir, or the Dutch House.—The mountain of sledges.—Prince Naritzkin's house.—Schlüsselburg.—Historical details.—Anecdotes.—Site of the city.—That of the castle.—It is the bastile of the Czars.—Persons of rank confined there.—Maria, sister to Peter I.—The Quarana Eudoxia, his first wife.—Count Piper, minister to Charles XII.—Biren.—Prince Ivan.

PETERSHOFF is ten wersts from Oranienbaum, and twenty six from the capital. This palace was begun by Peter I. in the year 1712, and finished

under the reign of Elizabeth. It stands on an eminence, and commands a grand and extensive prospect, comprehending Cronstadt, St Petersburg, the gulf and opposite coast of Carelia. It is splendidly furnished, and has a suite of rooms worthy of a sovereign. The hall of audience is ornamented with the portraits of the sovereigns of the house of Romanof. The most striking of them all, and justly so, is that of Catharine II. entering in triumph into the capital, on the night of the revolution, that placed her upon the throne. She is in a man's dress, the uniform of the guards, with a branch of oak in her hat. She rides a white horse, and has a drawn sword in her hand. This dress becomes her very well, because Catharine has always had a very masculine figure.

THE taste and beauty of the gardens of Petershoff, their numerous *Jet-d'eau*s, their wells, basins, cascades, parterres, &c. have often been extolled. They have been often compared to those of Versailles, and in certain respects they are very much superior; for at Versailles the waters play only on certain occasions, whereas at Petershoff they never have done. These gardens in their novelty, were very much admired in Russia, where they were a kind of enchanted spot, which bore a singular contrast to their wild orchards. Although these gardens are not to the taste of Catharine II. who possessed

less a rage for English gardens, she has respected the work of Peter, and has allowed them to remain as they were originally planned. Besides, her Majesty usually resides in summer at Czarko-felo, where the soil is managed in a manner more modern, and more to her taste.

IN the middle of a large basin at Petershoff, the eye is attracted by two gladiators, who are not armed in the ancient style, with a sword and buckler, but with a pair of pistols, which they are ready to discharge at one another. Their attitude is threatening, but it is not fire, but water, that issues impetuously from their pistols.

A PART of the garden lies between the palace and the sea, and among other buildings there is one on the shore, which merits particular attention, because it was the favourite retreat of Peter I. This house and the furniture it contains, having been scrupulously preserved, such as they were, may serve to give some idea of the simplicity in which this prince chose to live. Very soon after his return from Holland, he caused this house to be built, and directed it not only to be in the Dutch style, but besides, that it should bear the name of the Dutch house, although he sometimes gave it that of *Magnificence*, which has remained with it.

PETER was subject to fevers, and had persuaded himself, that the sea air suited his constitution.

When

When he resided in summer at Petershoff, the air of these extensive gardens appeared to him to be too close, and for that reason he wished to have a house, whose walls the waves of the sea should wash. This house is of bricks, of only one storey, and has an iron roof. The windows reach from the foot to the top of the house, which, joined to its long and low figure, gives it the appearance of a green-house. The habitable part consists of a saloon, and six small rooms, neatly and simply furnished. The chimney is ornamented with vases of curious porcelain, which Peter valued highly, because they were brought from China, at the time when the communication between that empire and Russia was first opened. The bed-chamber is small. A painted sail-cloth serves for a carpet. A camp bed without curtains, has nothing to distinguish it, but the bed-clothes. Two galleries and two rooms are ornamented with pictures from the Dutch and Flemish schools. There are several portraits of Peter himself, in the dress of *Master Peters*, working in the dock yard of Sardam, and also a portrait of his favourite mistress, the Pretty Dutch Girl.

IN the gardens of Petershoff there is also another very extraordinary building, called the *Mountain of Sledges*, or the *Flying Mountain*.

THE Flying Mountain is in the middle of an oblong square, formed by an open colonnade, with a flat

flat roof, and a balustrade designed for spectators. This colonnade is at least half a mile in circumference, and in the centre is the flying mountain, which extends almost from one side to the other. It is an wooden building, supported on pilasters, in its figure resembling an unequal surface, or a mountain with three tops of different heights, which, diminishing by degrees, form an intermediary space, like a valley. From the principal summit to the foot of the mountain is a road covered with planks, on which three parallel grooves are drawn for the following purpose. In the centre groove is set a little sledge or carriage with a seat for one person. This carriage descends from the first summit to the bottom with great rapidity. The velocity it acquires while descending, makes it ascend the second height; and in this way it continues, till it has reached the foot of the mountain, and the large square, on which it runs for some time on an even surface, and stops not till near the barrier at the extremity. Then it is again set on one of the side grooves, and drawn up by means of a capstan. A person, who has not been accustomed to this mechanical motion, thinks the amusemēt dangerous; but as the grooves are made in such a way as to keep the carriage in a proper direction, there is no danger of being overturned. On the top of the mountain there is an elegant room for the conveni-

ence of the people about court. There is also in the colonnade and on the roof, a place, that can accommodate several thousands of spectators.—Near the Flying Mountain is a spacious amphitheatre for exhibitions of tilting.

ON the road from Petershoff to St Peterburg at every step you meet with superb country-houses, among which Count Naritzkin's makes a distinguished appearance. It has extensive English gardens, and an infinite number of Chinese pavilions of the most genuine kind. They are entrusted to the care of several natives of China, whom their features render it impossible to mistake. We went through these gardens with inexpressible pleasure. We met with nothing, that surpassed their own native beauty, but the politeness of the owner, who welcomed us without state, and led us into his gardens, as one of his servants would have done, and without wearying us with minute relations and details, as all the proprietors of English gardens are accustomed to do.

SCHESSANSBURG is forty wersts from St Peterburg. The road is on the banks of the Neva, which runs rapidly in a broad channel of a serpentine form. Its banks, which are high and steep, are adorned with villages and villas, built here and there, and, as it were, suspended on the banks of
the

the river. Schluffelburg stands on both the banks, and contains about three hundred wooden houses, and two thousand eight hundred inhabitants. The fortress is built on a small island, formed by the river, where it issues from the lake Ladoga. Its breadth at this place is about six hundred fathoms, and its current very rapid.

The Russian Historians give the following accounts of this fortress. In the year 1324, the Great Prince Yuri Danilowitch built a fortress in the middle of this island, at the time of his expedition against Wiburg. It was called *Ovobok*, from the form of the island, which is like that of a nut. This fort was taken by Magnus King of Sweden, and its name being translated into the Swedish language, was called *Nutburg*. Some time after they inclosed the whole island with a wall and battlements, which are still remaining.

In the year 1722, Peter having approached the frontiers of Sweden with a considerable army, and made some unsuccessful attempts to take the present Prince Goltzin, Colonel of the Guards, with a select detachment, to make a small detachment. This officer, having transported his men and arms, landed near that quarter of the island, which projects over the bank of the river. Then he was received by the Swedes, with some cannon, and his troops were to severely handled that they were

cluded the assault was impossible, and sent orders for his men to retire. These orders Galitzin refused to obey, and animating his troops by his voice and example, led them on again to the assault, scaled the walls, and took the fortress. Peter was so struck with this brilliant action, that when he saw Galitzin, he said to him; *Ask of me any thing you please, but Moscow and Catharine.* The prince with a magnanimity, which does the greatest honour to his character, asked the pardon of Prince Repuin, of whom he thought he had some room to complain; but Repuin's greatest fault was rivalling him in military merit. Repuin had displeased Peter I. had been degraded, and from being Marshal had become a private soldier. Galitzin obtained what he had requested, and by this generous action, acquired the confidence of his sovereign, the applause of the public, and the friendship of Repuin.

PETER gave the fortress the name of Schlüsselburg, which it still bears. It comes from *Schlüssel*, a German word, which signifies *Key*; for he considered it, in consequence of its situation, as the key of his conquests. But since the frontiers of the Empire have been considerably enlarged, it can be no longer of that importance, of which it was when it was almost on the borders of Sweden. The rampart raised by the Swedes yet remains. It is built of stones and is of an astonishing thickness. The tower,

tower, which defends the principal entry has a key for a vane, and is called *Zarkaja*, or the tower of the Czarina. There are two other gates; one called the prince's gate, because during the siege carried on by Peter, it was at this gate, that Menzi-koff was posted. The tower is called the Admiral's tower, because it was guarded by the Admiral of Peter the First's fleet; for a vane it has a balance, which was this Admiral's arms. The situation of Schlusſelburg on an island, and the respectful state of its fortifications, as well as its proximity to the capital, determined the sovereigns of Russia, to convert it into a state prison; a receptacle, which Des-pots every where find it indispensibly necessary to have the command of. Hence Spandau at Berlin; Neustadt at Vienna; the Bastile and Vincennes formerly at Paris; Pignerol at Turin; the Castle of the Holy Angel at Rome. That of St Elmus at Naples; The Tower of Segovia at Madrid, and the Castle of St Julian at Lisbon.

THE island, on which Schlusſelburg stands, is of an elliptical form, and may be about a hundred and seventy five fathoms in length, and seventy eight at its broadest part. The walls which surround it, in almost all its extent, are built of stone and brick. They are fifty feet high, from eleven to twenty thick, and fortified in the old fashion, with battlements and eight round towers. The palace into

the island is by a draw bridge, but strangers are not allowed to enter any of the rooms where the prisoners are. They are only permitted to go into some corridors, that inclose a large court. The windows of the prisons are walled up, except at the top, where a few square inches are left, by which so little light is admitted, that the miserable inhabitants of these cells, must enjoy nothing but a kind of twilight, which serves only to enlighten their sufferings.

In the midst of the court stands the Governor's house, with an wooden cottage, in which there is a state prisoner confined. This court leads into the inside of the fortress, which is about a hundred and forty six feet square, and surrounded by stone walls of a great height. A brick-house of a single storey, extends from one side to the other, and contains eight rooms of seven and a half feet by twelve. This house has not been finished. It has no ceiling and has never been inhabited. It was Peter III. who caused it to be reared with such precipitation, that in less than six weeks, it was begun and brought to the end, in which it is at present, but at the time of his deposition the work was given up. The construction of so large a building, in the middle of a fort, and in so short time, has always been looked on as something mysterious; but there is every reason to suppose, that he designed it for his wife, now Catharine II. whom

II. whom he wished to divorce and afterwards confine in this castle. Very soon we shall see, how Catharine prevented him, and how precarious the situation of Kings must be, when they have not the public opinion on their side.

AMONG the state prisoners of the first rank, who have been confined in this fortress, the following deserve particular notice.

FIRST, *Maria*, sister to Peter I. suspected of corresponding with the Czarowitch. According to some authors, she underwent the Battogues in presence of the court, before she was carried to Schmilberg. But Peter, who was fond of her, soon forgot her faults, and she was set at liberty.

SECONDLY, the Empress *Anna*, *Anna I. publicis*, the most beautiful woman ever Russia produced, but still more beautiful than beautiful. She had made herself eminent in court, by opposing his plans of reform, and by constantly reproaching him with his inhumanity. She was his first wife. He divorced her in the year 1726, and obliged her to take the veil, which she took, only because she was forced. *Her* *letter* *to* *him* *in* *the* *year* *1726* *is* *the* *most* *interesting* *in* *the* *history* *of* *the* *Russian* *Empire*. *It* *is* *the* *most* *interesting* *in* *the* *history* *of* *the* *Russian* *Empire*. Peter was attracted with this letter, but did not change Ludowick's fate. She yielded and took the veil under the name of *Maria*. During her stay in

the convent of Sutelski, she was accused and convicted of having formed a connection with General Gleboff, and of having promised him her hand. We shall very soon see this unfortunate man pay dearly for Eudoxia's favours. This weak, credulous woman it is said, returned to the world, and resumed the secular dress, with the title of Empress, on the assurance of a priest, who had predicted to her the approaching death of the Emperor. She was carried to Moscow, where her cruel husband, after having made her be examined, ordered her to be whipped by two nuns, and again carried to her convent, where she was treated with the utmost rigour. At this prince's death, and under the reign of Catharine I. she was transferred to Schluffelburg, where Count Tolstoe, to whose care she was entrusted, made her experience all the horrors of the most rigorous captivity. He took away the male and female servants, who had till then been the companions of her misfortunes, and gave her only an old female dwarf, whom Eudoxia was obliged to serve, instead of being served by her.

This severity exercised on this princess, which we relate only from hear-say, has doubtless been exaggerated by the enemies of Catharine I. who have bid them to her charge; for such atrocity was not in her character.

EUDOXIA obtained her liberty at the accession of her grandson Peter II. and either abused this liberty, or gave offence to Menzikoff, who made her be again carried back into the convent of Devitz, where she died in the year 1731.

THIRDLY, *Count Piper*, the minister and friend of Charles XII. to whom he gave none but wise counsels, which the impetuous character of Charles made him either overlook or disdain. Piper was made prisoner after the terrible battle of Pultowa, which lasted two days, and wrested from Charles the fruit of eight years' victories. He was treated rigorously by Peter, only because this prince imputed to him the war he had with Sweden. Piper staid a year at Schlüsselburg. He was seventy years old. His age and misfortunes brought him to the grave. A long time after this, the body of this celebrated man was transported to Stockholm, where Charles XII. honoured it with magnificent obsequies.

FOURTHLY, The famous *Zare*, whom we have seen under the reign of the Empress Anna, managing the reins of government at his pleasure, and descending from the throne, on which, we may say, he was set, to be hurled into a prison.

FIFTHLY, The unfortunate Prince *Ivan*, who sat on the throne, and from his office the prey of misfortune. This young man, young at the time he was

years that he lived, and died at Schaffenburg in the flower of his youth, after having been dragged from prison to prison. We shall have yet occasion to speak of this prince.

The gloomy ideas, inspired by this abode of sorrow, gather new force from the dull obscurity, which reigns in these places, and from the menacing aspect of the Satellites, posted at the doors of these black dungeons. A man of feeling imagines he hears the rattling of chains, and the groans of the victims, whom despotism casts into these abodes of misery; laughing at their sufferings, applauding itself on the gratification, and meditating new forms of vengeance; he figures the atrocious calmness, with which it commands the torture, and its enjoyment in contemplating the streams of blood it has caused to run.

Before enlarging on the dismal fate of Peter III. who died here in this place of horror, where he saw the completion of the scene, which hurled him from the throne, we shall say a few words on some important circumstances, respecting Catherine I. and the unfortunate Alexis. Herewith.

C H A P. IV.

ORIGIN of Catharine I.—The various scenes through which she passed, before she became known to the Czar.—She is made his wife.—Issue of this union.—Premature death of young Peter.—The Czar's sorrow.—An Anecdote.—The ascendant Catharine gains over her Husband.—She accompanies him on his military expeditions.—Her behaviour on the banks of the Pruth.—She is suspected of being partial to Chamberlain Moens.—Tragical end of this young man.

CATHARINE was the natural daughter of a country girl, and born at Ringen, a small village on the lake of Witzerwe, near Derpt in Livonia. The year of her birth is uncertain, but according to what she related herself, she must have been born on the 5th of April 1689, which ought to be fixed as the date of her birth, though some writers have advanced, that she was born in the year 1687. The record of her death, which we have consulted, bears that she died at the age of thirty eight, which supposes her to have been born in the year 1689.

AT first she was known under the name of Martha, which she changed into Catharine, when she embraced the Greek religion.

COUNT Rosen, Lieutenant Colonel in the Swedish service, and proprietor of the village of Rin-

gen, for some time supported the mother and daughter, because the custom of the country is, that the Lord of the Manor should take charge of widows and their children; and this circumstance has led many to suppose that the Count was Catharine's father. This young girl, when only three years of age, lost her mother, and Count Rosen dying at same time, she was left so destitute, that the Parish Clerk took her into his house. A short time after, Gluck, a Lutheran minister at Marienburg, travelling through this country, saw this orphan, was much affected with her situation, took her under his protection, brought her up, and fixed her with his children. In the year 1705, Catharine was near seventeen years of age, when a young Dragoon of the Swedish garrison saw her at church, and fell desperately in love with her. He made a discovery of his passion to her, who was the object, and received for answer that she depended on Gluck, from whom alone her hand could be obtained. The minister having inquired into the character of the Dragoon, married him with Catharine. The history of this marriage is differently reported. Weber affirms, that the young couple lived together for eight days after their union. Bruce on the other hand maintains that the marriage was never consummated, because the Dragoon the very morning he was married, was sent in a detachment to Riga. One thing is certain

certain, he was not in Marienburg, when this city submitted to the Russians, and Catharine destined to a more elevated fortune, never saw him more, and never could learn any certain accounts of him.

Mr Richer is then wrong in having advanced, that this husband being in the number of prisoners taken at the battle of Pultowa, and having learned the situation of Catharine, was anxious to let himself be known, in hopes of being raised to something grand; but that far from mitigating the rigours of his lot, the Czar instantly ordered him to be sent to the deserts of Siberia, where he died three months before the peace, which restored the Swedish prisoners. On this occasion Mr Richer observes, that Peter then had two wives, and Catharine had two husbands alive. There is no woman, on whom more stories have been forged, and yet she lived in our own times. After this, can we be reproached, if we give no credit to what has been written about Semiramis, Cleopatra, Zenobia, and to many other women, of whom we have such strange histories.

GENERAL Renn, others say General Bamer (this is the common opinion) who had found Catharine in Marienburg among the prisoners, was struck with her youth and beauty, took her home with him and entrusted her with the management of his house, of which he had no reason to repent, for she made herself equally beloved by master and

servants. Soon after she went into Prince Menzi-koff's service, who was captivated with her beauty, and charmed with the agreeable dispositions of her mind. She lived with him till the year 1704, when she became the mistress of Peter I. whom she soon captivated so completely, that he determined to marry her on the 29th of May 1711. The marriage ceremony was performed secretly at Jarawof in Poland, in presence of General Bruce, and on the 22nd of February 1712 it was publicly celebrated at St Petersburg.

ANNE, who married the Duke of Holstein, and was mother to Peter III. of whom we have already made mention; Natalia Petrowna, who died before her father; Paul and Peter, who died in infancy, were the fruit of this union. The Czar was particularly afflicted with the death of young Peter. His sorrow was such, that he shut himself up at Petershoff, intending to starve himself to death, and forbid every person, of whatever description, under pain of death to disturb his retirement. The senate assembled on this desperate resolution of the prince, and Dolgorouki undertook to drive him from it. He went and knocked at the door of the room, where Peter had shut himself up.—*Whoever you be,* cried the Czar with a terrible voice, *fly off, or I will open the door and knock out your brains—Open, I say,* replied Dolgorouki in a firm tone, *It is a deputy from*
the

the Senate, come to ask you, whom you wish to have named as Emperor in your room, since you have resigned. Peter, struck with the courageous zeal of Dolgorouki, opened, embraced this faithful courtier, yielded to his counsels, and resumed the reins of the empire.

CATHARINE gained over the mind of Peter that ascendant, which nature gives a pretty woman, and which, from its surprizing effects, looks like magic to credulous minds. In order to succeed in acquiring this, Catharine joined to the advantages she had received from nature, a constant attention to discover whatever could please her husband; always conducting herself with that sweetness and complaisance which distinguished her character, and with that vivacity, which in her was like the fire of Prometheus, and electrified Peter. This qualification in women is doubtless one of the greatest powers of seduction, with which nature has endowed them. Catharine's gaiety was equal to her vivacity, and she employed it with as much art. Peter had sometimes fits of dullness and terror which rendered him excessively suspicious, and threw him into so bad a humour, that he appeared beside himself and in a state bordering on madness. In these dreadful moments, the young Catharine was the only person, who durst approach him. As if she had exercised over the temper of this prince an enchantment superior to that, which deprived him of his wits, at
the

the found of her voice he leaped for joy, recovered his senses, and his transports were calmed. It was therefore with great justice, that he considered her necessary, not only to his happiness, but even to his very existence, and that she became his inseparable companion, in all his travels and military expeditions.

THE peace of Pruth, which saved the Russian army from inevitable destruction, was wholly attributed to the ability of Catharine; and with great justice, notwithstanding what has been said and written of this princess by her detractors and all who have followed their sentiments. The following is a state of the fact.

IN the campaign of the year 1711, the Czar being deceived by the pompous promises of Cantimer, and ill supported by some of his Generals, had suffered himself to be surrounded by a numerous army of the Turks; and no resource was left him, if he wished to avoid the fate of his rival Charles XII. but to cut his way through the hostile army during the night. After having come to this desperate resolution, he had retired to his tent, with his soul a prey to the most violent chagrin, and had forbidden any person to enter it under pain of death. In this critical moment, Catharine rising superior to her sex, had reanimated the courage of the Generals, whom the Czar's despair had collected round the tent of
the

the vice-chancellor Shafirof, and there suggested to them the proposal of terms to Baltagi Mehemet, who to pacific inclinations united the avarice of a Turk, raised to this eminent rank. She collected gold enough to dazzle him, and deputies were dispatched without Peter's knowledge. As good luck would have it, Baltagi Mehemet, who had full powers from his master to continue the war, or make peace, was really dazzled by the presents, which Catharine had made be offered him, and contented to an accommodation on much better terms, than could have been expected. Then in spite of the Czar's orders, this princess repairs to his tent, throws herself at his knees, bathes them with her tears, in energetic terms describes the horror of their situation, his army more reduced by want and fatigue, than encouraged by his generous grief; then she relates to him what steps she had taken with Baltagi Mehemet, and the fortunate success with which they had been crowned. Peter astonished, lifts her up, embraces her, and assures her that she has saved Russia.

It is said that the Grand Visir while treating with her, not being able to suppose that love could give a woman courage enough to thus with her husband the dangers of war, and rebellion faithful to be of service to him in the critical situation, to which he was reduced, sent a confidential officer

into the Russian camp, to see this heroine, and verify with his own eyes, what fame, which magnifies every thing, had been pleased to publish.

PETER was so grateful for Catharine's generous action, that on his return into the capital, he instituted in remembrance of it, the Order of St Catharine already mentioned, with which the Czarina was adorned the first in the year 1711. He gave her an additional proof of his gratitude for this meritorious service, when in the year 1724, he caused her be solemnly crowned at Moscow. In the orders issued for this ceremony were these words—*The Empress, my dear wife, having accompanied me constantly in my military expeditions, of which notwithstanding the weakness of her sex, she has shared the dangers, and in the most critical circumstances, has assisted me by her counsels, particularly on the banks of the Pruth, where the Russian army reduced to twenty two thousand men, had to fight two hundred thousand of the enemy, or die. It was on this desperate situation that she signalized her zeal by a courage above her sex, and saved the army and the empire.*—It was an act of justice to set her on the throne of this empire, who had saved it.

NOTWITHSTANDING all this, Catharine's influence over the mind of the Czar, seemed to be on the decline for some time previous to his death, and if she had not been crowned at Moscow, a rupture between

tween

tween them would have been unavoidable. Their misunderstanding arose from the following circumstance. Catharine had a young chamberlain called Moens de la Croix, born in Russia of a Flemish family. He was of a very handsome figure, and aided by his sister Madam Bulks, waiting maid to this princess, ruled the Empress' household, and perhaps her heart; at least this was the idea which Peter had conceived, or had been indastriously suggested to him by Jaguschinsky, who then enjoyed his confidence, and was Catharine's mortal enemy. In order to come at the certainty of this fatal truth, which the wise Fontaine advises never to investigate, he pretended to leave St Petersburg, to spend some days at Dupla, a pleasure house of his Majesty's, and immediately returned incognito to the winter palace, whence he dispatched to the Empress, a page in whom he confided, to carry his compliments to her, as if he had been some leagues from the capital. The page had orders to observe every thing, and it was in consequence of the information given by this Argus, that Peter surpris'd Catharine and her lover, in a tender *amour-tête* in one of the arbours of the garden. The chamberlain's sister, along with a page, was watching at a distance from this arbour, and the chaste friend of Et d'Amour had her eye on the lovers. Peter, natu-

rally violent, was transported with rage at this sight. He beat Catharine with his cane, and did not treat less severely the page, who had attempted to stop him in his entrance. After that he retired, without saying a word to Moens or his sister. Next day, going into Catharine's room, he broke a superb Venice mirror placed over the chimney.—*Tou see*, said he to her, *that with a stroke of my hand, I have reduced this mirror to the dust, from whence it came.—That is true*, answered Catharine with mildness, for she comprehended the allusion, *that is true, but by having destroyed the most beautiful ornament of the palace, do you think it becomes more beautiful.* Peter had too much penetration not to understand in his turn what this ingenious answer signified. It calmed him, but a few days after, he made Moens and his sister be arrested. Moens was carried to the winter palace, into a room, which nobody entered but the Emperor, who carried him his victuals. At same time a report was spread, that the brother and sister had been imprisoned for having let themselves be corrupted by presents, and for having employed their influence with the Empress from motives of interest.

MOENS having been examined by the Emperor, in presence of General Ufchakof, and threatened with torture, confessed himself guilty of the pretended venality, of which he was accused, and had his

his head cut off. His sister was condemned to receive eleven strokes with the knout, but got only five, and some say it was the Emperor himself, who gave her them. She was afterwards banished into Siberia. Two of his sons, who were chamberlains, were degraded, and sent as private soldiers to the army, which was on the frontiers of Persia. The day after the execution of the sentence, the Czar had the cruelty to carry Catharine in an open carriage near to the post, to which they had nailed the head of Moens. But the Empress, without changing countenance at this horrible spectacle, exclaimed; *What a pity there should be so much corruption among courtiers!*

THIS happened about the end of the year 1724. Peter's death happened soon after; and as Catharine, at her accession to the throne, recalled the sister of the unfortunate Moens, she has been suspected of having shortened her husband's days by poison. This imputation is an atrocious calumny, and in spite of Catharine's situation during the last period of the Czar's life, the circumstances of his complaints, as we have already narrated them, destroy all the suspicions, which the Czarina's enemies have sought to bring her under. But every thing may be expected from the black envy of courtiers. They know well how to give shades of truth to the

calumnies they hatch, as they affect its language when they tell them.

C H A P. V.

INTRIGUES, which raise Catharine I. to the throne, after the death of her husband.—Faction that wish to exclude her.—Menzikoff's party prevails, and Catharine is proclaimed.—Menzikoff reigns under her name.—Death of this princess.—Her character.—Anecdotes of her brother.

PETER was yet struggling with death, when different parties were forming and caballing for disposing of the crown. In a numerous assembly of the principal nobility, at the head of whom were the Princes Galitzin, Dolgorouki, Repuin, Kurakin, Lapuchin, and Soltikoff, it was secretly resolved to have Catharine arrested, so soon as Peter was dead, and to place Peter his grandson on the throne. This party would have been dangerous, if the leaders had been united. But some wished the re-establishment, and others only a modification, of the old government. Bassowitz, informed of their design, went to the Empress at the middle of the night, and informed her of what was plotting against her. *My grief and consternation,* she replied
to

to him, *deprive me of power to act; see Menzikoff, consult together; I leave my fate in your hands, and will adopt whatever measures you shall think most proper.* Menzikoff, sunk in sleep, was far from suspecting the imminent danger, which threatened Catharine and her party. Although at first surpris'd: what Bassewitz told him, he lost no time in deliberating, but run immediately to seize on the treasury and fortrefs: secured, by presents and promises, the commanders of the regiments of Preobaschenikoi and Semenofskoi, as well as all the admirals of the fleet, and had an interview with the Duke of Holstein, General Battenlin, and the Archbishop of Novogorod, all devoted to Catharine. This party assembled in the palace, and the Czarina appeared before them, claiming the right of succeeding her husband, as the consequence of her solemn coronation at Moscow. She described the dangerous consequences of a minority, and assured them, that, very far from wishing to deprive the prince of his crown, she would receive it only as a sacred pledge to be restored to him, the moment she should be re-united in heart to her dear husband, when she had to regretly bid.

Her pathetic manner, her well chosen and lively speech, the tears which about it was accompanied, the rich presents of money and jewels, which had preceded her, produced so great an effect, that she

from it. The assembly promised to do every thing for her, and separated. The rest of the night was spent in making the preparations necessary for ensuring the success of this plan.

NEXT day, so soon as the death of the Czar had been announced, the Senate, the Generals, the principal Nobility, and Clergy hurried to the palace for the declaration of the new sovereign. The partisans of Prince Peter Alexiowitsch seemed certain of success, and presumptuous as most part of courtiers are, who calculate events according to their desires, they shunned the friends of Catharine, as people, whose ruin was certain. In this conjuncture, the dexterous Bassowitz whispered in the ear of one of the prince's party. *The Empress has got possession of the treasury and the fortrefs; she has secured the Guards, the Holy Synod, and many of the principal Nobility. She has more friends than you think. Therefore warn your friends to make no resistance to her, since they would expose their heads for nought, by opposing the public opinion, which concurs with Peter's wish to raise Catharine to the throne.* This advice circulated rapidly. Bassowitz gave the signal agreed on, and the two regiments of Guards, who had been won over by bribes to proclaim Catharine, had already surrounded the palace, and were beating the general. *Who has been so bold, cried Prince Repuin, commander-in-chief, as give this order without my knowledge?*—

It was I, replied General Butterlin, *without intending to dispute your authority, but to obey the orders of my gracious sovereign, the Empress.* To this laconic reply, a fullen silence succeeded, and for some moments, every body was in the rack of expectation and anxiety, when Menzikoff entered, followed by Catharine, leaning on the Duke of Holstein. She attempted to speak, but her sighs and tears for some time stifled her voice. At last, recovering her spirits, she delivered a pathetic speech, in which she painted the true or pretended sorrow, which the Czar's death caused to her. *If the Grand Duke,* added she, *will follow my instructions, I shall have perhaps, during my widowhood, the consolation of forming an Emperor, worthy of the blood and name of him, whose recent death you have suffered an irreparable loss.* She was interrupted by Menzikoff, who observed, that in so critical a juncture, it was proper that the assembly should have liberty and time to deliberate on this affair, so as not to draw upon themselves the reproaches either of cotemporaries, or of posterity. To this objection agreed on between Catharine and her favourite, the Græina submitted, and consented to abide by the resolutions that should be formed by the assembly, who passed into another apartment, whereof the doors were immediately shut by Menzikoff and his party, who had already settled that Catharine should be ignorant, that she

Guards, who had been drawn up, by their orders, around the palace, found means of commanding Catharine's enemies, in such a way, that they durst not at first express their sentiments, nor make any opposition. Then nothing more remained, but to give the best possible colour to what they were about to do, by persuading the assembly, that Peter had destined his crown for his wife. With this view, Menzikoff sent for the Emperor's secretary, and asked him, if his master left any writing, that could discover his intentions. The secretary replied that a short time before his last journey to Moscow, he had cancelled his will; and that he had frequently expressed a desire of making another, but had always been prevented by the reflexion, that if his subjects, after he had raised them from a state of barbarity to the highest pitch of glory, were capable of ingratitude, he ought not to expose his last will to the affront of a refusal to comply with it; that if, on the contrary, his subjects recollected what they owed to him, they would regulate their conduct by the intentions, which he had already manifested more solemnly, than he could do by any writing. Upon this there arose a dispute between the members of the assembly and some Lords, who, notwithstanding the presence of the soldiers, had the courage to oppose Catharine's friends. But Theophanes, Archbishop of Pleiskoff, recalled to
their

their remembrance the oath they had taken in the year 1722, *That they would acknowledge as Sovereign, the person, that should be named by the Emperor, and this prince, a God he, made a formal avowal of his sentiments, on the evening on which he caused Catharine to ascend.* The ceremony of to-morrow, he told us all, will be more important, than people think. Its object is the coronation of Catharine, for the purpose of investing her with the power of reigning. She, who on the banks of the Froth, faced the English, is well entitled to this honour. Besides I am assured, that with all her power she will maintain our useful establishments, which alone can render the Empire happy and flourishing.

The prelate signed this declaration, which the majority of the assembly considered as authentic, adding however, that the late Emperor's sentiments, such as his secretary had just explained them, amounted to a formal designation of Catharine. The opposite party denied that the business was so clear and conclusive as Theophanes pretended and maintained, that as Peter named no successor, the right of electing one reverted to the Senate. The chief Maritoni, *this is the day* and it would be a great and noble follow to a
 ———— *Let us see*
 words were immediately received by the greater part of the assembly, and the

salute Catharine with the title of Empress, and first paid his compliments to her by kissing her hand. The whole assembly followed his example, so that when this princess showed herself at a Balcony, the Guards and populace made the air resound with acclamations of *Long live Catharine*; and in order to encourage them, Menzikoff threw money among them most profusely—a sure way of commanding their approbation.

THIS courtier did right in being lavish. It was for himself that he was labouring, for Catharine's reign was his. She had neither application nor capacity for managing the reins of the empire, and she gave herself up with blind confidence to the man, who had been the first author of her fortune in her youth, and to whom she owed the crown in a more advanced age.

DURING the time she sat on the throne, her life was not one of the most regular. During her widowhood she had two lovers, the Counts of Lewenrolden and Sapieha. The affection she had for the former was only momentary, but her love for him changed into friendship, and she preserved it all her life. As for Sapieha he possessed Catharine's heart even to the last period of her life. Menzikoff enjoyed all her confidence, and was at the greatest pains to keep her at a distance from business, if ever she wished to interfere with it. Her life was that

of an Epicurean. Her detractors charge her with frequently exceeding in Tokay wine, which along with a cancer and a dropfy soon put a period to her life. She died on the 16th of May 1727, after a reign of two years and some days, when just entering into the thirty ninth year of her age.

CATHARINE was above middle size. In her youth she had had very delicate and agreeable features, and had been very handsome, but as she advanced in years, she became rather too jolly. Her complexion was fine, her eyes were black, her hair was fair, and she dyed it black. Her enemies spread a report, that she could neither read nor write, and that the prince's Elizabeth or Count Ostermann signed for her. We inquired into the fact and found this report gross calumny. But it must be allowed, that if on one side, those who were unfavourable to Catharine, have said much ill of her, on the other her panegyrist's have greatly exaggerated her character and abilities.

The following anecdotes will prove with what moderation Catharine bore her elevation, and how far she was from forgetting her origin. When Wurmb, who had been preceptor, whilst Catharine was only a servant in Chack the minister's family, waited on her, after she had been married to the Czar, she received him with much attention and kindness. *What, my good lord?* said she, said

to him, *Are you still alive? Very well, I shall take care of you;* and she settled a pension on him. She was not less attentive to the family of her benefactor, who died at Moscow. She gave his widow a pension, made his son a page, portioned his two oldest daughters, and brought the youngest to court, where she was made one of the maids of honour. If credit is to be given to Weber, she made several attempts to discover her former husband, and not without success. While she lived with Menzikoff, she was every now and then secretly sending him sums of money, till the year 1705, when she learned that he had lost his life in a scuffle. But this was only a vague report, as we have already stated.

SOME writers have advanced, and at St Peterburg it is affirmed as a fact, that Catharine had a brother, whom the Czar accidentally discovered, and amused himself with introducing to Catharine for the first time. The story is told in the following way.

AN envoy extraordinary from the King of Poland at the Russian court, on his return to *Dresden*, had stopped at an inn in *Courland*, and had witnessed a serious quarrel between one of the stable boys and some of his comrades; who were all drunk. One of them swore in a high tone, while he said these words in a low tone, *By a single word I could make my adversaries repent of their insolence, for I have relations powerful enough to punish them.*

UPON this, the minister surpris'd at his decisive manner of expressing himself, enquir'd after his name and former state of life. The minister was answer'd, that he was an unfortunate Pole, call'd *Charles Stworonki*, that his father was suppos'd to have been a Gentleman in Lithuania, who died early, to the great loss of this unfortunate young man, and a sister of his, whom he had lost long ago.

This answer engag'd the attention of this traveller, who at St Peteriburg had heard so many stories about Catharine. He examin'd the figure of the lad, that was swearing, and thought he perceiv'd in his coarse features some resemblance to those of Catharine's, which were so nobly cast, as one of her own historians had said, that no painter could be successful in hitting the expression of her beautiful countenance.

This incident, which would have all the appearance of a romantic scene, if it were not prov'd to be a fact, struck King Augustus' minister, who even indulg'd himself in making a ridiculous story of it, in a letter to a friend, who resided at the court of Russia. How this letter fell into the hands of the Czar, is not well known, but it is certain, that he took a note of it in his memorandum-book, and afterwards sent to Prince Repnin, Governour of Riga, in order to discover Charles Stworonki, to apprehend him, without any more to

his person, and to bring him to Riga on some honourable pretence; and to send him under a sufficient guard, to the chamber of Police at St Petersburg, whom the Czar had directed to revise a sentence passed against said prisoner.

THIS order, which was incomprehensible to the Governor, was punctually obeyed. Charles Schoronski was brought to Riga, where the peace officers pretended to proceed in the ordinary forms against him, as a dangerous quarreller. He was then sent under a guard to St Petersburg, with the counterfeit evidence, which proved the charge brought against him.

CHARLES uneasy at his situation, although he thought himself quite innocent, was brought before the Judge, who protracted the process, in order to examine the prisoner more at his ease, for he had received orders to sound him. To succeed in this the more effectually, he had placed spies about him, and they noted down all his expressions. Agreeably to the information collected from him, which was so much the less suspected, that it was given by an ingenuous man of no great pretensions, proper persons were appointed to make inquiry in Courland, and the discoveries they made, proved evidently, that this lad was really brother to the Empress Catharine.

WHEN

WHEN the Czar got assurance of this, he made it be hinted to Skoworonki, that the Judge not being disposed to treat him favourably, he could not do better than present, with his own hand, a petition to the Sovereign; and that means would be devised not only of reaching the throne, but of securing patrons powerful enough, to support him effectually, in his application for redress.

THE Czar, who had ordered every thing for a scene, with which he proposed to amuse himself greatly, by the surprisè, he would give Catharine, made it be told the prisoner, that on a certain day, he would go, *incognito*, and dine with Chapelow, the steward of his household, and when dinner was over, he would hear Skoworonki.

THE Majesty of the monarch appeared not to intimidate him. He presented his petition nobly, but it was read with less attention, than his figure was examined. The Czar put to him a number of questions, which, notwithstanding his embarrassment, he answered so distinctly, that it appeared evidently, that he was brother to Catharine.

HOWEVER to remove all doubts, the Czar left him abruptly, ordering him to return next day at the same hour, and this order was refused only by the promise of a sentence, with which he would probably have reason to be satisfied.

THE same night while at supper with Catharine, the Czar said to her; *To-day I dined in Chapelov's, where I was most agreeably entertained: I must take you there some day.*—Why not to-morrow? But, added he, evading the Czarina's consent, *we must do as I did to-day, that is to say, surprise him, when he is just going to sit down to table, and we must go thither unattended.*

NEXT day while Peter and Catharine were dining with the steward of the household, Skoworonki was introduced and approached the Emperor with a look a little more timid, than the preceding day. The Czar then pretending not to recollect the subject of his petition; renewed the questions, which he had already put to him, and received from Skoworonki the same answers.

This conference was held at the side of a window, and under Catharine's eye, who sitting in an arm-chair, left not a word of it. Every sentence from Skoworonki struck her ear and her soul, and the Czar besides roused her attention, by saying to her with the look and tone of feeling: *Catharine give your attention to that—Do you understand nothing of our dinner?* The Empress, who was in the greatest surprise, could hardly answer for stammering,—*That,* added the Czar briskly, *do not you see that this young man is your brother.*

COME,

COME, said he to Charles, immediately kiss the hem of her petticoat and her hand, in quality of the Empress, and then salute her as your sister. The feeling Catharine could not bear this scene without swooning. This affected the Czar deeply. When she was recovered, he said to her in a tender tone; *I did not imagine that this scene would have made such a strong impression on you. Take courage, embrace my brother-in-law. If he be a man of integrity and a little ability, we will make something of him—Let us go—this scene has fatigued you.* Catharine with tears in her eyes, embraced her brother, intreated the Czar to continue his favours, both to the brother and sister, and left Chapelow's house.

It is not exactly known, by what singular accident Skoworonki had suspected or discovered, that his sister had been raised to the throne, for he did not know her, when he appeared in her presence. He had not ventured to disclose his suspicions to the Emperor, who gave him a house, and settled on him a pension, imposing on him no other restraint, than that of not talking with much company, and of enjoying his fortune in elegance and secrecy.

HE has been the head of a party, which figures at present among the most distinguished in Russia. Count Skoworonki, his grandson, is at this moment chamberlain to the Empress, a Knight of the

order of St Wolodimer, and Plenipotentiary at Naples. His two sisters, Mary and Catharine, are Maids of Honour to the Empress.

WE shall conclude this head with observing, that the greatest honour is due to the memory of Catharine, for her humanity, and the compassion she expressed at the sight of poor people. But all commendation is inferior to the noble art, which she possessed, of transmitting these sentiments from her own heart into that of her husband, to whom nature seemed to have denied them. She made it a study to be a mediator between the prince and his subjects. She acted in this capacity always with dignity, and the courtier, who knew to what degree she was jealous of the Czar's glory, never durst employ her mediation for the purpose of obtaining any thing which would make her afterwards blush. The entire confidence, which Peter reposed in her, was doubtless to him a source of precious enjoyment; for on the throne as in private life, unbounded confidence in a wife affords the greatest pleasure to a husband, while any degree of dissidence becomes the greatest of misfortunes.

C H A P. VI.

PARTICULARS respecting Alexis Petrovitch, son to Eudoxia.—Education of this prince.—Character given of him by Bruce.—His manners.—Imprudent acts.—Flight to Naples.—Return to Russia.—His trial.—Condemned to death by Peter.—Tragical end of his confidants.—Punishment of Gleboff.—Particulars respecting Princess Sophia, wife to the Czarovitch.—Her misfortunes, and death.—A fabulous story made on her.

IN the two former chapters, we have traced the outlines of the history of a woman, whom fortune loaded with her favours, and drew from the most obscure situation, to set her on a throne, to which her birth could not furnish the most remote pretensions. We are now to contemplate this same fortune hurl a prince from a throne, to which his birth gave him a hereditary title.

ALEXIS, the only child whom Peter I. had by *Eudoxia Federovna Lopuchin*, was born the 13th of February 1690; and never was a prince born under more fortunate auspices, both in respect to himself, and those attached to him by blood and friendship.

THE circumstances of his exclusion from the throne, and his death, which followed as a necessa-

ry consequence, are generally known, but with interpretations so different, that the reader, drawn far from the road of truth, is reduced to a state of uncertainty, or to give credit to facts, disguised by hireling historians, who have found it their interest to calumniate or flatter the memory of this unfortunate prince. We shall now attempt to restore the real state of facts.

It is a circumstance incontrovertible, that the education of the young Czarowitch had been unaccountably and grossly neglected, and that he had never received the correction necessary for his age, till it was out of all time to inspire him with proper sentiments, and fix in him good habits. He had been entrusted to the care of women, and his education left to Russian priests, the most ignorant and contemptible of men, who studied to cram him with the absurd prejudices of religion, rather than instruct him in its principles and moral precepts, which constitute its chief excellence and utility to human society. It was these priests, who ruined him, by their incessant and perfidious declamations against the Czar, whom they represented as a sacrilegious innovator, because he had abolished several barbarous customs, the object of their superstitious reverence, by which they pretended to save their credulous flocks.

AT the age of eleven years, Alexis was taken from the management of this contemptible species of governors, to intrust him to Baron Van-huyffen, counsellor of war, who, along with great merit, possessed the valuable talents, which are rarely found in the instructors of young princes, though all boast of being endowed with them. It is said, that Van-huyffen discovered in his pupil the most happy dispositions, in spite of all that the priests had done to choke them; and that he did not despair of ridding him of the prejudices they had raised in him, when Menzikoff thought proper to remove him from the only person, who was so capable of inspiring him with sentiments suitable to his rank, and the throne, to which he was destined. The minister took upon himself the charge of Alexis' education, but as Menzikoff seldom saw him, he was put under the direction of substitutes, not only destitute of every kind of capacity, but even worse than the priests, to whom the early years of the Czarowitch had been abandoned. It is presumed, that by this conduct, Menzikoff's express intention was to give unrestrained indulgence to the vicious inclinations of the prince, and to allow him to associate with the most depraved companions. In reality, he passed his life in continual drunkenness and debauchery of every kind. Yet this same Menzikoff, who had his own views, afterwards found means

means to extort from this prince, a confession, that it was Menzikoff only, who had conducted his education, and that he was under the greatest obligations to the minister in this respect. In addition to all this, several facts prove that Peter had early conceived great prejudices against his son, and had inspired him with terror to such a degree, that to avoid being obliged to draw in the presence of his father, the young prince discharged a pistol at his right hand. When he was not indulging in his vicious excesses, his predominant taste was reading of mystical books, and his favourite amusement was theological disputes, wherein he employed, it is said, his fists with as much advantage, as he did his lungs. To make him attend the council, and to speak to him of war, the navy or finances, was to him the most disagreeable thing in the world. The imprudence and obstinacy, which he showed, when opposed in his humour, were not only unjustifiable, but seemed to rise to such a height, that his passions sometimes deprived him of reason, and brought on him fits of madness. Bruce, who knew him well, has drawn the following character, in a letter to one of his friends in 1714.

“ THE Czarowitsch is come to Moscow this winter, where I have seen him for the first time. He keeps a low bred girl, a native of Finland, who might be very agreeable, if a woman could be agreeable

“greeable without modesty. I have often gone a-
 “long with the general, to pay my respects to this
 “prince, and he has often come to the general’s,
 “attended by very bad company. His dress is ra-
 “ther slovenly than careless. He is tall, and well
 “made; his complexion is brown, his look stern,
 “and voice strong. He has often done me the ho-
 “nour to speak German to me, and he understands
 “it well. He is adored by the populace, whose ig-
 “norance and vices he affects. By people of a more
 “elevated rank, he is little respected, and he him-
 “self respects nobody. He is always surrounded by
 “a multitude of stupid and debauched priests, and
 “other individuals of no better description. In so-
 “ciety of this kind he constantly arraigns the con-
 “duct of his father, for having abolished the ancient
 “customs. He declares, that as soon as he succeeds
 “him, he will re-establish Russia in her original state.
 “He even threatens to cut off every favourite of
 “of the Czar’s, but particularly Menzikoff. He has
 “expressed himself in this way so often, and with
 “so little circumspection, that it could not but
 “reach the ear of the Czar, and it is generally be-
 “lieved, this young man has laid the foundation of
 “his own ruin.”

HEATED by the continued excesses of the table
 and exasperated by the persecutions he was continu-
 ally harassed with, Alexis fell into a state of stupidity

and then into despair, so that in the year 1716, he all at once renounced his right of succession in favour of the son, whom Peter had by Catharine, and requested permission to retire into a cloister. Preferring the advice given by his principal confidants, he very soon after made his escape, left the states of the Czar, and took refuge at Vienna, where he put himself under the protection of the Emperor Charles VI. This prince, wishing to save him from the resentment of his father, sent him first to Inspruck, and afterwards, for more security, to the Castle of St Elmus at Naples, where he was betrayed by his mistress, to whom he was said to be married, and who was directed to hint to him the propriety of having recourse to his father's clemency. Being afterwards misled by the solemn promises of an absolute pardon, he hearkened to the advice of the officers sent by Peter to Naples for the purpose of bringing him back to Moscow, and threw himself on paternal indulgence: It is true, the court of Vienna, not wishing to come to a rupture with the Czar, was very instrumental in making him adopt this resolution, or, to express it more properly, laid him under the necessity of taking a step, which he could not avoid.

After this resolution, he solemnly renounced every title of succession to the crown, and being carried to Moscow, and afterwards to St Petersburg, he

he was confined in the fortress of Schlußeiburgh, tried by commissioners, and condemned to death. The proceedings of his trial are known. They were published by the Czar's orders in the usual form, and appeared in several works, with the air of truth, which it was attempted to give them. Historians were bold enough to bear of telling nothing but truth, and Philosophers laughed at their pretended veracity. However matters stand, nothing can furnish greater room for conjecture, than this strange trial, in which a notorious dissimence exists between the confessions made by Alexis on his first examination at Moscow, which was in some degree public, and the examination he underwent at St Peterburg, which happened to be most frequently in private, before the Czar and his most intimate and confidential friends. These circumstances seemed to prove that he was put to torture.

RESPECTING the circumstance of his death, there are two opinions, which have been adopted in preference to the real. One of them is reported by the Czar's own historians, and intended to persuade, that Alexis had an insupportable epilepsy, and died by convulsions, occasioned by the violence of his passions, and the excess of grief. The other is, that he was secretly poisoned. The latter is a more credible, notwithstanding the agreement of Peter I.

and the apology of his panegyrist. Busching has given it as the most probable and authentic, positively asserting that Alexis was beheaded by the Czar's orders, and that Marshal *Weyde* did the office of executioner—This is a fact, which he says, he had from the woman, who was employed to stitch the prince's head to his body, before it could be exposed on the state bed.

ALL, who had advised the Czarowitzch, who had been the companions of his flight, or assisted him in it; all in short, who had any share in his confidence, or in the plots imputed to him, were tortured to death. The execution of Gleboff, who was also accused of a criminal connexion with Eudoxia, and a conspiracy against the Czar, was atrocious and highly dishonourable to Peter. The unfortunate Gleboff was not only empaled alive, but Peter, before delivering him up to this cruel punishment, took a pleasure in torturing him for the space of six weeks, all with a view to extort from him a confession of the commerce he was accused of having had with Eudoxia. Gleboff, during this tedious martyrdom, was a model to lovers, and constantly affirmed that Eudoxia had granted him no favours, and that she was more faithful as a wife, than Peter as a husband. It is reported that Peter advanced to this unfortunate man, when ready to expire under the empaling, and advised him in the name of religion

gion to make a confession of Eudoxia's crimes. *Barbarian!* said Gleboff to him with a feeble voice, *What is your folly? For several days you have in vain removed me from one cruel punishment to another still more cruel, and you think that at this moment, when death is just going to end my torments, I may blot the innocence and honour of a wife, who has committed no other fault, but that of having loved you too well. Away with you and let me die in peace.* While finishing these words, says the historian, from whom we have borrowed these particulars, Gleboff collected the little strength that remained in him, lifted up his head, spit in Peter's face and expired.

ALEXANDER KIKIN, Commissioner of the Admiralty, Alexis' favourite, and companion in his flight; Abraham Lepuchin Eudoxia's brother, for having advised him to it; the Bishop of Novosib, who was Gleboff's brother, and Poustionoi the monk, accused of having instigated him to conspire against the Czar, and his regulations, were all broken on the wheel, around the spot where Gleboff was expelled. Count Romanzoff and Tolstoe were respectively rewarded for having brought the prince back from Naples, and for assisting in drawing up the charge. Romanzoff got the rank of Major-general and the pay of Lieutenant-general, with Alexander Kikin's property, which was confiscated. Tolstoe

who was already a senator, received new honours, and Gleboff's property, which was immense.

CATHARINE I. was suspected of having, along with Menzikoff, irritated the father against the son, and of having caused the death of this unfortunate young man, who was rather imprudent than criminal. This suspicion arose from these circumstances, because Peter, Catharine's son was declared successor to the Czar, and because Tolstoe, one of the principal commissioners on Alexis' trial, to whom the particular examination of this prince was entrusted, was known to be the creature of Menzikoff, whose interests and those of the Empress, were the same. But Peter himself has justified Catharine, by declaring publicly, that she had interceded in order to save the life of his son, and requested, that instead of putting him to death, he should be shut up in a monastery. Is this declaration a piece of condescension of Peter's in favour of his beloved wife? This we know not, but some historians have given us to understand so.

ON the 25th of October 1711, at Forgau in Saxony, Alexis the Czarowitch had married Charlotte Christina Sophia, daughter to Rodolphus of Brunswick-Blakenburg, sister to Elizabeth Christina, wife to Charles VI.—She was born on the 29th of August 1694, and made her public entry into St Petersburg, in company with her husband in July 1712. This

union, which was the cause of public rejoicings in the capital for more than a week, had only a few happy days; for although Sophia was a very beautiful woman, and had full more virtue than beauty; although she seemed to have been the choice of Alexis, who had seen her at her father's court; he treated her always with the greatest contempt, and lived with that Finlander, called Euphrocyne, whom we have already mentioned. This woman was born in obscurity, as all prostitutes are, and had their qualifications, which proved more suitable to Alexis' manner of living, than the few attainments of the modest Sophia. It will not however be credited, that this prince treated her with so non humanity as some historians have given out, for instance, that he beat her frequently: for though he might have had ferocity enough to have committed such an outrage, he would have been checked by his dread of the Czor, who, as well as Catherine, expressed always the greatest concern for the unhappy situation of the Princess Sophia.

This ill matched pair had a daughter called Natalia, who was born at Moscow in the year 1702, and died at Moscow in the year 1720, when she was born the year of the death of Peter the Great, and was afterwards reigned under the name of Elizabeth. A few days after the birth of the latter, Sophia died of the effects of an unaccountable distemper, but perhaps

of the sorrow, which had been for a long time preying on her spirits. She was only in her twenty-first year, and her death, with which every other person was deeply affected, was a matter of indifference only to herself and her unfeeling husband.

THE evening before her death, she sent a long petition to the Czar, which drew tears from his eyes, and in which she recommended to his attention her children and domestics, but did not once name Alexis, which proves the misunderstanding, that prevailed between them, and how much the unhappy creature's heart was wounded. The most fervent wish that Sophia expressed, was to see the Emperor before she died, and it was gratified. Peter, who was at Schlusfelburg at the time of her delivery, set out as soon as he received the news. When he got to the capital, he found himself very much indisposed, and was obliged to go to bed, without seeing the princess; but when he read the affectionate and dutiful expressions of his daughter-in-law, he ordered himself to be carried into her bed-chamber. Their interview was most affecting. She bid him a sorrowful and last adieu in language most moving, and again recommended her children to his care, and her domestics to his protection. She received from him every consolation, which her situation could admit of, and the strongest assurance,

furance, that every request of her's should be complied with. After having kissed the Czar's hand, she made a sign for her children to approach, and having bathed them with her tears, she delivered them into the hands of her husband, without speaking to him a word. He had come to the foot of the bed of his dying wife, because the Czar had intimated to him this order. He appeared indifferent and constrained. When Peter went out, he retired, and the unfortunate Sophia expired about midnight, after having suffered all the pangs of the most cruel agony.

SHE had been educated and she died in the Lutheran religion, to which she was attached from considerations of philosophy. This Alexis did not excuse, because by the instigation of the popes, he had in vain solicited her to embrace the Greek form of worship. Notwithstanding this difference of opinion, which was no wife regarded by Peter, Sophia was buried by his orders, and in spite of the murmurs of the Popes, in a Russian church, in the cathedral of St Peter and St Paul, whither her corpse was carried, on the 25th of November 1714, with all the honours due to her rank.

WE have entered into these particulars respecting the death of this princess, not only because her fate must affect all sensible souls, but likewise, because in a work entitled *Interesting accounts of the Empress*, &c.

there appeared an account, which, if true, is widely different from what has been just now related.

According to this account, the Emperor was absent from St Petersburg at the time of Princess Sophia's delivery, and soon after she persuaded some people, who were attached to her, to spread a report of her death. Her husband, who had paid no attention to her during her illness, ordered her to be interred without any kind of pomp, and instead of her corpse, they buried a bit of wood in the cathedral. She afterwards fled into France, it is added in the same work, and fearing to be discovered, she thence embarked for Louisiana. There she married a military man, who was only a serjeant. He was a Frenchman, and had been formerly at St Petersburg. He had one daughter by her in the year 1752. She afterwards returned to Paris with her husband, and one day as she was walking in the Thuilleries, she was discovered by Marshal Saxe, who promised her secrecy, and gave employment to her husband on the isle of Bourbon, whither Sophia accompanied him; and soon after their arrival, she had the misfortune to lose not only himself, but the daughter she had born to him. After this double loss, Sophia returned to France in the year 1754, accompanied by one negro-girl, and without any thing to support her, but some bills on the India-company

company, drawn in the name of her husband, and not paid her, because she could not prove herself to be his wife. A gentleman, who had been acquainted with her in the isle of Bourbon, offered her his services, which she accepted of, after having long refused them, and at same time acknowledged who she was. It is from him that the author of these interesting memoirs, or rather fables, pretends to have learned them; and he adds, that she disappeared soon after, and there is room to suppose, that she retired to the court of Brunsvick. In this marvellous account it is also said, that the King had secretly discovered her, and had ordered the governor of the isle of Bourbon to pay her the honours due to her birth: that in a letter written by his own hand, this prince communicated the discovery to the Empress Queen of Hungary, and wrote immediately to the princess, as to her aunt, advising her to leave her husband and her son, whom the King of France had promised to take care of, and pressing her to come to Vienna.

THE editor of this extraordinary narrative, in order to give more weight to his story, says he had it from the papers of the deceased Mr Lullu, secretary to the French academy, and his ambassador to France. But we will believe, though we see him there, or given it as a story. We have examined the truth of the fact, and found it to be the most im-

act information, that the Princess Sophia's death, with all its circumstances, was unquestionable, and agreeable to what has been now related. A Russian nobleman, of the first distinction, has besides assured us, that his mother attended the Princess during her illness, was witness of her last moments, and saw her body on the state-bed, when, according to custom, people of quality were admitted to kiss her hand. After this, can we believe the compilers of anecdotes, who tell us barefacedly, that they have ransacked the most secret records, and the most authentic memoirs ?

CHAP. VII.

Peter III.—His marriage with Catharine.—Children born of them.—Dislike at one another.—Dependance, in which Elizabeth keeps young Peter.—He fixes his residence at Oranienbaum.—Regiment that he forms there.—He prefers foreigners to Russians.—Attempts to alienate Elizabeth's affection from him.—Elizabeth dies.—Peter ascends the throne.—Exiles recalled from Siberia.—Biren.—Munich.—Particulars and anecdotes of this general.—Lefseep.—Count de Hardt.—Particulars respecting the latter.

It will, by the narration of the circumstances, that con-
 curred to the elevation of Catharine I. and to the
 misfortunes

misfortunes of Alexis, we have been able to engage the attention, and excite the sympathy of our readers, we think they will not be less affected with the famous revolution, which set Catharine II. on the throne of the Russias, which she occupies in a way, that must attract the notice of posterity. We have seen, that the last revolution in 1741 had given the sceptre to Elizabeth, daughter to Peter the Great and Catharine I.—The year following, the Electress for her successor, fixed on her nephew Charles Peter-Ulric, son to Charles-Frederick Duke of Holstein-Gottorp, and to Anne, daughter to Peter I. This young prince, then fourteen years of age, embraced the Greek religion, which he despised in his heart, and had the imprudence to ridicule several times. In consequence of this change from one religion to another, which the priests call abjuration, though its true name ought to be apostasy, the young Peter was proclaimed Grand Duke of Russia with all the customary formalities, and took the title of *Peter Fedorowitch*. In the year 1743, without any previous acquaintance of her, he married Sophia-Augusta, Princess of Anhalt-Berlin, who was again baptized according to the terms of the Greek church, and received the name of Catharine Alexievna. She was born on the 25th of April 1725, and was sixteen years of age at the time of her marriage. Two children only were the consequence of this

nion; the Grand Duke Paul, born in the year 1754; and Anne Petrowna, who was born in the year 1757, and died in 1759.

For several years, the most perfect understanding subsisted between this royal pair, at least in appearance; but as they were of an opposite character, their affections were soon mutually alienated, and the disgust and aversion, which they had conceived for one another, showed itself openly. Peter, whose education had not been that of a prince; Peter, who had been industriously kept at a distance from affairs, and by Elizabeth always in a childish dependance, had conceived a fondness for an indolent life, and for a long space of time, had been incapable of relishing rational amusements, and of occupying himself with study. He sought only to divert his mind with useless subjects or disgraceful pleasures. He was constantly surrounded with spies, who made to the Empress the most unfavourable reports on his conduct; and she being but too much disposed to suspect his intentions, was always afraid of some revolutionary plot, such as that, which had set herself on the throne.

When Peter was at St Peteriburg, he lodged in the palace, and lived there rather as a state prisoner than as the heir of the empire. When the Empress went to Petershoff, he was permitted to reside at his favourite

favourite retreat at Oranienbaum, where he followed out his taste for military exercises, which was his sole amusement during the last years of Elizabeth's reign. He began with forming a company of his domestics, whom he exercised and clothed in the Prussian mode, and regularly attended the exercise every day himself. The Empress approved of this innocent amusement, which might detach her nephew from intrigues in politics, love, or something still worse. She therefore ordered a certain number of soldiers to be drafted from several regiments, and added to the company at Oranienbaum, and garrisoned in this palace. The military of this company or regiment was made up, partly of Germans, but principally of Prussians. There was not an officer in it, who was a Russian. This was a disgrace to the Russian nobility, who, therefore, they did not wish to be admitted into the company were jealous of the prince's predilection for a Prussian, and this predilection proved his ruin.

The Grand Duke engaged heavily in this martial employment. In his private life he cultivated a taste for small scale. It was several times proposed, and was successful to his studies in the art of fortification. Dissatisfied with this first attempt, he ordered a more extensive structure near the palace on a larger and more regular plan. Of this we must not say more, especially in describing Oranienbaum. *Annales de la Russie* tom. 1. p. 107.

like appearance in this court, which made the Grand Duke happy, the Empress laugh, and the Russians murmur. In the morning, at night, and at the hour of parade, the guns were drawn out. The sentinels were numerous, and the rounds as frequent, as in a city with an enemy at its gates. In this house in particular Peter gave entertainments, and got drunk, it is said, with his Germans, when he was not employed in exercising or issuing orders to what he called his army.

NOTWITHSTANDING this kind of liberty, which the Czarina appeared to give him, he was not the less sensible of the constraint, in which her suspicion always kept him, and often even in public he broke out against her into violent invectives, which some were busy enough to repeat to Elizabeth, not without much malicious exaggeration. His enemies, and they were not few, represented him, to the Empress, as ungrateful for her kindness, complaining that he was invited into Russia only to be confined as a state prisoner, expressing the greatest desire to return to Holstein, and resting all his hope and consolation on the death of his benefactor. Elizabeth, credulous like all women, listened to these reports, which were almost always malevolently interpreted, and they made such a deep impression on her, that her jealousy growing with her age, she was once on the point of following the advice of Chancellor Betsucheff,

tucheff, who was really of opinion, that she should exclude Peter from the right of succession to the throne, and name her grand nephew Prince Paul in his room, and Catharine as Regent in case of a minority. Such was the state of affairs, when Elizabeth died on the 25th of December 1761.

On the 5th of January 1762, the Czar Peter III mounted the throne, with all the joy, that could be felt by a man, who was extricated from long slavery, to be invested with supreme power. His first attention was directed to the relief of the first prisoners, whom the jealousy, or weakness of Elizabeth had thrown into the cells of Siberia. Biron, the favourite and prime minister of the Empress Anne, whose arrogance and misfortune, we have described, was the first, whom Peter released. He restored to him the Duchy of Courland, and Biron at Mittau remembered the sufferings he had undergone at Berezowa. At Mittau he lived as a man, who had received lessons from adversity, and improved by them. His death was that of a good subject, and the grief it occasioned to the Courtiers, was that of affectionate sons departing, when they lose their father.

MARSHAL Munich was the first, whose name is recalled, and whose surname was a mark of honour. Christopher Burchard, known to the world as Munich, was son to an officer in the service of the

King of Denmark. After receiving a good education he at the age of seventeen entered into the service of the Landgrave of Hesse-Darmstadt. He had spent the early part of his life under Marlborough and Eugene, and had secured their esteem. Afterwards he had gone into the service of the King of Poland, and at last into the Russian; where after having served with equal honour and success, he had arrived at the rank of Field Marshal. In the different enterprizes in which he was employed, and which he executed with a degree of judgment, only to be equalled by that minute punctuality, which is to be found in Germans alone, Munich had made himself be feared rather than loved, because he was irascible beyond all description, and still more implacable, when he thought himself offended, which he often imagined himself to be on the slightest grounds. In his family he was particularly subject to fits of passion, so that it was only the necessity of gaining a livelihood, or the hope of rising to some good appointment, that kept servants with him; for it was necessary to watch him continually, to guess his wishes, to be a perpetual slave to his whims and oddities, and to be more than literally exact in the execution of his orders. He has often been known to change colour, to gnash his teeth, and to drive a secretary from his cabinet, because he had

not folded a letter to his mind, or became in copying it he had omitted a comma. But fifteen minutes after, Munich was affirmed of his position, recalled the secretary, and made him a kind of confession. This was the moment to obtain a favour from him; and servants, who are capable of watching and discovering the weakness of their masters, never let such an opportunity slip. Munich was a most zealous patron to his, and made thousands of them all. How many matter like Munich! How many servants like his! And how many families do we find made like theirs!

MUNICH possessed the confidence of the Empress Anne, and employed it for rendering political services to Russia, who will never forget, that she is indebted to him for the institution of the Corps of Cadets, and for the canal, which joins the Neva to the Wolga, a work, which by facilitating the transportation of provisions to St. Petersburg, preserves the capital from famine, and thereby renders it very easy to resist the attacks of the Tartars, and to defend against the invasions of the Persians.

When the reign of Peter the Great terminated, Munich was still in the service of the Empress Anne. While he was residing in the country, he had incurred the displeasure of the Emperor for having, it is said, said some words which were considered; and Peter the Great, who was then a young man to be offended, sent him to the Siberian mines.

lovers, gave him up to commissioners appointed to examine the state-prisoners. As these commissioners were such, as all despots take care to choose, when they have any personal resentment to gratify, Munich was of course found guilty.

IN the first examination, which he underwent, it is reported that Prince Trubetzkoi, who was president of the commission, asked him if he was able to exculpate himself for the untimely destruction of so many men in the Dantzic affair? Munich replied, that the papers deposited in the war office would justify him, but that he had something greater to reproach himself with, for which he would never forgive himself—What is that asked Trubetzkoi? It is, replied Munich, that I did not make you be hanged, when you was accused, and convicted of having pillaged the military chest, during the war with Turkey. Trubetzkoi remained for some time confounded at this rebuke, which he did not in the least expect, and put an end to the examination the sooner, because he knew the Empress was attending concealed behind a screen.

THE next day at a second examination, Munich wearied out with the captious questions, that were put to him, and convinced of the plot formed to find him guilty, rose up in a passion, and said to the commissioners. *What is the use of so many artful shifts? I know your intention; Let us shorten this sedevant.*

sunt. *Dictate the answers you wish me to make, and I will sign them.* They took him at his word, wrote a long series of confessions of crimes, which Munich signed, and thus these strange proceedings were concluded. He was immediately convicted, and without any other formality condemned to be torn in pieces by horses; a dreadful punishment, which he heard pronounced without the least emotion.

HE showed no less courage on the day they were carrying him out for execution. He walked between two rows of soldiers, with a steady step, a modest countenance, and a serene look, which expressed the tranquillity of his soul and his conscious innocence. On his way he took notice of every body, and if he recognised any officer, he saluted him affectionately. When he arrived at the place of execution, he said to the officer, who was at the head of the corps, *Sir, command with that firmness, with which you have seen me in battle. I ask of you no favour only. Give as soon as possible, your orders for delivering me from a life, which I had chosen myself. I would have left more glorious.* He at that time entreated him to accept of his jewels, which were of very great value; *That you may remember the unfortunate Munich,* said he to him, while delivering them into his hand.

INDEPENDENTLY of an elevation of soul, and that energy which was natural to him, Munich

was also supported in the part he had to act, by that immoderate vanity, which marked every moment of his life, and by that passion for fame, which made him view future generations publishing the memorable actions of a life, crowned by a tragical death, and worthy of their commiseration.

BUT this tragedy did not end as he expected. Scarcely had one of the Judges read the sentence, when the place resounded with cries of *Pardon*. Elizabeth, who was not sanguinary, had shuddered with horror, when she signed a sentence, which condemned one of her subjects to be torn in pieces; and a subject, whom in her heart she knew to be innocent, or guilty only of having displeased her. Remorse prevailed in this awakened soul, and death was changed into banishment to Siberia. At this news, instead of being transported with joy, Munich seemed to lose courage. His radiant brow was overcast with clouds, and some people, who were present, have assured us, that they beheld him returning to the fortress, shedding a torrent of tears.

DURING the reign of Elizabeth, that is, more than twenty years, he continued an exile at Pelim in Siberia, in a kind of fort, which, according to Manstein, he himself had caused be built, for Biren, whom he wished to destroy. It was a square space, of about a hundred and seventy feet a side, inclosed by high palisades, wherein there was a wooden
house.

house, in which he lodged with his wife and some servants, and a little garden, which he cultivated with his own hands. He was allowed a sum equal to six-pence sterling a day, for the support of himself, his wife and servants. But he increased this poor allowance by keeping cows, of which milk he sold a part, and by giving some young people of genius lessons of geometry. During his long captivity his behaviour was that of a man, perfectly untroubled, calm, and even contented. Every day at dinner he gave his wife a treat, which was, *to expect the return to St. Peterburgh*, and dedicated two hours, from eleven till noon, and from two to seven at night, to the daily exercise of prayer.

He was always supported by the hope, that Peter III. would for his great services, wish to mount the throne; but in 1762 he was informed of this event, being filled with indignation, and grief in the situation, in which he was, he longed to know that his expectation was not disappointed. He waited several weeks, but in a anxiety varying between fear and hope, and he was over-loaded to say, that this short period of his life had appeared to him longer, than all the years of his captivity. At last on the 14th of February 1763, this long expected news came. When the Countess, who brought the order for setting him at liberty arrived, he was employed in prayer, and did not observe her

His wife made signs not to interrupt him. When he heard the news of his recall he fainted, and when recovered he fell on his knees, and thanked God with the greatest fervour.

ON the 19th he set out from Pelim, and arrived at St Petersburg on the 24th of March, clothed in the sheep-skin he had worn in his prison. All his relations had advanced to meet him. He watered them with the tears, which joy drew from his eyes, and with these were mingled the tears of the officers and foldiers, whom he had in former times led on to victory, and who on this occasion served as a retinue to him, while he walked in procession to his house. From the character now given of Munich, we may well judge, that this was the most delightful day of his life.

ON the 31st of same month he was introduced to the Emperor, who after having invested him with the badges of the Order of St Andrew, and re-established him in his former rank, said to him,

“ I HOPE your advanced age will not prevent you
 “ from serving me still.” “ Since your Majesty,
 “ replied the Count, has made me pass from dark-
 “ ness to light, and recalled me from the wilds of
 “ Siberia to admit me to the foot of your throne,
 “ you shall find me always ready to risk my life in
 “ your service. Neither my long banishment, nor
 “ the

“ the rigours of the climate of Siberia, have been in
 “ any degree able to extinguish that ardour, which I
 “ formerly displayed for the interests of Russia, and
 “ the glory of my Sovereign.”

MUNICH enjoyed the favour of Peter III. during the short period, this prince sat on the throne, and the protection of Catharine II. till the year 1765, when he finished his career at the age of eighty five years. But his faculties had failed him, and he had outlived his glory, like all old men, who have acted a conspicuous part in the world, and have not had the prudence to retire from the scene, when intellectual powers were forsaking them. At the time of his death Munich was Governor of Lithuania and Livonia. He had taken it into his head to make a sea port of Rocherwick; a plan, which he only did not think absurd, and Catharine II. was good enough not to oppose, from motives of indulgence to the last moments of this worthy old man, but so soon as his eyes were closed, the port was no more thought of.

THE unfortunate Leskocq too, who assisted Elizabeth in mounting the throne, but whom she had sacrificed to a cabal, covetous of the fortune of this adventurer, was not forgotten by Peter III. In another place we have observed, that this prince restored him to liberty, but that his fortune was torn from him for ever. This had he forgot. He had

learned

learned to live on little in the deserts of Siberia; and this art is much more conducive to happiness, than immense riches, which glitter but do not satisfy.

Among these restored to liberty by Peter III. one of the most considerable was the Count de Hordt, a Swedish nobleman of the most illustrious birth, who had left his country, in consequence of being concerned in a plot, formed by Count de Brahe, in favour of the court, to suppress the Diet, and render the King's authority again supreme. Count de Hordt, of high reputation with the most celebrated Generals in Europe, entered the Prussian service, after his escape from Sweden, and after having risen to the rank of Lieutenant-general, and gained the esteem of Frederick the Great, was made prisoner by the Russians some days after the battle of Gaurin; where Frederick was completely beaten.

In spite of being treated with the respect due to his rank and reputation, Count de Hordt underwent the rigours of the hardest captivity for near three years. This captivity did not terminate till the death of Elizabeth, who on this prisoner, took vengeance for a part of outrage, which she imputed to her father received from the King of Prussia, because he had broken on the wheel a Russian Lieutenant, convicted of having formed a plot to assassinate

mate the garrison, to which he and his companions had been committed.

PETER III. who adopted a good system of policy directly opposite to Elizabeth's, lost no time in making reparation for the injuries done to Count de Hordt, not only by setting him at liberty, but likewise by giving him the kindest reception, and admitting him into his confidence.

CHAP. VIII.

ADMINISTRATION of Peter III.—His alliance with the King of Prussia.—His reforms.—Measures executed by them.—His imprudence.—Particulars of the Czar's private life.—Of Catharine, his wife.—The Countess of Wieronszoff, Peter's mistress.

AT the time of the Empress Elizabeth's death, Russia was at war with the King of Prussia. In concert with the courts of Versailles and Vienna, and had reason to look for the most glorious success. Frederick's resources were almost exhausted, and his vigorous and successful resistance brought to the verge of being overcome by the number and preponderance of his enemies. But Peter, an ardent admirer of Frederick, had no sooner mounted the throne, than he dispatched an officer to Frederick

to Berlin, with instructions to propose to him a speedy reconciliation. This offer was joyfully accepted by Frederick, who immediately came to an advantageous agreement. He had to do with a young man, whose weak side he knew, and profited by it. Frederick possessed the quality of turning the character of those, with whom he negotiated to his advantage, and a truce was instantly concluded. Peter not only recalled the Russian troops, that were serving in the Austrian army, but also sent, a short time after, twenty thousand men to the assistance of his hero. Thus in the space of four months, the Russians joined the Prussian army to drive from Silesia the same Austrians, to whom a short time before they had opened a passage into this same province.

FOLLOWING his own inclination, without consulting either the allies, or the interest and honour of his empire, Peter aspired at no more than regaining what he called the inheritance of his fathers.— This was the share of the duchy of Sleswick, possessed by them, which he claimed in quality of Duke of Holstein. The object of his claim had been ceded to Denmark by a treaty in the year 1732. He was therefore on the eve of dragging his subjects into an expensive war with the King of Denmark, by means of these pretensions, which many regarded as chimerical or ill founded. It is a fact that the

same

same courier brought orders for the Russian troops to join the King of Prussia, and for raising an army for advancing to the frontiers of Holstein, which Peter proposed to command in person.

WITH regard to the interior government of his states, he turned all his attention to different plans of reform, and it cannot be denied, whatever harm may have been raised against him, that notwithstanding his precipitation and imprudence, Russia is indebted to him for many useful and important changes. He abolished the *Secret Chamber*, or *Secret Inquisition*, invented by Alexis Michaelowitch. The committee, which we noticed, when speaking of Elizabeth, and the, notwithstanding all her death, did not suppress, was established for trying those who were suspected of high treason, or crimes of such by the prince, that is, by his ministers. The most improbable suspicion, the most absurd accusation, was sufficient for this tribunal to condemn a man of every rank and sex, and to make them undergo the most cruel tortures. It is often said, that such tribunals always sit in the night, in the streets, and in some other connate, where the cry of Liberty is the rallying word, that is, the word of Committees; and the Despot of Constantinople is not the only monarch, who finds delight in the misfortune of the man, that has a different pleasure.

BUT Peter III. who has been often calumniated, was perfectly sensible of the absolute necessity of judicial forms for the condemnation and punishment of criminals, and that any other procedure was a cowardly assassination. In this spirit he abolished the tribunal which we just mentioned, as well as several privileges, which the nobility gloried in, for the oppression of the poor slaves, that belonged to them. But, while he deprived the nobility of such rights as were an outrage to nature, he exempted them from the indispensable necessity, under which they were, of serving in the army, and granted them liberty to travel out of the empire, which they could not do in former times, without express permission from the sovereign. It was also a part of his plan to reform the numerous abuses, which had crept into the administration of justice, and to establish a more regular and less vitiated system of jurisprudence. Waiting for this reform, he kept a watchful eye on the tribunals, went in person to the senate, which he found almost abandoned, and in a strong but noble manner, showed the senators, how sensible he was of their negligence. This harangue against prevailing abuses, had its effect, but it lasted only for a day. The senators of St Petersburg are courtiers, and it is well known, what is to be expected from this class of men.

DURING

DURING the first days of his reign, which shone in brightness, like those of the tyrants, whose names have appeared on the page of history, for no purpose but to stain it, Peter III. proposed so many useful regulations, and accompanied them with so many judicious reflections, that several people confessed themselves wrong in having despised him. They even imagined, that during Elizabeth's reign, he had affected to appear a weak man only from political motives; but his subsequent behaviour soon undeceived them. It showed them that this prince had always acted in character, and was as weak as imprudent; that if he had enough of sense to accept the plans, which others suggested to him, he had not enough to execute them at a proper time; that he was mad in wishing to reform every thing, without having any share of that genius and feeling so necessary to a reformer. In fact, the regulations just mentioned were accompanied with others equally ridiculous and childish. Some of them were even ruinous; and among those, which in themselves were useful and laudable, there were not a few, which could with any safety be pursued at the commencement of a reign, had not they been wholly repugnant to the manners and genius of the Russians. For instance, he had irritated the Clergy, who are never irritated with impunity, by secularizing the property of the monasteries, and assigning

to the monks, pensions, inferior to the revenues he had seized on, but sufficient to make them live in ease and comfort. He also prohibited any novices from being received into monasteries, before the age of thirty years. He added greatly to the grievances charged to his account, by causing be removed from the churches, a number of images of saints, which were really objects of idolatry to the Russians. But the enthusiasts raised the loudest cries against him, because he banished the archbishop of Novogorod, for having refused to subscribe what the prelate termed sacrilegious innovations; and indeed they were imprudent, because the Russians were not yet enlightened enough to adopt regulations, which almost all the governments of Europe, not groaning under the rod of fanaticism, have made haste to establish. In short, a general discontent broke out among these superstitious people, and Peter was obliged to recall the archbishop of Novogorod. This prince's enemies, that is, the clergy, gave out; that, being brought up in the Lutheran principles, he had embraced the Greek religion, only to raise himself to the throne, and when he found himself, as he imagined, properly and securely seated, he persuaded himself that dissimulation was unnecessary. This appeared plain from the contempt he publicly discovered for the rites and ceremonies,

monies, which were the objects of the most profound reverence among his subjects.

HE could not be forgiven for having built a Lutheran chapel in the fortress of Oranienbaum, for having been present at its dedication, and for having distributed books of spiritual songs among his German soldiers, who followed the worship of their fathers. It cannot be denied that Peter III. violated the rules of propriety too openly, yet no notice would have been taken of such minute parts of his conduct, if he had not abridged himself from the consecration of a Russian church at the same time and place. The eye of an emperor is seldom imposed on. Nothing escapes him, and what would be to any other person a matter of indifference, is to him an unpardonable grievance.

It will hardly be credited, that it was imposed to him as a criminal act, that of two ships, which were launched in his reign, he had named one *Prince George*, and the other, *Isidore*, after his uncle, and the King of Prussia. They maintained that he had insulted the saints by giving the names of men to these ships, and that they were strong enough to draw down the curses of heaven upon the Russian navy; and consequently they expelled at Catharine II. that she would believe that she was new. Being a better politician, though not a greater enthusiast, than her husband, she pursued a more

their intreaties. The ships were christened anew; received the names of *St Nicholas* and *St Alexander*, and were the only ships taken by the Turks during the war 1768.

ONE of Peter's most heinous crimes, which brought on him the heaviest load of prejudice, and gave great offence to the army, was the preference he gave in public to the *Holstein-guards*, by the introduction of the *Prussian* discipline, and the new uniforms, which he gave several regiments. The *Guards* accustomed to remain in the capital, openly expressed their murmurs, when this prince sent a part of them into *Pomeriana*, where the army was collecting, which was destined to act against *Denmark*. He disaffected the nobility, by appointing his uncle, *Prince Holstein*, generalissimo of his armies, and by reposing his principal confidence in foreigners. He raised a general hatred against himself, by publicly expressing his contempt for the *Russian* nation, by his manners and religion. In short, his admiration, or rather enthusiasm for *Frederick the Great*, with whom the *Russians* had been so recently at war, was a new grievance stated against him, with the heavier aggravations, that national pride and fanaticism, when offended, take a pleasure in irritating these grievances.

It was repeated with a sort of malignity, that during *Elizabeth's* life time, he had one day expressed

pressed his sorrow to a foreign minister, that ever the Empress had invited him to Russia. "If I had continued Duke of Holstein, he had added, I would have at present been commanding a regiment in the service of the King of Prussia, and have had the honour of serving under the standard of that monarch; an honour, which I value much more highly than that of being Grand Duke." After having ascended the throne, he still continued to call the King of Prussia his master, and one day conversing on this subject with one of his favourites, "You know," he said to him "that I have always been a faithful servant to my master, and you ought to remember, that I have always informed him of the secrets of the cabinet." The person to whom he addressed this discourse, appearing surpris'd, and hesitating to answer, "What are you afraid of," he asked, "The Empress is no longer in the world, and she can no longer send you to Siberia."

It is well known, that he fell in with the Prussian army, and that he expressed the greatest satisfaction, when he had been accepted into their service. Immediately on receiving this offer, he was made Lieutenant-general, but his health was so weak, that he led himself in a new campaign under the command of the discharge of the artillery of the fortress, garrisons, &c.

did entertainment, and drank to the health of his master, till he got completely intoxicated.

DURING the short period of his reign, he kept up a constant correspondence with this prince, from whom, he always received the best counsels. Frederick like an able politician at first dissuaded him from the war with Denmark, but finding him obstinately determined on it, he advised him first to get himself crowned at Moscow with the usual solemnities, and when he should set out for Holstein, to take with him the foreign ministers, and the Russians whose friendly dispositions towards him he had reason to suspect. The same prince, who was any thing less than an enthusiast, but knew priests, whose art cannot impose on philosophers; he exhorted Peter to take good care not to alienate the church lands, and not to interfere with any thing connected with the dress of the clergy, and to pay every kind of attention to his wife. This monarch, accomplished in the science of government, already foresaw the disagreeable consequences, to which the Emperor would expose himself by his imprudent conduct. He also ordered his ambassador at St Petersburg, to show the Empress every mark of respect.

Nothing can better exhibit the character of Peter III. than his foolish behaviour to Catharine. At his accession to the throne, he very frequently expressed

pressed the deference, which he owed to her superior genius, and at same time he let the public see, that he had for her the most deep rooted aversion. By an imprudence, that admits of no explanation, he even ordered her to be dressed in presence of all the court, with all the external badges of sovereign power, while he himself in the character of a simple colonel, presented to her the officers of his regiment. At the Benediction of Waters, he made the Empress take charge of the whole exhibition, while he mounted guard like a colonel, and saluted her with the pike. On these occasions Catharine's dignified air struck all the spectators, and it was impossible for them not to contrast it with the unprincely appearance of her husband. In this way did Peter inform every body, that his wife was better qualified than himself, for governing the empire. Even at the very moment, that he had firmly resolved to divorce and confine her, he secured to her the esteem of the whole nation, by announcing publicly that she had ruined his own. It is said, that he often behaved to her in the most brutal manner, and that once, when he was giving an entertainment in honour of the King of Prussia, he insulted her to such a degree, that she burst into tears, and left the table.

SEVERAL historians have controverted this fact, which others affirm to be very authentic, but there

is one well known and disputed by nobody; that Peter more than once discovered his design of arresting Catharine, and her son the Grand Duke, of excluding them from the throne, and of marrying his mistress, Elizabeth Countess of Woronzoff. He had hardly formed this plan, when Catharine was informed of it, by the imprudence of the Countess herself. There is one thing certain, that by this channel, by her agents, but especially by Peter's own indiscretion, she always got timely intelligence of every measure taken against her. This enabled her to choose the fittest moments for action, and to provide for her own safety, by preventing her husband's plots.

THE following particulars respecting this Countess of Woronzoff, and the internal order of Peter III's palace, are furnished from Count de Hordt's memoirs, which cannot be read without feeling.

“THE Emperor,” writes the Count, “had bid me return to sup with him, in his little room. There I found a company very different from that at dinner, where the Empress was. The Countess of Woronzoff was one, whom he had made choice of for a mistress. She was neither beautiful, nor pretty; she had neither wit, nor knowledge of the world. But in this, as in all other things of the kind, taste must not be disputed, and every one has his own. This lady pleased

“ me the less, as there were several great beauties
 “ of the party. Some courtiers were at this sup-
 “ per, but there were no foreigners, but the Eng-
 “ lish Envoy, and I. The supper was very cheer-
 “ ful, and lasted most of the night, for the Empe-
 “ ror, was fond of such parties; but they did not
 “ prevent him from employing all the morning in
 “ business.

“ THE Empress also had her society every morn-
 “ ing. I went regularly to pay my court to her.
 “ She received every body with as much grace as
 “ affability. Yet in spite of all her efforts to appear
 “ cheerful, it was easy to discover in her a great ap-
 “ pression of sorrow. She is better acquainted than
 “ any other person with the impetuous and violent
 “ character of her husband, and perhaps she was
 “ then presaging, what was shortly going to take
 “ place.

“ EVERY night there was an assembly at her pa-
 “ lace, and she never missed inviting the different
 “ persons, who attended, to sup with her. I was
 “ ten of the number of these guests. As this prin-
 “ cess has an extraordinary share of understanding,
 “ and has always had a taste for reading, she ex-
 “ pressed herself on subjects in a manner so agree-
 “ ble, that she was admired by all, who had the ho-
 “ nour of approaching her. One night when I was
 “ one of her party, Prince Leon Nuriikin, Grand

“ Usher, and the Emperor’s favourite, came in and
 “ whispered in my ear, that they had been search-
 “ ing for me through all the city, to come and sup
 “ with his Majesty in the Countess’s lodgings. Wo-
 “ ronzoﬀ was no otherwise designed, but some-
 “ times the courtiers called her *Pompadour*, a nick-
 “ name given her by the Empress Elizabeth. I in-
 “ treated Naritskin to act so, as I might be over-
 “ looked that evening, for it was not in my power
 “ to dispense with supping with the Empress. At
 “ first he knew not how to manage matters, but as
 “ he was a polite well bred man, and my own
 “ friend, I told him ingenuously and without re-
 “ serve. *That is your affair. It is impossible for*
 “ *me to tell the Empress what we are talking of, and*
 “ *I stay where I am. It is your business to get out of*
 “ *this disagreeable scrape, and to extricate me the best*
 “ *way you can.* He retired and I entertained no
 “ doubts of him fulfilling my wishes; but all at once
 “ we heard a noise, the two leaves of the door open-
 “ ed, the Emperor came in, and after having very
 “ politely saluted the Empress and all her circle, he
 “ called me with a smiling and graceful look, which
 “ he always had, took me by the arm, and said to
 “ the Empress. *Madam, excuse me if I to night car-*
 “ *ry off one of your guests. It is this Prussian, whom*
 “ *I have made be sought for through all the city.* The
 “ Empress

“Empress smiled, I made a low bow, and went out with my conductor.”

“AT the Countess of Woronzoff’s we found, as usual, all the ladies, who composed the society, or if you please, the court of this favourite.

“NEXT day I returned to the Empress’ palace, who without speaking to me of what had passed the preceding evening, said to me with a smile, *Come always to sup with me, when there is no obstacle in your way*——I availed myself of this liberty.

“NEXT day there was a public entertainment, and I dined at court. At table I was set opposite to the Emperor, who spoke of nothing but his friend the King of Prussia. He was acquainted with the minutest particulars of his campaigns. He was informed of all his military arrangements, and knew the uniform and strength of all his regiments. In a word his enthusiasm was such, that he declared aloud, that he would very soon put all his troops on the same footing, and really did so a short time after. - All the old uniforms were changed, and the Emperor himself began by changing his.”

C H A P. IX.

PETER III. forms the plan of confining Catharine.—A party is formed to save this princess, and raise her to the throne.—She consents.—The revolution effected.—The troops and senate declare in her favour.—She is proclaimed Empress of the Russians.—Irresolution and pusillanimity of Peter III.—He wishes to enter into an accommodation.—His proposals are not listened to.—He wishes to fly to Cronstadt.—He is refused admittance.—His despair.—He abdicates the crown, and delivers himself up into the hands of Catharine.—He is carried to Robscha where he dies.

THE danger, which threatened Catharine, was daily growing more imminent. Her friends, as well as those, who formed Peter's court, were all persuaded, that this princess was on the verge of losing her liberty. The house building at Schlusfeldburg by the Emperor's orders, for a person of the first rank, was rising so rapidly, that it was supposed, it would be finished in the space of six weeks. Peter had gone in person to examine it, and no great penetration was necessary to discover, that it was designed for the Empress. In this critical moment those of this princess' party assembled at St Petersburg, to watch over her safety. Except the princess Dashkew and her particular friends, there was a very small

Small number of the first nobility on the Emperor's side. Her principal partizans were Prince Volkonski, Count Panin, the Grand Duke's tutor, Count Razomoufski, Hetman of Ukraine, and the Counts Orloffs, Alexis and Gregory. In this assembly it was proposed to follow the plan of the Chancellor Bestucheff, which was to declare the Grand Duke, Emperor, and Catharine, Regent during his minority; and that is what would have been done in any state, where the order of succession is better regulated than in Russia. It was only a few days before the revolution, that the inconveniencies inseparable from a minority, the aversion of the people for Catharine, and her ability, engaged her party to form the revolution, to place her upon the throne, and for carrying this design into execution it was decided that they should act at the time of Peter's departure to Berlin.

Although only a few had engaged in support of this dangerous project, it could not be kept secret from the Emperor's partizans, who certainly thought him to have this matter investigated; but those supposing the most unbounded confidence in him, whom he had appointed to watch the Emperor, never could resolve on paying the least attention to these reports. He was convinced fully and completely of their falshood, that every intelligence of any importance put him in possession of the truth.

revolution at two o'clock in the morning, an officer in whom Peter confided, arrived at Oranienbaum, and asked to speak with him on business of the greatest importance. Having got admission with some difficulty, he informed the Emperor of the different circumstances, that indicated a conspiracy ready to break forth. But this prince, always blinded by prejudice, far from paying any attention to this advice, ordered the officer to be put immediately under arrest, for having dared to interrupt his sleep, at so early an hour. It was at this very moment that preparations were making for dethroning him; for a circumstance, which was no way connected with the plan of conduct adopted by the Emperor, had obliged his enemies to hasten the moment of executing their designs.

A LIEUTENANT of the Guards in the Empress's faction, had just been arrested. His friends were alarmed at this incident, and concluded that the Emperor had discovered their plot. Though they were not long in learning that this officer had been arrested only for some irregularity in the service, yet the consternation spread among them, was so great, that they thought it safest not to delay the execution of their enterprise.

THE Empress, who had remained at Petershoff, understanding that the decisive moment was rapidly advancing, when she was to be placed either on
the

the throne, or in a cloister, became a prey to the most excruciating reflexions. For some moments she even appeared to want the resolution so necessary at a crisis, of which instant decision or ruin is the consequence. She hesitated whether to give her consent to the measures, which had been so recently adopted; but her party being convinced that the least delay might prove fatal to them, sent an empty coach from St Peterburg to Petershoff on the evening of the 27th of June 1762. This was the signal agreed on to inform her of the necessity of repairing to the capital. Catharine, who, during the interval, had recovered her courage and usual strength of mind, went out of her room at three o'clock of the morning, and alone crossed the garden, as far as the spot, where the coach was waiting for her. In the coachman she recognized Count Alexis Orloff, who only spoke two words to her, *Courage and Dispatch*, and set off like lightning. It had been settled, that Count Panin should be appointed to watch over the person of the Grand Duke, that Gregory Orloff should remain in the capital to gain over some officers and soldiers of the Guards, and that Count Razoumowski should lead his regiment in readiness to receive the Emperor. In consequence of these arrangements, Catharine, on her arrival at St Peterburg, went directly to the quarters of the Guards Hmailowiki, and it was to

early, that Count Razoumowiki, their lieutenant-colonel, had not yet arrived; a circumstance, which might have alarmed Catharine, if she had not been possessed of as much courage as presence of mind. Without being disconcerted, she called to the serjeant, who was devoted to her, because she had been god-mother to one of his children, and commanded him to go in quest of Razoumowiki. During this interval, and to profit by the moments, which were precious, she assembled around her, the officers and soldiers, who immediately came running, some dressed, others half naked. She confirms the courage of those who were ashamed of appearing before her in this state, by praising their prompt obedience of orders. Then addressing the whole regiment, she described to them, in an energetic manner, the improper conduct of the Emperor, his public contempt for the Russians, his aversion for their customs, and his attachment to foreigners. She enumerated the dangers, to which her person, as well as her son, and the principal nobility, had been exposed. She expatiated on that, which threatened their religion and government, and exhorted all, who wished to save their country, and her son, to join her. This harangue, every now and then interrupted by sighs and sobs, was short, but affecting, and the graces of the august personage, who delivered, lending it new force, she made an instantaneous

aneous impreflion upon the greater part of the soldiers, who answered her by loud acclamations. Some officers appeared to hesitate, but the arrival of Razoumowiki dispelled their fears, and all the regiment promised to her, to make a sacrifice of every thing for the support of her own, and her young son's cause. Then Catharine repaired to St Mary's Church at Kawan, and on the road was joined by some detachment of guards, and several of the principal nobility. Service was performed by the archbishop of Novgorod, before whom the Empress took the usual oath, to preserve inviolate the privileges and regalia of the Russian Empire. Immediately the people broke into her, and she in turn took the oath of allegiance to her Majesty. When this ceremony was concluded, Catharine went to the Senate, the members of which acknowledged her for their Empress, and only sovereign. A report had been spread, that Peter, the evening before, had been killed by a fall from his horse, and this had been not a little useful to the success of the revolution. The Empress' return increased every sentiment. Two regiments of Guards, who had lately left St Peterburg to join the army in Poland, were instantly recalled, and a large number of them irritated against the Empress, for obliging them to leave the capital, that when they should appear themselves under the standard of the Revolution.

SUCH was the hatred, that Peter III. had brought on himself, that so soon as intelligence was received of his deposition, and Catharine's elevation to the throne, the manifesto, which she published in justification of her conduct, was read with universal joy.

ALL the Emperor's partisans were arrested, and among others Prince George of Holstein, who had come to St Petersburg on the 26th inst. under pretence of the preparations necessary for the Emperor's departure, but in fact to watch the movements of the opposite party. It was he, who had put the officer of the Guards under arrest, and thus spread the alarm among the Empress' adherents, and, contrary to his intention, hastened the revolution, which dethroned his nephew. Catharine met with opposition in no quarter, and though the streets of St Petersburg were filled with soldiers, who in these terrible convulsions, usually give a loose to every sort of excess with impunity, the greatest order and strictest discipline were always maintained, and no person received the least insult.

AT six o'clock in the evening, the Empress mounted on a beautiful horse, in a man's dress, the uniform of the Guards, a branch of oak on her head and a drawn sword in her hand, repaired to Peterhoff, accompanied by the Princesses Dashkoff, Razoumowski, Orloff, her principal partisans, and followed by ten thousand of the troops. Scarcely was she

she

she gone four wersts from the capital, when Prince Gallitzin, vice-chancellor, met her with a letter from the Emperor, but he was prevailed on to join the Empress' suite, and took the oath of allegiance at Crasnoc-Kapak, a small village only twelve miles from St Petersburg. Count Woronzoff, prime minister, also presented himself before the Empress. *I come,* said he, *in name of the Emperor, my master, to know what your intentions are.* Some person observed to him, that Catharine had taken possession of the throne, and that he was addressing himself to his sovereign. He offered to take the oath of allegiance, but having generously refused to abandon his master, they took his sword from him, and sent him prisoner to St Petersburg.

AT Crasnoc-Kapak there was a miserable hovel, into which the Empress went, and continued there some time employing herself with burning a great number of papers. She there appeared, it is said, overwhelmed with grief, and shed a flood of tears; yet she slept some hours upon a bed, which her attendants had formed with their pelisses. At break of day, having recovered her courage and former countenance, she again mounted her horse, and went to the monastery of St Sergius, where she halted a second time. At eight o'clock, A. M. General Ismailoff delivered to her a message from the Emperor, whose situation was become more and

more critical. But before we proceed farther, let us see with what this prince occupied himself.

WHILE the revolution was coming to maturity at St Peterburg, he had remained at Oranienbaum in an unaccountable security. Even the night preceding the day so fatal to him, he had spent in company with some of his favourites in excess and riot, and had retired at a very late hour almost intoxicated. In the morning, after having visited the caverns, he had set out, dressed in his uniform of the Russian fashion, to go to Petershoff, where he had agreed with the Empress to give a pompous anniversary entertainment in honour of his birth day. It is affirmed, that he intended to have Catharine arrested in the midst of this entertainment. He had not gone half the road, when a gentleman, devoted to his interest, who had made his escape from St Peterburg, asked to speak with him in private. Peter said to him in a bantering way; *What have you so urgent? I see none but persons, who have matters of importance to communicate to me. When you return to Petershoff, you will have time enough to speak to me.* But the gentleman earnestly repeating his solicitations, the Emperor at last alighted from his coach and learned what had passed at St Peterburg. His prejudices and obstinacy were still so great, that he doubted of the reality of this news, and till he got a most minute detail of all the circumstances, he

he did not seem to awake from the lethargy, into which his immoderate security had thrown him. At last he gave way to indignation and terror. He was at first damped and confounded, but recovering from this fit of despair, he sent an *aid-de-camp* to Oranienbaum with orders to the garrison to march immediately to Petershoff. When he arrived at the palace he found the Empress had left it, but could learn no more. Marshal Munich advised him to put himself at the head of his Holstein troops, and to march immediately for St Peterburg. *I will go before you*, said the brave warrior to him, *and nobody shall reach your Majesty, till he has gone over my body.* If this advice had been followed, success would have been as infallible as glorious; for although the Holstein troops scarcely amounted to a thousand men, they were firmly attached to their Sovereign, and Munich commanded them, which doubled their number. Besides Peter had still some friends in St Peterburg, and the guards, who were possessed of no resolution, would have been brought over by his presence, to rank under his own colours. But Peter was defective in courage at the very moment, when courage was to decide the fate of the contending parties.

The perplexity, in which he was, received considerable addition from the behaviour of those who had accompanied him from Oranienbaum, or more

him at Petershoff. Nothing was to be heard, but the lamentations of women, who furrounded him, venting the bitterest sorrow at the apprehensions of their approaching fate. All were crying, all wished to give advice, and several of the Empress's partisans, who were present, were wilfully augmenting the confusion.

EVERY moment added to the Prince's danger and despair. He had successive intelligence, that the Empress had received the oath of allegiance from a great number of people of all ranks, that she had got possession of the capital, and was advancing at the head of ten thousand men. Then discouraged by news so afflicting, he dispatched courier after courier to propose an accommodation, but none returned with an answer. In this extremity he resolved to take refuge in Cronstadt; a course he ought to have pursued more early, and it would have undoubtedly and effectually baulked his wife's attempts. Munich, who was sensible of the importance of this step, had advised him to it, on the first rumour of the revolution. He discovered his mistake, and so soon as he arrived at Petershoff, he dispatched General Lievers, and Prince Baratinski to take possession of this place, with orders to examine its state. General Lievers with some difficulty found admission into Cronstadt, and Prince Baratinski returned to Petershoff, to assure the Czar.

TRAVELS IN RUSSIA.

that no intelligence of the revolution had yet reached that place; that the General was making every preparation for receiving his Majesty, who would there find a safe asylum, which the Emperor's troops could not enter, and whence he could, if imperious necessity required, go by sea to his Holstein dominions; but that the greatest diligence was necessary to prevent anticipation. On this report, the Emperor ordered the Holstein troops, who were already on their march to Peterhof to return to Oranienbaum; but by an incomprehensible delay, their march was delayed till midnight. When he presented himself at the harbour, the Emperor refused entrance to the Yacht, in which he was, under pretence, that it was too late. His astonishment was inexpressible. It was vastly augmented when his name was sent in, and answer was returned, that his name was an additional reason for refusing admittance into the harbour; and as he had not time, the watchmen threatened to fire the guns upon his yacht, if he did not immediately depart.

The following was the cause of this singular conduct, very different from what he had expected. General Lievers on his arrival at Cronstadt, he took the command of the fort, but perceiving that the garrison had no knowledge of the revolution, he did not wish to give the alarm by publishing the news, and as he was every moment expecting the

see the Emperor, he had thought it most proper to wait for his arrival to secure the attachment of the garrison, and give orders hostile to the Empress' party. In the mean time Admiral Talyfin arrived at Cronstadt. He had been dispatched thither by the Empress, who in the confusion and disorder of the first movements, had forgotten to secure this important fortress. He was received without hesitation, and considering the state of affairs, he thought it proper to arrest General Lievers without loss of time. He was quickly obeyed, for sailors more willingly execute the orders of an Admiral, than of a General. After having secured the person of the latter, he informed the garrison of the revolution, which had taken place at St Peterf-burg. He told them, that the Emperor was deposed, that the army and the senate had declared for Catharine, that all opposition was useless, nay dangerous. These arguments accompanied by an abundant distribution of brandy and roubles, among those, who required more than brandy, produced the desired effect. Catharine was proclaimed sole Empress, and Talyfin without opposition saw himself master of a fortified place, the possession of which, would have rendered the success of the revolution at least doubtful if not prevented it.

THE heart of Peter III. was wounded with sorrow, when he saw himself driven from the har-

bour of Cronstadt. The only resource left to him in this woeful conjuncture, was to sail immediately and seek an asylum in Sweden, whence he could easily join his army in Pomerania, or pass over into the Holstein Dominions. But it was the fate of this monarch to be incapable of taking any decisive step. — He always flattered himself that some reconciliation might be effected between him and the Empress; and this notion joined to the tears and importunity of the women, who were on board his yacht, determined him to return to Oranienbaum, where he arrived at four o'clock in the morning. We have noticed that when he set out on the preceding day, he wore the Prussian uniform. On his return he was dressed in the Russian uniform, which he ought never to have quitted. Then he told us how much he had erred in hurting the conceits and prejudices of his subjects. These little observations merit attention, because they concern the gods of great events, and serve to characterize the principal actors of the Drama.

AT Oranienbaum, where he returned with disorder and fear, he shut himself up in his apartments, and forbade any person to come near him. At ten o'clock he appeared again with a calmer look, and a greater air of mind. His Polish guards no longer fixed their eyes upon their master, than they run in crowds to rally round him.

him. Then a most affecting scene took place. Some endeavoured to kiss his hand, others raised themselves up to see him, some fell on their knees, or prostrated themselves before him; all shed tears of affection, and conjured him with assurances of the firmest attachment to lead them against the army of the Empress, promising not to abandon him, whatever should happen, and to sacrifice their lives for the defence of his. These affectionate expressions of zeal and fidelity inflamed him so, that he appeared for a moment animated with their spirit, and cried *To Arms*; But this start was, if we may use the expression, only the last sigh of the small share of courage, with which his heart was warmed. The reflexion that resistance would be useless, and his own irresolution, again induced him to think of submission. In this crisis there was need of a firm soul, and Peter had it not. He was therefore ruined beyond recovery. This happened to a prince in our own times, who was brought into a similar situation, whence magnanimity alone could extricate him, but this he possessed not. The consequences are too well known.

WE have left Catharine in the monastery of St Sergius, where General Ismailoff had delivered her a message from her husband. The weak and dastardly Czar offered to resign the crown into her hands, on condition that she would allow him to retire into Holstein

stein with the Countess of Woronzoff, and Goudewitch, who was attached to him. But Catherine's interest on this occasion being to secure the Czar's person without effusion of blood, endeavoured to amuse the prince, in order to prevent him from any desperate step. She knew well that he might put himself at the head of his Holstein troops, and defend his life to the last extremity. He might also escape, and plunge the empire into all the horrors of a civil war. The ability, with which she conducted an undertaking as difficult as dangerous, demonstrated that she had also the address necessary to ensure its success.

WITH much calmness and indifference she represented to Ismailoff, how foolish it would be to oppose her, since she was put in full possession of the sovereign authority by the consent of the civil bodies, and different classes of the state. She showed him the troops encamped around her, and said that the efforts of Peter would serve to put her in possession of his throne, and draw upon himself and his party the rage of an irritated army. She therefore proposed that he should of his own accord resign the crown, and that the terms of his abdication should be such as she effectually convinced him to accept. His submission was left him. He was won by her soothing eloquence, and engaging promises of success, and above all by the address of her counsellors.

Ismailoff took upon him to persuade his master to prevent the effusion of blood, by giving way to circumstances.

ON his return to Oranienbaum, he found the Emperor with Munich, the Countess of Woronzoff, Goudowitch, and some courtiers, who were waiting for him with the greatest anxiety. The Emperor and he went into another room, and the result of their conference was; that Peter III. the Countess, Goudowitch, and Ismailoff got into the same coach, which had brought the latter back, and went to Petershoff without attendants or guards. They arrived there at half an hour after noon, and the Emperor was immediately separated from those, who had accompanied him. The Empress declined seeing him, but she sent Count Panin, who was received by himself. The public is ignorant, and doubtless will be for ever ignorant of what passed in this conference, between this nobleman and his dethroned Emperor; but the weakness and pusillanimity of the latter cannot be expressed in a more striking manner, than he himself exhibited them in the act of his abdication, by which the interview terminated.

He was carried to Robscha the same day, where he was made a prisoner. This is a small imperial palace, about twenty wersts from Petershoff. The Empress too returned the same day to St Peterburg, and

and entered the capital amidst the acclamations and applauses of the people. She rode on horseback. The fireets were filled with a prodigious multitude, who crowded about her on her way, and kissed her hand, which she held out to every person that approached. A great number of priests had assembled around the avenues of the palace. When she came to the place where they were, she stopped to kiss the most dignified among them on the cheek, while they kissed her hand; a manner of salutation, which, as we have observed, is employed in Russia, to express the highest degree of respect.

As soon as men's minds, which are always agitated at the beginning of a revolution, had recovered a little calmness, and as soon as the princes, who thought they had got vengeance enough, ceased their intrigue, and rear their heads, a great number were seen to repent of having abandoned their sovereign. The populace, always ready to pass from one extreme to another, took pity on this unhappy monarch. He was no more an ignorant, indolent, and a bad governor, an undervaluer of the people, the most acceptable to the nation. He was a moderate prince, who, in spite of his weakness and incapacity, had qualities proper to make himself beloved by the people, and in reality had secured himself to all around him.

WHILE the Empress was on her way to Petershoff with her army, several soldiers had given strong proofs of discontent; and it has been since known, that if, at the first news of the revolution, Peter III. had appeared in person, a part of the troops would have come over to his side. His friends had perceived this discontent, and secretly fomented it. But these murmurs caused only a very slight fermentation, and the accidental death of Peter restored peace to the Empire, and delivered it from the horrors of a civil war, which were threatening it. On the seventh day of his confinement at Robscha, this prince died on the 6th of July, old style, and in the thirty fourth year of his age. His body was transported to St Alexander Newski, and exposed on a state bed, where, according to the custom of the Russians, people of all ranks were admitted to kiss his hand. It was afterwards interred in the church of this monastery, without monument or inscription to recall his name to the remembrance of posterity, who now scarcely recollect him. Such is the fate of these insignificant characters, whom their birth raises to thrones, from which their incapacity hurls them, if, under their reign, the weakest exertion is made to shake off the yoke.

PETER'S death was followed by none of those tragical events, with which revolutions had till then been stained. Nobody was even sent into Siberia; there

TRAVELS^t IN RUSSIA.

there was neither public nor private execution. The Empress pardoned even her personal enemies. Marshal Munich, who had given, as we have seen, the best advice to the Emperor, and he had offered to defend him at the hazard of his own life, was not regarded with an evil eye. On the contrary, the Empress was charmed with the attachment, which this foreigner had shown for him, who had brought him back from Siberia; and when she spoke to him of it, Munich replied; *It is true, Madam, that I used to cover him with my body, but after twenty years of captivity, I owed to him my liberty, and could I do less? Was not I bound by the strength of duty, and of gratitude to devote myself to his service? Now your Majesty is my sovereign, and you shall find in me the firmest loyalty.* The Empress, struck with this bold answer, showed no less greatness of soul on her side. She reposed in him the most unbounded confidence, which was well justified by the Marshal's behaviour. Whenever a new information was no more desired, Count Woronoff, who had been arrested, was set at liberty, and he was afterward employed by the administration. As for the Countess, she expected neither jealousy nor resentment from Catherine. Her person was respected, and she was permitted to enjoy, without any restriction, all that she had received from Peter's liberality. Catherine, guided by a sentiment of magnanimity peculiar to her cha-

racter, forgot the arrogance of this favourite, and the uneasiness she had brought upon her. But what completed this greatness of soul was, she also forgot the plot hatched by this ambitious woman, to strip her of the Imperial dignity, that she might invest herself with it. She was allowed to marry a private subject, and she was still vegetating at St Petersburg during our residence there. Goudowitch, who had been the Emperor's counsellor and favourite, and had given particular offence to the Empress, received permission to retire into his own country, and the Empress had the greatness of mind to forget the offence of the father, for the good of the son. Young Goudowitch was recalled into Russia, where he is now a Lieutenant General, Governor of the province of Rjazan, and a Knight of the Order of St Alexander Newski. The Holstein Guards, who had offered to the Emperor to march against Catharine, and even pressed him to give them orders to this effect; they received not the least mark of resentment. Such, as chose, were incorporated with other regiments, and the rest were left at full liberty to withdraw from Russia. Prince George of Holstein, uncle to the Emperor, who was privy to the prince's design of confining the Empress, was put under arrest, in his own palace, during the revolution; but as soon as it was terminated, she raised him to the rank of Field Marshal, and named him

him Governor of Holstein, during the Grand Duke's minority.

THE Empress was thirty four years of age, when she ascended the throne, and the success of the revolution was not less indebted to her courage and ability, than to the zeal of her party, and the favour of the people, who saw their interest in the cause, which she maintained.

WE shall conclude this narrative with an anecdote, which was told us at St Peterburg, and is very descriptive of courtiers. Some years after the revolution, Prince Potemkin, who has been always in the greatest favour with Catharine II. went one day to the palace, to pay his court to this princess. In the middle of the stair-case he met Prince Galitzin, who had been Peter's intimate friend, and that he might not appear out of countenance, he first addressed him.—*What news at court, you ask me, you say?*—*None,* Galitzin answered coldly, *but, — you are going up, and I am going down.*

C H A P. X.

IMPOSTORS, who give themselves out for Peter III.—Pugatschew is the most famous among them.—His rebellion.—He raises a commotion among the Cossacs of the Jaik.—Why they are dissatisfied.—An anecdote.—Pugatschew's success.—His hypocrisy.—His atrocities.—His marriage.—He is defeated by Prince Galitzin.—He appears again in the country.—New ravages.—Death of the unfortunate Lowitz.—Count Panin marches against Pugatschew, who is defeated.—He is abandoned by his own men.—He is executed at Moscow.—Catharine II. repairs the mischiefs he had done.

ALTHOUGH the death of Peter III. had been notorious; although his body had been exposed on a state bed, in the church of St Alexander Newski; yet in the remote provinces of the empire, several impostors started up, who had effrontery enough to pass themselves for this unfortunate Emperor.

THE first was a shoemaker of Woronetz, who took the name of Peter III. in this city, some years before the revolt of Pugatschew the Cossac, of whom we will speak immediately. This shoemaker was soon apprehended and executed.

THE second was Zfchernifchef, a deserter from Orloff's regiment. He made his appearance in 1770, in the small village of Kopenka, on the borders of the Crimea, while a body of Russian troops were passing through this place. Some sectarian priests, who supported him, had suborned a certain number of persons, who lifted him upon the altar of their church, and were preparing to proclaim him Emperor, at the very instant, when the Colonel of the regiment, informed of their design, entered the church at the head of a numerous guard, and carried off his spurious majesty from the altar, and conducted him to execution.

THE third was a peasant, who belonged to the Woronzoff's, from whose estates he had deserted, and he had engaged with the Cossacs settled at Dubofska, on the Wolga. A detachment of these Cossacs had set out from Czaritzin, in the spring 1772, to join the Russian army; he assembled them in a post-house in the middle of a desert, between the Don and the Wolga, and there he assured them he was Peter III. This band, composed of wild and credulous people, was easily persuaded. He was proclaimed Emperor, and every one of the Cossacs hastened to take the oath of allegiance to him. He nominated officers and ministers of state; but his reign was as short as that of the other two. Two regiments of Cossacs came up, and their commander made the

ceived Cossacs sensible, how widely they were mistaken. They were so much struck with the imposture, that they not only made no opposition to this officer, when he seized the pretended Peter III. but they even assisted in carrying him to prison at Czartizin. There, during his trial, the inhabitants of the fort, stirred up by the false reports of this pretended sovereign's partisans, made an insurrection for delivering him, and Colonel Zipletof, commander of the garrison, found no small difficulty in dispersing them. The impostor was then carried to an isle of the Wolga, where he received the knout, and died of the effects of this punishment. Some time after a malefactor, who had been transported to Irkutsk, made a like attempt. He had already gained an officer, who enjoyed a pension from the court, and had engaged him to get himself acknowledged. But this protection did not save his high majesty from the gibbet.

At last appeared *Jemelka Pugatschew*, whose imposture had the most serious consequences, and gave the court of St Petersburg the greatest uneasiness. Those impostures, which we have just now mentioned, were only ridiculous, but this proved not only ridiculous, but terrible. Pugatschew, born among the Cossacs of the Don at Simoveisk, a small village on the banks of this river, had made his first essay in arms in the war 1756, and had served in
that,

that, which the Russians waged with the Turks in 1769. After the siege of Bender, he had solicited his discharge, and not being able to obtain it, he had taken refuge in Poland, where he had been welcomed by some hermits of the Greek religion, who kept him concealed; but as he could not put up with their way of living, he left them. After this he went into Little Russia, and settled for some time among the Kolkolniks, who are there very numerous, and very hospitable; but, afraid of being discovered, he retired into the principal settlement, which the Cossacs have on the banks of the Ural, which was called Jaik before the rebellion. He engaged several of these Cossacs to follow him into Cuban, where he made them believe a better life awaited them. He had not then assumed among them the name of Peter III. In the mean time these seditious speeches had made him be arrested at Simbirsk, whence he was sent to Kasin to be tried. The indolence of the governor, his downfall in delivering him up to justice, furnished Pogatchew with time and means of effecting his escape, along with a priest, who had provided him with money to get the guards drunk. He again joined his old companions in arms, and with them went down the Wolga, went up the river Irghis, and reached the desert, where he declared himself Peter III. and put himself at the head of a considerable body of troops.

This country was inhabited by these same Roskoiniki, whom Peter I had persecuted, and as may be well expected from fanaticism, the spirit had passed from the fathers to the sons. Thus Pugatschew had the address to draw together a great party by means of their discontents and their religious prejudices, which he professed to adopt and protect.

THE rebellion of a numerous body of Cossacs was also one of the causes, which operated powerfully in favour of this adventurer. They inhabited one of the banks of the Jaik, were descended of the Cossacs on the Don, and formed a race of men, valiant and full of enthusiasm, for their ancient faith and customs. They valued their beards as highly as their lives. During the war with the Turks they had been asked for a certain number of recruits to form a body of hussars; they had furnished them without hesitation, but as the hussars wore no beards, their officers wanted to compel these recruits to shave. As they and their relations opposed this attempt, which they said, was aimed at their liberty and customs, General Traubenberg, a Livonian, who had been sent with a small detachment to Jaik to raise these recruits, had the imprudence to quell this kind of tumult, by making them be shaven in public, and even in the middle of the fortrefs. The other Cossacs their relations, were so provoked at this insult, that they flew to arms, wounded several

of

of the officers, massacred the General, his halbut, and the chief of the Cossacs, who had consented to this outrage, which they called *facinorage*; and what was at first only a riot, became a general insurrection through the whole country. This event, which may serve as a lesson to those inconsiderate men, who know not with what precaution popular prejudices should be opposed, happened towards the end of the year 1771.

THE spring following General Freyman took possession of Jaik, made several ringleaders among the mutineers prisoners, and put a part of his troops in garrison in the town. Several of the insurgents however escaped, and retired into the desert, particularly into the marshes in the neighbourhood of the Lake of Kamysh-Samara, where they lived on fishing, hunting, and some provisions, which their brethren conveyed to them secretly under night. Notwithstanding these succours, they led a miserable life, and were reduced to the greatest distress when Pugatschew came among them. It may be easily supposed how he was received by them, especially when he told them that he was their Emperor Peter III.; that he had escaped from prison; that the report of his death was an imposture invented by the usurper Catharina; and that he came to trust himself in their hands, to implore their protection, and by the assistance he expected from them to re-

nihilate those absurd innovations, which had been substituted in the room of the ancient and respectable customs, they had received from their ancestors. He was welcomed with enthusiasm. The Cossacs might have been undeceived, for there was not the least resemblance between Pugatschew and Peter III. but he rested his imposture on the great distance from the capital, on the ignorance of this people, and above all, on the fanatic zeal of those, whom he addressed. In short, there was no need of many arguments to bring over to his interest this horde, already openly in a state of insurrection. They therefore made the air resound with shouts of *Long live Peter III.—Long live our Emperor.*

AFTER this kind of proclamation, the leaders of these Cossacs, in name of the rest, swore allegiance to him, and promised to sacrifice their lives in his defence. With this body, and many other persons, whom he found equally disposed to side with him, Pugatschew at first proceeded to attack the new Polish settlements, which the Empress had formed on the banks of the Irghis. For this once he contented himself with carrying off their horses and arms, without giving a loose to that ferocity, of which he soon after exhibited so many instances. He then showed himself before Jaik, the governor of which he in vain summoned to surrender in the name of Peter III. He ordered an assault, but he was repulsed by the
intrepid

intrepid courage of the garrison, and, seeing he would gain nothing by a new attempt, he blocked up the place in hopes of reducing it by famine. This plan had no better success. The resolution of the garrison was equal to its courage; it refused to capitulate, although reduced to live on horse-flesh and boiled leather. This wonderful resistance protracted the siege of Jaik, till it was relieved by a body of Russians.

PUGATSCHEW was more fortunate in other enterprises. He marched towards the Cossacs of Hetz, and without much difficulty took by assault the fortresses of Rasypnais and Oternaya. He attacked that of Katischewa, which was better defended; but the fortifications being only of wood, he set fire to them, and made himself master of it. A detachment sent against him from Orenburg, under the command of Colonel Bulof, fell into his hands, for want of prudence and resolution. Another corps, commanded by General Zehernichof, arrived too late to join the first; so ill were operations concerted.

DECEIVED by parties from the army of Pugatchew, they had engaged in battle, and had been so unexpectedly attacked, that they could make no resistance. In all the engagements, the officers, who fell into the hands of Pugatchew, were massacred, as well as the soldiers, who refused to enrol themselves

felves in his army. Augmented by these recruits, and several bodies of Cossacs, which had arrived, his army became formidable, and enabled him to undertake the siege of Orenburg, which, having no force sufficient to oppose him, would have been obliged to surrender, if the garrison of Kaf oyarfk had not thrown itself into it, by cutting their way through the assailants.

So soon as the news of Pugatschew's successes were spread, numerous bodies of Barschkires, a barbarous people, who hate the Russians, and obey them only with reluctance, flocked to the standard of this rebel. Their example was followed by several Russian colonies, especially by the peasants, that work in the mines and founderies on the mountains of Ural. He employed a part of his forces in the siege of Orenburg, the rest in carrying off the silver found in the mines, and in casting brass cannon and bullets, which he used in battering the walls of Orenburg. He spent a part of the winter before this city, and with equal madness gave way to all the excesses of the most disgusting debauchery, and the most atrocious cruelty.

His army was now become so strong, that all the assistance received from Kafan was scarcely sufficient for the defence of the passage of the mountains between this city and Orenburg. The same winter he received a powerful reinforcement of about ten thousand Kalmucs, who came from the neighbourhood of

Stauropol,

Stauropol, and had revolted, after killing their commander. With all these united forces, he overran the mountains of the province of Orenburg, desolating them with fire and sword. The small town of Ufa alone resisted, and he did not force it. He made a circuitous march, and was already advancing towards Catharineburg, where he would have found copper money to the extent of more than nine hundred thousand roubles, (£202,500) when on the report of the approach of a Russian army, superior to his own, he slackened his march, and so allowed time for the forces, which were on the frontiers of Siberia to advance, and cover this fort.

IN the beginning of the rebellion, Pugatchew had affected irreproachable manners, and great devotion. He dressed like a bishop, gave his benediction to the people, and renounced all ambitious views for himself. He assured them his only aim was to place his son, the Grand Duke, on the throne, and then retire into a monastery, where he had found an asylum, when he had escaped from prison. Then uniting courage with activity, he was ready to seize all opportunities of signalizing his arms, and profiting by the advantages, which the country, where he was carrying on war, and the situation of his enemies offered him; but his good fortune dazzled him. Intoxicated with his rapid success, he became confident and pro-

tuous. Leaving chance to operate, where he ought to have overruled it, he lost the precious moments, which fortune presents in war, and which are never to be found again, when they are not laid hold of, and improved. It was attended with the greatest injury to his cause among his friends, and those, who thought on becoming his friends, that at the very moment, when some had arrived, he persuaded himself it was no more necessary to dissemble; and consequently he showed himself such as he really was, resumed his ferocious and depraved disposition, and abandoned himself to the excesses, which it prompted him to.

ONE of the most palpable mistakes, for which he has been reproached, was having delayed marching to Moscow, when the spirit of rebellion, which had already reached that city, might have delivered it into his hands. This opportunity was so much the more favourable, as it was then defended by only six hundred regular troops; and as the war with Turkey did not allow Marshal Romanzow to send great assistance from the army, then on the banks of the Danube, where the Russians were carrying on a hard, and almost a defensive war. Instead of pursuing these advantages with vigour, Pugatschew lost the greatest part of the winter before the cities of Jaik and Orenburg. During the siege of the latter, he made the officers and nobles, who
were

were brought to him, be massacred with the most shocking barbarity. On this occasion he gave out, that his design was to exterminate the Russian nobility; and to reconcile his actions with his words, he spared neither sex nor age among the nobles, who were conducted to his quarters, or whom the fortune of battle brought into his power. In his army there was no person of rank or importance; but to over-awe his subjects, he had made those of his partizans, of whom he was best assured, take the names of the principal Russian Lords, and invest themselves with the badges of the different orders of Knighthood. It is reported, that he at once, and on a signal given, made all the German officers, who were brought to him, be massacred, for fear it should be observed, that he was ignorant of a language, which Peter III. must have known.

His conduct was not less imprudent than barbarous. Although he was already married to Sophia, daughter to a Cossac, by whom he had three children, he married another wife publicly at Jalk, and suspended his military operations, to celebrate this marriage, with the pomp due to so august a ceremony. But he brought it under public dishonour, by indulging in every species of debauchery. In the midst of this entertainment, when he was beastly intoxicated, he received the accounts of General Bibikoff being on his way with a considerable body of

forces to give him battle; and these accounts only reached him, when the enemy was almost close upon him. Bibikoff had already detached Prince Galitzin, major-general in his army, who surpris'd Pugatschew's advanced posts, and cut them in pieces near the fortrefs of Katifchewa. But Bibikoff, less fortunate than Prince Galitzin, fell into an ambuscade some days after, and was massacred by Pugatschew's Cossacs. Being again attacked and beaten by Prince Galitzin, whom Bibikoff's misfortunes had not discourag'd, Pugatschew was forc'd to fly as far as Kargula, where he was overtaken by Prince Galitzin, who defeated him totally a third time, and dispers'd his army; which it was indeed easy to disperse, for it was rather a multitude in arms, than an army. This day Pugatschew escap'd with great difficulty. He however reach'd the mountains of Ural with a small number of his faithful partizans, and, in spite of this defeat, he still collect'd enough of troops to appear again with a respectable force on the east of these mountains. He made himself master of several fortresses, and burnt Troitsk; but being attacked anew by General Colin, he was worsted, and forc'd to retire again into the mountains. Become furious by repeated defeats, and bent on signifying his arms by some brilliant exploit, Pugatschew at once directed his march upon Kafan, committing in every quarter the ravages of a robber,

ber, who seems to make war only for destruction. He burnt the suburbs of Kafan, and laid siege to the citadel, where Major-General Paul Potemkin, governor of the province, had taken refuge with all his force; but, according to the opinion of the military men of this nation, he should have kept the plain, and might have kept it with glory. It is said that this conduct did no honour to the General, who avoided the Empress' displeasure, only because his uncle was in the greatest favour with her.

THE arrival of Michelson at the gates of Kafan, changed the face of affairs. Pugatschew raised the siege with precipitation, and durst not try his strength with Michelson, who was an officer of the first abilities. After resting his army two days, the General went in pursuit of the rebel, came up with him before he reached the mountains, and defeated him utterly, after several obstinate battles, which lasted near three days. On this occasion, Pugatschew's route was so general and complete, that he himself was forced to swim across the Wolga, and fled with three hundred Cossacs belonging to Jaik, who were the most completely armed, and the most obstinate of the rebels, in whom he reposed the greatest confidence. Notwithstanding this defeat, which might be supposed to have discouraged those, who had declared for him, there came to his assistance several large bodies of Barschkires, Cossacs, and

U 2

peasants,

peasants, badly armed, who had fled from the mines or the most remote countries, and were flocking to him as to their deliverer; as to one, who was to make them pass from slavery to freedom. This at least was the hope held out to them by this impostor, who seemed to derive new force from his very disasters. In short, the number of his troops then inspired him with such confidence, that he made preparations for marching to Moscow, where his emissaries had already spread a spirit of sedition among the people; but on the news of peace with the Turks being just concluded, he was afraid that a part of the army of the Danube would be employed against him, and changed the plan of his operations. He came down the Wolga, at Duboska defeated a corps of Russians, commanded by Baron de Diez, and took Penza and Saratoff by assault. The Governor of the last fortress, along with the garrison, which consisted only of fifty men, escaped from the cruelty of Pugatschew, only by cutting their way through the victorious Cossacs, who thought more on plundering the town, than pursuing their enemies. The atrocious Pugatschew made a wilderness of Saratoff. He massacred every person in it, without distinction of age or sex. From thence he proceeded down to Demistresk, which he surpris'd, and made the Governor be empalld.

LOWITZ, an astronomer, and a member of the academy of sciences at St Petersburg, was in the neighbourhood of this fortress, employed in taking levels for the canal projected between the Don and the Wolga. Pugatschew commanded his Cossacs to bring Lowitz to him, and, by a refinement of insult and cruelty, ordered him to be elevated on pikes, that he might be nearer the stars. In this horrible situation he made him be massacred in his presence. What could be expected from a robber as ignorant as cruel, who, but for the gross ignorance of the people, to whom he had applied, would have perished in the first moments of his enterprise?—But very soon we will see him receive the recompense of his crimes.

THE court, when disengaged from the war with Turkey, had seriously attended to the means of reducing Pugatschew. Count Peter Iwanowitsch Panin, brother to the gentleman, who had been governor to the Grand Duke, had received orders to march against this rebel. The General, whose reputation was very high among military people, had distinguished himself particularly at the taking of Bender. He had been afterwards reduced to a state of inaction, because he had offended Potemkin, who directed the Empress in the choice of her Generals. Undeceived or better informed with regard to Count Panin, she employed him in opposition to Potemkin,

kin, and gave him a force able to subdue Pugatfchew. In all periods, and with all princes, the intrigues of courtiers have generally procured the employment or dismissal of Generals, and they have never been deterred by the fatal consequences, which might result from their intrigues. So true it is, that *Egotism* is the greatest of evils that issued from the Box of Pandora.

COUNT Panin, united to Michelson, would have soon reduced Pugatfchew, who was advancing to Czaritzin, to make it experience the fate of Saratoff. But he was obliged to raise the siege. His convoys were cut off, and whilst he was marching with his half famished army, incumbered with a multitude of waggons loaded with heavy baggage, and women, who followed it in every direction, he was surprised in a defile, between two ridges of mountains, which stretch towards the Wolga. There he was completely defeated, and a great number of the rebels killed on the spot. A greater number perished by throwing themselves headlong into the steep and narrow passages of these mountains, where they in vain sought for refuge. The rest surrendered at discretion. After having made a desperate defence, Pugatfchew escaped with a body of the principal accomplices. They crossed the Wol'ga, swimming, and afterwards traversed the deserts between this river and the Jaik, where the rebellion had begun,
and

and his royalty, or rather robbery, had an end. There he was successively abandoned by almost the whole of the Cossacs, overpowered by fatigue, and exhausted by hunger, and he was at last betrayed by those in whom he had the greatest confidence. A Cossac of Iletz, called Twogoroff, and two belonging to Jaik, Tschumakoff and Tedulef, his most faithful friends, were induced to commit this act of treachery, by the promise made them of obtaining a pardon. Twogoroff was the first, who represented to him, that surrounded as he was by his enemies, and unable to escape from them, the best course that remained for him, was to submit of his own accord to advantageous terms. Enraged at this proposition, Pugatschew drew his poignard, and was going to stab him, who gave him so cowardly an advice, when the three Cossacs fell upon him, disarmed him, bound him, and carried him to a body of Russians encamped on the banks of the Jaik, commanded by General Samaroff, who made him be transported to Simbirsk, whence he was sent by Count Panin's orders to Moscow, along with his principal accomplices. Pugatschew arrived there, confined in an iron cage, like that used for transporting tigers. This wretch, who had all the ferocity of this animal, well deserved to make his entry into Moscow in this plight. Commissioners, to whom the senate was added, tried him, and preparations

rations were making for extorting from him the confession of his crimes, by making him undergo the most painful tortures; when Catharine II. countermanded this barbarous design. Not wishing her reign should be stained by any atrocity, she gave orders that Pugatschew should be only beheaded, instead of being torn to pieces by horses, which was the punishment to which the commissioners had sentenced him, agreeably to the law against High Treason. He was executed on the 23d of January 1775. His body was quartered, and exposed in different parts of the city. Five of his accomplices, who had proclaimed him Emperor, under the name of Peter III. also suffered death. Those who had circulated his manifestoes, received the knout, and were banished. In this way this famous rebellion ended. It had not the most remote tendency to deprive Catharine of the crown, and surely never could have set Pugatschew on the throne. His part in the political drama was absurd, and some ambitious man had taken the advantage of it.

It would be difficult to calculate the losses of every kind brought on Russia by the rebellion of Pugatschew; cities reduced to ashes; more than two hundred villages destroyed without a vestige left behind; thousands of prisoners massacred in cold blood, and among them some of the first rank; a great
number

number of mines pillaged and destroyed ; such were the traces which Pugatschew left on his way. Catharine II. with a view to erase from the annals of her reign, the remembrance of these atrocities, issued an order for suppressing the name of the river Jaik, which has its source in the mountains of Ural, and gave it the name of *Ural'scaja-Reka*, River of Ural. It was also her pleasure, that the town of Jaik should in future be called *Uraisk*, and that the Cossacs of the Jaik should take the name of *Ural'skine Cossacs*. Catharine did not confine herself to these topographical changes. She studied also how to wipe the tears from the cheeks of the unfortunate people, whom the ravages of Pugatschew had reduced to the most dreadful misery. They have been relieved, and have recovered spirit, while they have blessed the hand, which sent them these succours.

C H A P. XI.

DETAILS respecting the unfortunate Iwan III.—He is dethroned by Elizabeth.—Anecdotes.—He is brought up in a fortress, and transferred from prison to prison.—At the age of sixteen he is confined in Schluffelburg.—How he is treated.—Elizabeth sees him, and converses with him.—Effect, which this interview has on this princess.—How Iwan is guarded at Schluffelburg.—Person of this prince.—His intellectual faculties.—His character.—Visit paid him by Peter III.—Particulars of this interview.—Peter mitigates his lot.—He wishes to restore him his liberty.—The courtiers dissuade him from this intention.

THERE is yet one unfortunate victim of ambition, whose misfortunes are, in the Russian annals, an article, from which injured humanity would wish to turn away the eyes of posterity. We mean Iwan III. This prince, by his mother, was descended from Iwan Alexiowitsch, one of the brothers of Peter I. He was born on the 4th of August 1740. His parents were Anthony Ulric, prince of Brunfwick, and Anne of Mecklenburg, daughter to Catharine Alexiowna. He was created Grand Duke, by his aunt, Empress Anne, whom he lost almost as soon as he was born, and succeeded on the 28th

of October, same year, though only an infant of two months. He did not occupy the throne, or rather it was not occupied for him, longer than the 6th of December 1741, when he was deposed by the Empress Elizabeth. In the first volume, the accounts of this revolution were given; now some anecdotes shall only be added.

THE soldiers, sent to apprehend the young Emperor, had received orders to enter his apartment without the least noise, and not to awake him if he was asleep. Having found him sleeping at the side of his nurse, they stood around his cradle in respectful silence, for an hour at least, till he opened his eyes. Then they fell a disputing who should carry him off. The infant was frightened, and began to cry. The soldiers had pity on him, and allowed the nurse to approach him; and she, covering him with her cloak, carried him to Elizabeth's palace. This Empress took the child, and kissed him. While he was in her arms, some soldiers, who were in the antichambers, having made the air resound with the cry of *Hura Elizabeth*, (long live Elizabeth) the child, who was pleased with these acclamations, stretched out his little hands, and, smiling, appeared to imitate the soldiers. Elizabeth, affected with this innocent gesture, could not forbear pressing him to her breast; *Unfortunate creature*, she cried, *alas! you perceive not that these shouts hurl you from the throne!*

It is no easy task to follow Iwan from the time of his deposition, till he was transferred to Schlußfelburg, but we are going to relate what is most probable and interesting in the fate of this prince, who knew only the misfortunes of life. It is notorious, that he and his parents were first conducted to the fortress of Riga, where this family continued prisoners for eighteen months. Thence they were removed to Dunamunde, and afterwards to Oranienburg, a small town in the province of Woronetz, built by Menzikoff, when he was in favour. It is not exactly known, how long this family resided there, and if the young prince Iwan was removed along with his parents to Kolmogorod, where they ended their days, as shall be related afterwards. Busching, whom we shall follow in these accounts, relates, that when the Regent Anne and her husband were transferred to Kolmogorod, Iwan, then eight years of age, was left at Oranienburg, and that, some time after, a monk found means to rescue him from his prison, and carried him to Smolensko, where the monk and the prince were arrested; that, to prevent a like attempt for the future, it was resolved to confine him in a place of difficult access, and that, for this purpose, the monastery of Waldai was fixed on, which stands on an isle of the same name, at no great distance from the highway between St Petersburg and Moscow,

Moscow. How long he continued and lived in this monastery, is not said: till the time that he was transferred to Schlüsselburg, nothing is known about him. It is not astonishing that this unfortunate prince cannot be exactly traced. He was a prisoner from his earliest years, and always strictly guarded. It is certain, that during the last eight years of his life, he was confined in the fortress of Schlüsselburg, whither he had been escorted for the first time in the year 1756. He was then sixteen years old. It was at this period that Elizabeth had the curiosity to see him. For this purpose she was carried to St Petersburg in a very close coach. The interview took place in the house of Count Peter Iwanowitch Schuwaloff, cousin to the Empress' favourite. Elizabeth questioned him, and conversed with him for a long time, without making herself known. It is said, she could not bear the sight of this young man without melting into tears, especially when the prince, who had the softest organs, asked her, why she wept. Elizabeth was so much moved with this scene, that she again never saw him, all whose misfortunes she knew.—But ambition spoke, and remorse was silent.

The day after this interview, the unfortunate Iwan was carried back to his prison, which Elizabeth intended to render more comfortable, but yet her fears ceased not to render it rigorous. The
room,

room, which this prince occupied, was situated at the end of a corridor. It was about twenty five feet square, and arched. The walls were of stone, the floor was paved with bricks, and the windows were not built up, like the neighbouring rooms, as some writers have advanced. There were windows but the glass was done over with a kind of gum, which allowed the light to enter, without it being possible to perceive any thing through it. The whole furniture consisted of a bed with casters, a table, and some chairs. Two officers were continually confined with him; there was a centinel on the outside, and a guard of ten soldiers at the end of the corridor. The officers and soldiers were forbidden to answer his questions, or to put any to him; and under the reign of Elizabeth, none of his guards durst transgress this command. Yet she gave orders that he should be made take the air, but that this should be done with great precaution. In consequence of this order, he was allowed to go into the inner court of the fortress for some moments, during which he could at least discover the firmament; which seemed not to have been created for him; but the fears of the Russian soldier, who thinks he is always deficient in his duty, when he oversteps it not, shortned this enjoyment, which, on the day it was granted, proved to Iwan a sort of feast.

Portraits of this prince have been drawn, which resemble one another so little, that they cannot answer to the same individual. People, who have had occasion to see him often, assert, that his look was most engaging, his stature tall and well proportioned, his skin of the purest whiteness, his eyes large, and his hair most beautiful. As for his intellectual powers, some have maintained they were very limited, and nothing is more probable from the manner of life, to which he was consigned. Others have gone further, and affirmed, that he bordered on weakness, and sometimes showed signs of folly. It was certain he could neither read nor write, and it is not to be doubted, that he had no opportunities of learning to do either. He spoke the Russian and some words of the German language, which he had learned from his father and mother during his childhood; but he articulated ill, and when he was any way agitated, he stammered much. He was not ignorant of his origin, and knew he had been Emperor for some months. Full of hopes of enjoying liberty once more, and of ascending the throne some day or other, he spoke often of the conduct he would then observe; and when he was provoked, he threatened to punish, when he was restored, all those who offended him during his captivity. He was very irascible, and carried his resentment the length of madness, especially when in a state of intoxication,

toxication, which, during a certain period happened only too often, because every thing he asked for his table, was granted; but after he grossly abused this indulgence, his allowance of wine and liquors was retrenched, in order to prevent such frequent excesses. Yet ninety roubles, (£20. 5.) per month, were allowed him for his support; a sum moderate enough, but sufficient in a country, where provisions are to be had at the cheapest rate.

SOME writers have asserted, that his whole wardrobe consisted of a very coarse long woollen gown for summer, and a pelisse of sheepskin for winter; but this assertion is far wide of the truth. Several persons, who have had an opportunity of convincing themselves of the contrary, have told us, that this prince had always at his command a great number of suits, which were to him a constant source of amusement. He often changed them twenty times a-day, and walked about in his room, admiring himself, like a child, with the look of the greatest satisfaction. They added, that Elizabeth, who knew this passion for dress, took a pleasure in gratifying it.

As to his religious opinions, it was difficult to appreciate them. He had some notion of the Greek religion, prayed often to God with much fervour, but he preferred and observed the worship and communion of his father and mother, who were both
brought

brought up in the protestant religion. It is reported, but we cannot affirm it as a truth, that this prince was visionary, and boasted of having had conversations with the angel Gabriel. There is nothing in his life to prove this assertion.

His parents had told him that Elizabeth filled the throne, from which he had been thrust, but it does not appear, that he was instructed of the date of this princess' death, and still less of the events, which followed it. Yet Peter III. had scarcely mounted the throne, when he proposed to pay a visit to the unfortunate Iwan, and to make him forget the sufferings of his youth. He executed his design, and in this visit took for his companions, Alexander Naritskin, his Grand Usher, his Aide-camp-General, Baron d'Ungern Sternberg, and Baron de Korf, who was then master of the police of St Peterburg. As he wished this visit should be made with the greatest secrecy, he had provided himself with his own orders, which bore; that the commandant should be bound to open all the gates of the fortress to those, who were the bearers of them; that he should put no question to them, and should suffer them to go through the whole boundaries of the fortress, without even excepting the room occupied by Prince Iwan; that they should have liberty to converse with him, in absence of the commandant, and the officer of the guard, who

should be obliged to retire, so soon as those gentlemen, who were the bearers of the orders, should be introduced into the prince's chamber.

PETER III. chatted a long time with Iwan, without making himself known. He even drunk a little coffee with him. The following is the substance of their conversation, as taken from the notes of Baron de Korf.

PETER.

TELL me, Prince, do you remember the sufferings that assailed your earliest years?

IWAN.

I HAVE only a faint idea of them. But so soon as I began to feel my misfortunes, I mingled my tears with those of my father and mother, who were unhappy only on my account; and I was deeply afflicted only with the harsh treatment, which they had to bear, when they were transferred from one fortress to another.

PETER.

Whence proceeded this harsh treatment?

IWAN.

From the officers, to whom we were entrusted, and who almost all joined inhumanity to the rigorous orders, which they had received.

PETER.

Do you recollect their names?

IWAN.

IWAN.

No, and we even avoided learning them. We contented ourselves with thanking heaven, when it sent us any, who were less cruel.

PETER.

WHAT, did you never find any humane?

IWAN.

ONE deserved to be distinguished from this flock of tigers, and he carried with him our esteem and regret. How much he alleviated our misery by his attention, which was equally assiduous and generous!

PETER.

Do you remember the name of this worthy man?

IWAN.

AH! do I remember it?—I will never forget it. —It was Baron de Korf.

It has been just now noticed, that Baron de Korf was in the Emperor's suite. He could not hear these accounts without being sensibly affected. Peter III. who was as much moved as he, took him by the arm, and said to him in a low tone; *Baron, you see a favour is never lost.* While the Czar and the Baron were recovering from this scene, Urgern Sternberg, who had remained alone with Iwan, asked him, if he had lost the hope of ascending the throne. "This hope," answered Iwan, "supports me in this dismal abode." "But if these hopes were realized, how would you act towards the reigning
"ing

“ing Emperor, and his wife?” “I would make them be executed,” said Iwan, “as two usurpers.” Peter III. who returned with Korf, heard this answer, and was at first offended at it. But considering the state of the prince’s mind, and his situation, he not only pardoned him, but also made himself known, and assured him, he would use every mean in his power to mitigate his lot, and procure him every sort of consolation. In the mean time, he enjoined the commandant to show the greatest respect to his prisoner, and above all to allow him liberty to breathe the air, and walk round all the fortrefs.

AFTER Peter left Iwan’s apartment, he visited the inside of Schluffelburg, and stopped at a spot of ground, which appeared to him a proper situation for erecting a house, in which the unfortunate Iwan might be more commodiously lodged than he was. “I will,” said the prince, “have it a square building, with nine windows on the same floor for the prisoner, and the rest of the ground made into a garden, where he may take the air, and beguile the weariness of the solitude, wherein the misfortune of the times oblige him to live.”

WE were assured, that next day there were workmen on this piece of ground to execute this plan of Peter’s, which would have been carried into effect, if

his

his death had not prevented. This building is not yet finished.

WHEN Peter had returned from Schlüsselburg, his uncle, Louis Augustus, Duke of Holstein, advised him to send Iwan into Germany, with his father, Anthony Ulric, Duke of Brunswick, and his children, and to assign them a pension suitable to their birth. Peter, they say, was not averse to this advice; but his ministers, whom he consulted, were of a contrary opinion, and sacrificing humanity to policy, the system of ministers in all courts and in all periods, they pointed out the dangers of every kind, that would attend the dismissal of this prince. Prevailed upon by their arguments, the Czar confined himself to the promise, which he had made to Iwan, of rendering his prison as comfortable as possible. He even granted permission, with a view to give him some amusement, that he should be carried by water to Kexholm, a fortress built on a little island of the Lake Ladoga, and much nearer the court than Schlüsselburg.

FOR this purpose he was put in a small covered boat, in which he was to be carried to a small galley, that was waiting him; but, on the passage, the wind became so violent, and the waves so strong, that Iwan was dreadfully frightened. Some moments after, he recovered his ordinary tranquillity, although the storm increased to such a degree, that
the

the failors, notwithstanding all their efforts, could not prevent the boat from being overfet near the fhore, and the prince was faved with the greateft difficulty. Misfortune feemed to purfue him every where, of which the following is an additional proof.

BEING carried back from the fortrefs of Kexholm to that of Schluffelburg, by order of the Emprefs Catharine, who had but juft mounted the throne, Iwan again was in the greateft danger. Some werfts from Schluffelburg, the horfes yoked to the coach, in which he was, took fright, and run off. The carriage could not be ftopped, till the fore-wheels broke. There was a village to go through before they arrived at Schluffelburg, and to conceal the prince from the eyes of the curious, he was wrapped in a cloak, till he got into the room, which he formerly occupied. This ftruck him fo forcibly, that when he entered the fortrefs, he faid to Ungern, who accompanied him, “ Baron, embrace the “ unfortunate Iwan, for you will never fee him “ more.” He faid true; and we are now going to fee him terminate his career by a frightful death.

CHAP.

C H A P. XII.

MIROWITSCH, a Russian officer, forms the extraordinary project of delivering Iwan III.—His motives.—Means of accomplishing his design.—He bribes several soldiers of the prince's guard.—He employs force to win at his room.—The officers entrusted with the charge of Iwan resolve to massacre him, rather than deliver him to Mirowitsch.—Impression, which Iwan's corpse make upon him.—He surrenders himself a prisoner.—Is tried—and executed.—Accounts respecting Iwan's family.—Character and description of Anne, Iwan's mother.—Fortresses, to which this family is successively transferred.—Treatment, which they experience.—Anne's death.—That of her husband.—Catharine II. takes care of their children.

TWO officers, one called *Ulasief*, a captain, the other *Tchekin*, a lieutenant, had been appointed to guard Iwan, and consequently it behoved them to be in his apartment. A company of about a hundred men were in the fortress. Six soldiers were detached to guard the corridor, which led to the door of the prince's room, and the passages, which met there. The rest were in the main body of the guard, at the gate, and in different other parts of the fortress under the command of the governor. It was then the

regiment

regiment of Smolensko, quartered in the village of Schluffelburg, who furnished this guard, which was relieved every week. Such was the state of matters when a sub-lieutenant, called *Vassili-Mirowitsch*, formed the wild plan of delivering Iwan, expecting to make his fortune, if this prince should be restored to the throne. This soldier was grandson to the rebel of the same name, who had taken the side of Mazeppa, Hatman of the Cossacs, who revolted against Peter the Great, and joined Charles XII. in the war, which these princes waged against each other in Ukraine. Mirowitsch had petitioned for the restitution of his grandfather's fortune, which had been confiscated after the battle of Pultowa; and because the Empress had refused his repeated solicitations, he formed the plan, which we have just now mentioned. To this he was instigated both by ambition and vengeance; two passions, which may well give courage to hatch plots, but cannot furnish the means of putting them in execution. Therefore those of Mirowitsch, a man without fortune and support, were not in any shape proportioned to the boldness of his enterprize.

SOME months before he put it in execution, being at Kasan, he imparted it to a lieutenant in the regiment of Veliki-lacki, whose name was Apollo Uschakoff. These two conspirators went to the church of the Virgin, there took an oath on the al-

tañ to be secret and faithful to one another, and joining fanaticism to treason, they supplicated the Almighty to protect their designs. They also prepared a manifesto, which they proposed to publish so soon as Iwan should be set at liberty. But in this plot, it was not the manifesto, that was most difficult to compose and circulate; it was the execution, which was the height of madness, while the manifesto was nothing but childish stuff. The execution was delayed till the fine season, because it was imagined the Empress would then make an excursion to Livonia. Very soon after Mirowitsch joined his regiment at Schlüsselburg, but his confident Ushakoff was drowned by accident on the 29th of March as he was going to Smolensko.

DEPRIVED of his assistance, Mirowitsch, could find no body, as is supposed, in whom he could place the same confidence. He however founded a court domestic, called Tikon Casatkin, and used no small artifice to inspire him gradually with the notions, with which his own head was crammed. He wanted to employ him, if need required, as a tool useful for forwarding his plans. He also disclosed himself to Semen Tchevarides, a Lieutenant of Artillery. He communicated to the latter, in ambiguous and indirect terms, his plan of delivering Iwan, and committing to him the charge of the regiments in garrison at St Petersburg, but he spoke of it on-

ly as a plan, the execution of which was deferred till an indeterminate period, and without discovering himself as the author.

It was with so much attention and precaution in case of bad success, that Mirowitsch prepared to execute this perilous enterprise. He did duty in the fortress for a week without finding a single opportunity favourable to his views. He observed however, and made a mark on the Prince's room door, that he might know it again. He showed it to his friend Semen Tchevaridof, who had come from St Petersburg to pay him a visit. At the end of the week his duty in the fortress was to end, according to the established rule, but he solicited, and obtained under some fair pretext, permission to continue there, and thought he had found the moment of action on the evening of the 4th or 5th of July old style. He had imagined that the soldiers on guard with him that day, would be more easily seduced, than those, who had been relieved; but it did not appear, that he was sure of any of them, except Jacob Piskoff. It was only at ten o'clock at night he made the first communication of his design to three corporals, and two soldiers, who at first refused absolutely to join him. However being aided by Piskoff, he was by his insinuations at last successful in persuading them to favour his scheme. They engaged to second him, but he could not get them to act with that resolution

tion and courage, which the circumstances required. On the contrary they continued a long time irresolute, and the fear of danger affected them so strongly, that they proposed to delay it till a more favourable moment. Mirowitsch appeared at first to yield to their arguments, and carefully concealed what he thought of their fears; but about two o'clock next morning, he renewed his importunity, and by arguments and money, which he distributed among them, and which acts more efficaciously than reasoning; by promises of the greatest rewards, and of a considerable promotion; and in short by the authority, which his rank of commanding officer gave him over them, he so effectually wrought upon them, that they recovered courage, and determined instantly to support him with all their might.

WITH the assistance of these six men, and without losing a moment, he ordered about forty soldiers, who were on guard in this part of the fortress, some on watch, others half asleep, to load their fuses and follow him. He met with the more ready obedience, that he said he had received orders from the Empress, and before they could dive into his design, he conducted them to Iwan's apartment. He approached the passage, which communicates with it, when he met with Berednikoff, commandant of the fort, who was going to bed, but upon receiving advice from a soldier, in whom

he had confidence, he had quickly dressed himself and come to oppose Mirowitsch. He summoned him to declare the cause of the disturbance he observed. Mirowitsch answered him only by a blow on the head with a fufee, which stunned him. He gave him in charge to two strong trusty men, and continued his way with the rest of his party. He then appeared in the passage, that led to the room, where the prince was sleeping, ordered the two sentinels, whom he found there to retire, and on their refusal commanded his followers to fire upon them. The sentinels being supported by six of their companions made a smart return to Mirowitsch's party, who were executing his orders. Then the action was going to take place in this corridor, when the soldiers, led on by Mirowitsch, astonished at this resistance, which they did not expect, perceived they were deceived, and retired with precipitation, in spite of the efforts of their leader, whom they told they would not obey, unless he produced the order, which, he said, he had received from the Empress. Mirowitsch then read them a paper prepared by himself, at the foot of which was a counterfeit signature of the Empress', and as it was not difficult to deceive men so ignorant, the greatest part of whom could not read, he again got them persuaded by means of prayers, promises, and threats to a second attempt immediately. During this short interval

terval, they brought to him a cannon from the bastion, which he himself pointed against the passage, which led to the prince's chamber. At the sight of this the door was instantly opened, and all his men entered without opposition.

ULASIEF and Tchekin, the two officers, who as already mentioned, were guarding the prince in the inside of his apartment, had repulsed the first attack of the assailants, by making the sentinels fire upon them; but when the conspirators returned to the charge with cannon, they knew that resistance was impossible, and therefore adopted the cruel resolution of massacring the unfortunate prince, whom Mirowitsch wished to take from them. There are some writers, who have maintained, that these officers had only followed their instructions—Alas! If it was so, it must be acknowledged that ambition is very cruel.

THE unhappy Iwan had awaked at the noise of the cries, and reports of the fuses. He had started out of bed, and although naked and without any arms, but despair and a vigorous constitution, he had opposed his guards with great resolution. Several times he parried the strokes aimed at him, and with his own hand, though wounded, had broken one of their swords, with which he had defended himself, till overpowered by numbers, and covered with wounds, he was at last killed by a wound on
the

the back. Then the two officers opening the door with violence, and showing the prince's bloody body to Mirowitsch's party, exclaimed, *There is your Emperor.*

AT this spectacle Mirowitsch drew back with horror and surprize, but very soon recovering his spirits, he attempted no new effort for his defence, but returned with the most perfect tranquillity to the Governor, whom he had given in charge to his adherents, and delivering up his sword to him, he said coolly; *I am now your prisoner.*

THE following day, the body of Iwan, covered only with a shirt and a pair of drawers, was exposed to the view of the garrison. An immense concourse of people went thither from all parts. It was impossible to describe the indignation and sorrow, which appeared in the gestures, countenances and language of those, whose eyes beheld this unfortunate prince, who after having sat on a throne, from which his misfortune, not his fault had pulled him down, had spent his miserable days in a gloomy prison, from which he got out, only to conclude them by a death as tragical as premature. As the the croud was increasing, and might occasion some disturbance, it was wisely judged to put an end to this horrible sight. Iwan's corpse was wrapped in a sheep-skin, laid in a coffin, and buried in an old chapel, which was destroyed some years ago.

COUNT Panin, who commanded at St Petersburg, in absence of the Empress then in Livonia, dispatched a messenger to inform her of this event, and at same time sent her a copy of the foolish manifesto, which Mirowitsch proposed to circulate after the success of his enterprise, and which they found upon him. It represented Catharine as a twofold usurper, and Iwan as the only lawful sovereign, which the Russians ought to choose for themselves. Catharine disdained to look at this libel, but she gave orders for punishing Mirowitsch's wicked attempt according to the rigour of the laws, and Weymar, Lieutenant-general, was named to go to Schluffelburg to examine the traitor and his accomplices, and to procure such information, as might help to discover the circumstances of this plot. During the precognition, which was not long, Mirowitsch behaved with so much audacity, that he astonished the Judges. He was condemned to be beheaded and his body to be burned along with the scaffold, on which he was to die. This sentence was executed at St Petersburg on the 26th day of September. An immense multitude attended at the death of this man, who was rather mad than wicked, and to the place of execution preserved an undaunted countenance, and the courage of a man, who died in a good cause; and indeed he continued to repeat that he was a martyr. When he arrived at
the

the place of punishment, he surveyed the apparatus with coolness, cast at the executioner a disdainful look, crossed himself, without uttering a single word, presented his neck to the axe, and received the deadly blow. He was the only one among the conspirators, who suffered death. His accomplices were condemned to different punishments according to the degree of their guilt. Piskoff who was the most criminal, run twelve times under the rods of a line of a thousand soldiers, and five of the most guilty after him, run ten times along the same line. They were afterwards sent to the public works; a sentence scarcely less cruel than death itself. We shall observe without entering more minutely into these executions, that more than fifty persons were implicated in Mirowitsch's plot; that Caraskin and Tchevarides were found guilty of having had criminal conversations with him, and Nikita Lebedes was punished for not having undeceived the soldiers by making them understand the falsity of the Imperial orders forged by Mirowitsch.

WE consider it our duty not to conclude the history of Prince Iwan, without saying a word of his family. Anthony Ulric of Brunswick, his father was the son of Ferdinand Albert, and of Antoniette sister to the unfortunate Charlotte Christina, who had married the Czarowitsch Alexis. He was brother to the late Duke Charles of Brunswick, and to the

the celebrated General Prince Ferdinand. Anthony Ulric was born in the year 1714. On his arrival at St Peterburg in 1738 he was allowed to marry Anne, Princess of Mecklenburgh, presumptive heirs of the Empire, and in 1739 this marriage was celebrated with great pomp. Who would have imagined, says Manstein, that this union would one day bring upon them the greatest misery, and that this prince, whom they invited to fill the throne of Russia, would find on it nothing but exile and captivity for himself and his wife.

This princess, born in the year 1718, and invited to Russia in 1731, by her aunt, the Empress Anne, had embraced the Greek religion, and having been again baptized, she had changed her name from Elizabeth Christina, into that of Anne, under which she is known in history. In 1739, she married, as has been just now said, prince Anthony Ulric of Brunswick, from which marriage prince Iwan sprung. We have seen the nature of the revolution, which took from her, along with liberty, the administration of affairs during the minority of her son. It is said, she was not sorry at seeing the reins of empire taken from her, and would not have regretted it, if she had been sent back into her own native country; for she had been often heard to say, that she longed only for the majority of her son, to

throw off a burden, which had been laid on her shoulders, without her own consent.

INDEED nobody could be worse calculated for business than this princess. Business was to her a punishment, and she hated even the very name of it. She therefore never appeared in council, and gave herself up wholly to her ministers. It was General Munich who had over her the greatest ascendancy, nursed her in this criminal indolence, by telling her, that as she was the greatest princess in Europe, she had only to give orders, and her ministers would rid her of every uneasiness. This language, in the mouths of all ambitious ministers, has delivered more than one prince over to a security, equally fatal to his own glory, and to the happiness of his subjects.

THE prince, her husband, who was impatient under his misfortune, perpetually reproached her with it, and never could forgive her for having voluntarily accelerated the ruin of her family, by concealing from him the alarming accounts she was from time to time receiving about Elizabeth's plans, which he would have opposed at the risk of his life. Anne's apathy enabled her to bear these reproaches without resenting them, and she ingenuously maintained, that all had happened for the best, and that she was happy at having prevented the effusion of blood.

As to her person, the Regent Anne was of good stature, and of a charming figure. Nothing could be more pleasant than her look, nothing more harmonious than her voice. She had got a complete education, spoke several languages with ease, and possessed a variety of agreeable accomplishments, which, it must be owned, were more suitable to a woman fond of the liberal arts, than to an Empress, or to her, who was to discharge the duties of a Sovereign. She reposed a blind confidence, which degenerated into obsession, in Baroness Julianne de Mengden, an ambitious woman, to whom every mean of accomplishing her purpose, appeared lawful. She herself was governed by her brother, and her husband, two insatiable courtiers, who would have swallowed up the revenues of Russia, if Anne's regency, had continued any longer. After having removed Anne and her family from court, Elizabeth made her be asked, if she had any favour to solicit. Instead of asking liberty or permission for herself and relations to pass into Germany, Anne begged she might be allowed to take the Baroness de Mengden along with her. Elizabeth granted this request, at which she was more astonished than satisfied; but the favourite, who had no more favours to obtain, and laboured under the faults of all her kind, repaid her mistress with ingratitude, and feigned sickness that she might not be obliged to attend her.

AFTER having languished more than eighteen months in the fortrefs of Riga, where ſhe had a miſcarriage, Anne and her family were removed to Dunamunde, as we have already obſerved. In this paſſage the common ſoldiers, who accompanied them, plundered the greateſt part of their effects, and this unfortunate family arrived at Dunamunde in the moſt deſtitute ſituation. Anne there bore a princeſs, who received the name of Elizabeth. At that time ſhe was in want of nothing, for the Empreſs, who had been informed of her ſituation, had given orders for furniſhing the illuſtrious priſoners, with whatever they ſhould aſk. She even carried her attention the length of procuring to them all the conveniencies and pleaſures, that can be enjoyed by perſons deprived of liberty.

From Dunamunde they were transferred to Oranienburg, afterwards to Smolenkoi-Oſirof, and at laſt to Kolmogorod, ſituated on one of the iſles of the Dwina, about eighty werſts from Archangel. They were lodged in the monaſtery, from which the Archimandrite, and the monks had been expelled, and for greater ſecurity, it was ſurrounded with two rows of palifades. No ſentinel appeared without; the guard was ſtationed within, and the ſoldiers, inſtead of an uniform, were clothed like peoſants; ſo that unleſs you had been warned, you could

could not have suspected that there were in this manſtery any priſoners of ſo great conſequence.

For the ſupport of theſe unfortunate perſons in this abode, as frightful for its ſituation as for the inclemency of the climate, the Empreſs had aſſigned a ſum more than ſufficient, but it was entrusted to faithleſs hands. The benevolent intentions of Elizabeth were therefore defeated, and theſe illuſtrious priſoners, who ought to have had every thing in abundance, were almoſt in want of the neceſſaries of life. The Prince of Brunſwick, notwithstanding the diſtance, and his guards, found means of making his complaints reach the throne, and the Empreſs, indignant, baniſhed the faithleſs administrators into Siberia, changed the guard, and gave peremp-tory orders, to provide this family with whatever could afford any mitigation of their ſufferings.— Theſe orders were punctually obeyed.

NOTWITHSTANDING this change, and this kind of proſperity, Anne could not bear the climate, and exhauſted by the effects of a delivery, which the bad ſtate of her health rendered unfavourable, ſhe died on the 18th of March 1746, at the age of twenty eight years. Her huſband in whoſe arms ſhe expired, in vain wiſhed to accompany her to the grave, but the cruel fates, which deprived him of all that was dear to him in the world, denied him this conſolation. The body of this unfortunate princeſs

princess was carried to St Peterburg, and buried in the church of St Alexander Newski. The prince, her husband had the misfortune to survive her thirty five years. He died at Kolmogorod in the year 1781, after thirty nine years confinement, and in the sixty seventh year of his age.

CATHARINE II, who had nothing more to fear from this family, wished not to insult humanity without a cause, and the children of this unfortunate couple have been set at liberty. In the very year of their father's death, two princes, and princesses, of whom the oldest was more than forty years of age, were conveyed from Kolmogorod to Archangel, and thence transported in a vessel to Bergen in Norway, where they were embarked for Horsens situated in Jutland, in the diocese of Arhuus, a port on the Baltic sea. There they are now under the protection, and care of their aunt the queen dowager of Denmark, and the Empress of Russia has settled on them a considerable pension for their support.

C H A P. XIII.

DEPARTURE from St Petersburg on our way to Moscow. — Preparations for this journey. — Highways. — Villages. — Peasants' huts. — Accounts of the people in the country. — Their way of living. — Post-houses. — Difficulty in procuring fresh horses. — What is the cause of it. — Way of obviating this inconvenience.

THE season and our business determined us to go from St Petersburg to Moscow, and we took leave of the different persons, with whom we had formed acquaintance during our stay in the capital. They advised us to make provision for this journey, and to attend to the most minute articles, if we wished to avoid not only the inconvenience of fatigue, but the absolute want of those things, which make it be forgotten, or at least enable travellers to bear it with patience. We profited by this advice, not like people, who wish to make themselves easy every where, but who wish to be ill accommodated no where on the road. Consequently the sledges, which we engaged, were in the best state, and extremely close. Our pelisses might have supplied the place of beds for canons, and our provisions might have decorated their side boards.

ON our way out of St Petersburg we found an excellent causeway, skirted with trees on both sides,
and

and provided with foot-paths. At every werst a small column of granite or marble announces to the traveller his distance from the metropolis. This road, which is kept in repair like all in the vicinity of the residence of sovereigns, is most beautiful, but extends no farther than Inchora, which is only thirty five wersts from the capital, and the last village you see, before you enter into an immense forest, through which you have to pass, to the extent of more than a hundred and thirty wersts. This leads to the neighbourhood of Novogorod, where that called the Moscow-highway begins. As it runs in a straight line through an extensive series of woods, the length of more than six hundred and eighty wersts, there is not in the world a more wearisome road, not even excepting those in Spain, and Portugal. As the sledge is a carriage that admits of reading, books deceived the dullness of the road. The velocity of the sledge however renders the use of them painful to the eyes, for the rest of which we found one expedient. From reading we passed to meditation, and from this to sleep. During these alternate amusements the sledges continued to run, we added werst to werst, and arrived at the end of our journey.--In this tedious road, you never get out of the forest, except when you meet with villages, around which there are some hundreds of acres in culture. It is too observable that
the

the peasant has cleared them only for what was barely necessary for his subsistence, and that he has been forced to this by the state of servitude, in which he lives, for his time is rather his lord's than his own.

This road preserves always the same breadth, and is formed in a way quite singular. Trunks of trees parallel to one another, are laid across. These are bound in the middle, and at the ends, by long thick spars or rafters, fixed to the ground by strong stakes. They are then covered with a bed of branches of trees, on which is laid a thick coat of sand and earth. These roads are very fine, when newly made or repaired, but when the trunks are damaged, or entangled in the ground; when the sand, which covers them, is carried off by the rains; in this case, which occurs often in a few weeks, the road presents only a series of holes and sloughs, which render the sledge, the most uncomfortable of all carriages. Where the road is not entirely smoothed, you are scarcely better off. It is a perpetual succession of furrows, like a cultivated field, and the motion of the carriage is a ceaseless shake, worse to bear, than that occasioned by the most unequal pavement. To ride in a sledge without uneasiness, it is absolutely necessary that the road be entire, or that the snow be frozen, and have filled up all the holes, and made the surface equal. We had this advantage on almost all our way. The Emperor

pays well, the peasants are much tormented and squeezed for the support of the roads; but the undertakers are more desirous of filling their purses, than the tracks.

THE villages to be met with every now and then upon the road, bear an uniform resemblance to one another. They have a single street formed by cottages of wood, hardly to be distinguished from houses of brick. These are good dwellings, though constructed in the coarsest manner. They are built so as to resist the rigour of the climate. This is the principal aim of all who build. We noticed that the figure of them all was an oblong square, inclosing a court, having the look of a large barn, on the outside. In one of the corners of this inclosed space is the part of the house inhabited by the family, facing the street of the village, with an outside-stair. This contains one, or at most two apartments. Beds are unknown in this country. In all the houses of the Russian peasants, there are never more than two for the heads of the family, in which they sleep with their clothes on, one at the head, another at the foot. The rest of the family lie on benches, on the ground, or more readily on the stove; a kind of brick-oven, which occupies almost a quarter of the room, and is flat on the top. Often the men, women, and children sleep promiscuously, without any regard to sex or condition, and frequently in a state

of nature. In some cottages we perceived a sort of frame, six or seven feet high, which they shift at pleasure from one end of the room to the other. In the centre of this, there are several planks fixed horizontally above one another, upon which the members of the family sleep, often with their feet and head hanging; a posture very straining for strangers not accustomed to this kind of bed.

THE great number of people, sometimes twenty, contained in this small space, added to the heat of the stove, renders the room, for the greater part of the time, inhabitable by none but the Russian peasants. It too emits a suffocating smell, which custom alone makes supportable. This inconvenience is still greater in the houses, in which there are no chimneys, and no outlet for the smoke. If during the night you wish to open the shutters for relief, and for restoring the air, a sharp frosty wind from without, soon forces you to prefer the heat and strong smell of the room, along with the smoke collected there. But, as we only went upon these ovens without continuing, and as we had to refresh ourselves after the fatigues of the day, a profound sleep spared us all these disagreeable circumstances.

IN the middle of each room was suspended to the ceiling, a vessel full of holy water, and a lamp, which is lighted only on grand occasions. It gives, or rather is intended to give light to a bog, coarsely

painted, and exactly like the village images that are to be found in Catholic countries. But, the honest Russians, when they rise and go to bed, do not for this omit to stand up before this bedaubed figure, for several minutes, performing numerous acts of worship, and the most devout, prostrating themselves on the ground. We noticed that the Bogs in almost all the villages, were a St Nicholas, or a St Alexander Newski.

THE Russian peasants are very polite to one another. They lift their hats when they meet, bow frequently, and with much ceremony. In common conversation they speak with much action, never give over making gestures, and in particular express respect for their superiors in the most servile way. The Germans, and almost all the peasants of the North, resemble the Russians in this respect.

THE country people in Russia are well clothed, well lodged, and appear to have a wholesome and plentiful diet. Their rye bread at first offends the eye, but is a nourishing food, and when people are accustomed to it, there is nothing disagreeable in it. If they be hungry, they think it excellent, if they have travelled forty wersts, without getting anything, they think it delicious. The peasants season it, by a mixture of onions, oat-meal, carrots, green wheat and oil. At some other time, we shall speak of their other aliments. Here we shall only observe.

observe, that mushrooms are so common in this country, that they make a very considerable part of the diet of the inhabitants. The variety of this vegetable is surprising. It is of several colours, white, black, brown, yellow, and deep red. The common drink of the peasants is quass, a fermented liquor, which tastes like new-wort, of which we have already made mention. It is administered as an excellent anti-scorbutic. A French physician, settled at St. Petersburg, confirmed us in this opinion, and had sent the receipt to Paris.

In Russia, fresh horses are only to be had at the intervals of fifty wersts, (upwards of thirty six miles British,) This is not too long a stage, when the frost has made the roads smooth, and except in time of frost, there is no travelling in Russia. At least no body will attempt it, if he be not compelled by imperious necessity. The peasants, who furnish post horses, are called *Jamsbics*, and are obliged to find them to couriers and travellers at a very moderate rate. But as an indemnification, they are exempted from the capitation tax, and military service, and even enjoy certain privileges. But as they are so poorly paid for their horses, they give them only with reluctance. As soon as any person presents himself for a change of horses, they collect and dispute in a way, that would amuse any one, but a traveller bent on getting forward. An Eng-
lish

lish man, called *Chancellor*, has committed a diverting blunder on this point. He has said in his travels, that the Russian peasants disputed, who should have the honour of supplying him with horses, while, on the contrary they were disputing who should not supply him with horses. When a man writes on a country without understanding its language, he is liable on every occasion to fall into such mistakes.

AN hour is often not sufficient to settle the disputes of these peasants. The Post-master must often interfere, and compel them to cast lots. When a traveller is under the absolute necessity of making dispatch, besides his passport, he must be accompanied by a Russian soldier. Then the disputes among the Janissies become less frequent, for it can be hardly imagined how much the soldier's cane shortens their controversies, how summarily it determines their debates, and how it brings out the horses the moment they are asked for. In these travels the passion of the Russians for singing may be noticed. The postillions sing the whole stage, the soldiers sing while on their march, and the peasants sing while engaged in their work; the taverns resound with spiritual songs, and at night a traveller arrives in the midst of songs, from all the neighbouring villages.

THE most considerable, that we found on our way from Inchora to Novogorod, was Tschoudovo.

It stands at the foot of a hill, on the top of which is a monastery very picturesquely situated. The lake Irez washes the walls of the Monks' inclosure, and surrounds the village. The house, in which these pious coenobites dwell, is of brick, and by its height bears a singular contrast, to the peasants' humble cottages, with which it is surrounded.

WHILE the Post-master was settling the disputes of the Janshics, we amused ourselves with examining a plough and a harrow at his door. We could not enough admire the workmanship. The plough was the simplest thing imaginable, and the harrow was nothing but a rough collection of trunks of young fir trees. If these instruments be attended with the least possible expence, it must be acknowledged at same time, that they are weak and insufficient for tearing from the earth the fruits demanded of it; for they reach only the surface, and in this climate the earth must be tormented, not caressed.

C H A P. XIV.

ARRIVAL at Novogorod.—Historical accounts of this city.—It becomes a democratic republic.—How it loses its liberty.—Description of this city.—Bonitza-Gorod.—Views.—Monastery of Iworskoi.—Vishnei Volofchok.—Canal, to which this city gives its name.—Twer.—Descriptions.—Humane institutions of Catharine II.—Commodities and commerce of Twer.

NOVOGOROD, at which we arrived the third day after our departure from the capital, is the first on the road from St Petersburg to Moscow. It is a hundred and eighty six wersts distant from the former, and five hundred and forty eight from the latter. As you go in, you are struck with the sad spectacle of the ruins of its ancient grandeur. It is one of the most ancient cities in Russia. In former times it was called Great Novogorod, to distinguish it from all towns of the same name. According to Nestor, both it and Kiew were built in the middle of the fifth century, by a horde of Slavonians, who, if credit be due to Procope, came from the banks of the Volga. A passage in Jornandes, who wrote the history of the Goths, leaves no doubt about the antiquity of Novogorod. He speaks of it under the name of the New-City, which is of the same meaning with Novogorod. No more mention is made

of

of it till the ninth century, the æra when Rurick the First, Grand Duke of Russia, made a conquest of it, and chose it for the capital of his extensive dominions. He died in the year 879. The year following his son Igor, or rather Oleg, who was this prince's tutor, took possession of Kiow, and made it the capital of the dominions belonging to the Grand Dukes of Russia. From that period Novogorod was governed, first by officers sent by the Grand Dukes, then by the younger princes of their house, who granted it so great privileges, that it became almost a free, and independent city. It even obtained the right of electing its own sovereigns, who no more depended on the Grand Dukes of Russia.

THE controul, which the inhabitants of Novogorod assumed over their princes, was such, that the latter enjoyed only the semblance of sovereignty, and the government degenerated into a pure democracy; a kind of government, which cannot make a people happy, but when the laws command the multitude, and not the multitude the laws.

Novogorod had the happiness of good laws, and and of respecting them. Then it enjoyed liberty, and its inestimable advantages. It extended its commerce, became the mart of whatever supplies the Asiatic cities got from Russia. Its opulence, its population, its conquests, or rather its colonies,

made it so powerful and formidable, that it became a proverb; *Who can oppose the Gods, and Great Novogorod?*

This state of prosperity, which may be always expected by a free people, who behave suitably to their situation. Novogorod preserved till the Great Dukes of Russia, (who had come to reside at Moscow, whose ancestors had possessed Novogorod and given it the title of Grand-Dukes) summoned the citizens to acknowledge them anew for their sovereign lords. After a long resistance, such as might be expected from men, who knew the value of liberty, the inhabitants of Novogorod were forced to submit to the law of the strongest. Iwan, who had subdued the Tartars and several neighbouring states, advanced towards Novogorod with a formidable army, which completely defeated that of the republic, which was bold enough to contend with the tyrant's, notwithstanding the great disproportion in their numbers. The courage this little army displayed was such, as secured the esteem of Iwan, and an honourable capitulation. He gave it a governor, left it the greater part of its laws, or at least very great privileges. It retained the most valuable portion of its franchises, that of nominating its own magistrates; and the Russian Governor takes no concern in public affairs, except the cognizance be submitted to him.

BUT Iwan, who had been generous only from enthusiasm, when returned to himself, soon repented, and little satisfied with a government so limited, as that, to which he had restricted himself, watched a favourable opportunity for renewing his attacks, and making himself absolute master of Novogorod. Like an able tyrant, he found means to provoke it by the dissensions, which he stirred up among the citizens, whose interests, the mixt government, newly established, had divided, by making them Czarists and Republicans. It is well known how favourable internal dissensions are to tyrants, and with what address they foment them. Those among the inhabitants of Novogorod came to a height. Then Iwan sent them word, that since they could not agree, and only prostituted their liberty to the vile purpose of tearing one another to pieces, he took upon him the task of restoring peace among them. Conformably to this declaration, he again entered their city in the year 1477, with a formidable army, levelled its gates, made the oath of allegiance be sworn to him as to a sovereign, and robbed it of its liberty and privileges. Wishing to leave no vestige of it, he caused be seized and carried to Moscow, an enormous bell, which the inhabitants called *Vetchewoi-Kelchekel*, the *Bell of Voters*, which they revered as the *Palladium* of their liberty. It was suspended in the market place, and so soon as it rung, the people

rose and ran to arms on all sides. Iwan, who, according to the language of tyrants, called this Bell the *tocsin of sedition*, thought he was strengthening his authority by destroying it, and the inhabitants of Novogorod imagined they saw their liberty fall with it.

FROM that period the Grand Duke became absolute master of their city. He left only the phantom of their ancient government, and in order to ensure their obedience, he gave orders for the immediate removal of a thousand of the principal citizens to Moscow, and to surround the Kremlin, or citadel with a very strong wall of brick. Novogorod, nevertheless, continued for a long time the greatest and chief commercial city. But, in the year 1508, an epidemical disease carried off more than fifteen thousand people, which is more than double the number of its present inhabitants. It is said, that in its greatest prosperity, it contained four hundred thousand inhabitants; at present it does not exceed seven thousand. The most fatal blow was given to it by Iwan II. In 1570, he discovered that *Pimen* archbishop of Novogorod, and the leading men of the city were carrying on a treacherous correspondence with Sigismund Augustus, king of Poland. When Iwan went in person to Novogorod, in the month of August, when they least expected him, and in order to conceal his march, it is reported, he caused

the

the unfortunate travellers, who came in his way, be massacred. When arrived at Novogorod, this prince of cruel character, made blood run in streams, and sacrificed to his vengeance, twenty five thousand victims, according to some, and thirty thousand, according to others. These accounts are doubtless exaggerated; but, to believe none but the historians favourable to this Czar, it will always remain a truth, that on this occasion he showed himself a sanguinary prince, whose ferocity exceeds even that, which Christiern exercised in Sweden almost at the same time.

IF this massacre had hastened the ruin of this unfortunate city, the foundation of St Petersburg gave it the finishing blow; for Peter I. transported into this favourite city all the commerce of the Baltic sea, which was formerly carried on at Novogorod.

THE city is still surrounded with an earthen rampart, and a set of old towers at equal distances. The ground on which the city stands, is not above two wersts long, and is not all occupied with habitable houses. It is said, that in its splendor, it contained several other divisions, which were all of a circular form, and that then it had suburbs, which extended to the distance of eight wersts, including monasteries, churches, the palaces of the ancient Dukes and other public buildings, whereof there are yet some old remains,

THE city stands on the two banks of the Wolga, where it issues from the Lake Ilmen. This river is beautiful, deep, rapid, and much broader than the Thames is at London. The division standing on the right bank of the river is inhabited by merchants, and that on the left is called the side of *Saint Sophia*, after the name of the cathedral, which, as well as the archbishop's palace, has been converted into a *Kremlin* or Castle. These divisions of the town are joined by a bridge, of which the arches are of wood, and the rest of brick. The merchant's quarter, if you except the Governor's house, is nothing but an ugly mass of wood houses, which would be very like an ordinary village, if it were not for a great number of churches and monasteries built of brick, which are still standing, like so many melancholy monuments of its ancient greatness. Yet, in this quarter, there are upwards of three thousand shops, but they are so ill provided, that they alone witness the present misery of the city. At one of the extremities of this quarter, the Empress has made some brick buildings be erected, in which she has established a factory for ropes and sail-cloth. These buildings, which are very beautiful, bear a singular contrast to the cottages, which surround them.

THE Kremlin, of which we have spoken, and where the cathedral once was, has been built to contain the inhabitants, and to prevent the frequent insurrections.

surrections, to which the regret of having lost their liberty inclined them. This fortress is of an oval form, is irregular, and surrounded by a brick wall, on which there are some round and square towers. It was built in the year 1490, under the direction of the architect Solarius of Milan, by order of Iwan after the conquest of Novogorod.

We thought it not worth our while to visit the archbishop's residence, which is divided into the old and new palace. The cathedral deserves attention only, because it is one of the most ancient churches in Russia. It was begun in the year 1044 by Wolodimer, Duke of Novogorod, and finished in 1051. This was the period when the christian religion began to be propagated in Russia, by the diligence of the Greeks, who gave to this church the name of Saint-Sophia, after that of Constantinople. It is a building raised in form of a square with a gilt cupola, and four domes covered with pewter—The entry into this venerable mass of stones, is by gates of bronze, ornamented with different figures in relieve, representing the passion, and other scenes of the history of Christ.

SEVERAL princes of the family of the Czars are buried in this church. The first is Wolodimer, who founded it, and died in the year 1051, almost as soon as he had finished the building of it—The most ancient of these tombs are of wood, gilt, or silvered,

silvered, and furrounded with an iron gate. Some are built of bricks, the walls of the sanctuary in the inside are covered with a curious Mosaic; the work is coarse, but it appears ancient.

As you leave Novogorod, you come to a plain, where there is a vast extent of pasture ground. Afterwards you pass into the arms of the Wolchowia, and some wersts distant from Bonitza-Gorod, where you cross the Msta on a sort of float, scarcely large enough for a carriage and two horses. Hard by Bonitza-Gorod there are two springs, which form a very romantic situation to which the people of the country, without any good grounds attribute a number of medicinal virtues. The popes, who have caused a chapel to be erected there, in which there is a famous Saint Nicolas, maintain that an offering to their Saint cures those diseases, which the waters do not cure. Yet it is remarkable that the inhabitants of that neighbourhood, though they have two such infallible receipts, are subject to the itch, of which they are not easily cured.

This country is a little wild, but becomes more pleasant, when you arrive at Waldai, a small city, which gives its name to the Lake and hills in its neighbourhood. It is situated on the side of an agreeable hill, whence it has a most beautiful prospect. It has the entire command of the lake, whose appearance is picturesque. The hills of Waldai, though

though of no great elevation, are the highest in this country, and separate the waters, which run into the Caspian sea, from those which are discharged into the Baltic.

As far as Zemagor, which is on the side of the lake of Waldai, the country, through which the road runs, is most agreeably variegated. It is interspersed with a number of charming little hills, and different arms of the lake, from the bosom of which several isles rise, mantled with wood. In the background is a mixture of forests, fields and meads, which would be to a painter of landscapes an object of inexhaustible study. The lake may be about twenty eight or thirty wersts in circumference. In the centre is an isle, from which the monastery of Iwerkoi rises to view. It was founded by the celebrated Nikon, and dedicated to the Virgin. Out of the capital the Czars have not a more beautiful palace. The edifice is majestic, and the numerous steeples, which rise in the middle of thick groves, and overtop the highest trees, fix the eye of the traveller, and make him imagine that an opulent city, which is only the residence of some silent stolic monks, who have more than fifteen thousand peasants for their slaves.

FROM Zemagor, you go to Klodiloi, a small village, which was reduced to ashes some years ago. Fires in this country will not appear surprising to

any person, who reflects, that the houses of the peasants are all of wood, and that instead of candles they use long splinters of fir wood, which they light, and carry through all the house, and often into the hay-heap, without the least precaution.

You cannot reach Vishnei-Voloschok situated on the banks of the Msta, till after having travelled over a road covered with beams, through very extensive morasses, where there are a great many bridges, without railings, and the most part of them in very bad state. But the eye is at once pleased and diverted by the windings formed by the palisades, with which every village, garden and field is surrounded. As these intrenchments generally consist of growing hedges, or trees extremely close, you imagine you see in every peasants' house the habitation of Robinson Crusoe on his solitary island. This custom of surrounding villages with palisades in Russia is very ancient, for among the first laws of the country there is one, which orders the peasants under pain of the knout, to fortify the towns and villages in this way. Their design doubtless was to defend them against the sly excursions of the Tartars, before they had fire arms to oppose them. Although this practice be useless now a days, it has still among a people, whose attachment to their old customs, is one of the least equivocal parts of their character.

VISHNEL-VOLOSCHOK, where we halted, is one of the largest villages in Russia. It is one of those, which depend on the crown, and have been freed by the Empress, with the grant of several considerable privileges. It has already reaped the advantage of this. The inhabitants passing from the state of slaves to that of freemen, seem to have lost their old indolence. A new spirit of emulation and industry is diffused among them. They have applied to commerce, and have understood all the advantages, to be derived from the situation of the place, which they inhabit. Several cities of the Empire, which are puffed up with the vain title of metropolis, have not such a lively aspect as this village, which has regular streets, a long row of shops, and ware-houses, which skirt the two sides of the famous canal, which begins some wersts above the village, to which it has given its name. It was begun and finished under the reign of Peter I. with the design of joining the Msta to the Twertza, and by this establish a communication between the Caspian and Baltic seas, which was no sooner accomplished, than a great number of vessels from Astracan, Saratoff and Czaritzin, were seen come down to St Petersburg. But the frequent tolls they were obliged to pay, and the inconveniencies brought on this navigation by the cataracts of the Msta, would have undoubtedly reduced it to almost nothing,

thing, if Catharine II. had not made it her study to apply a remedy. She diminished the tolls, and erected three sluices to obviate the inconveniencies of the cataracts. This instance, among many others, proves, that what Peter I. had done, would have been entirely lost, if his successors had not adopted his plans. Among those, who guide the reins of an empire, they who invent and institute do a great deal, but do not they, who complete these inventions, do more?

On the road from Vishnei-Volofchok to Twer nothing remarkable is to be found, but the first sluice on the Twertza, and the remains of the obstacles, that were to be surmounted in constructing the canal—The view from Twer is magnificent still. It stands on the high banks of the Wolga, and for its origin is indebted to the Grand Dukes of Russia. At first it was only a small fortress constructed in the year 1182 by the orders of the Grand Duke Wolodimer, for the purpose of checking the incursions of the inhabitants of Novogorod. In 1720 the Grand Duke Jurelaf II. made be built in the same place another citadel, and a city, which increased to such a degree, that it soon became the capital of an independent sovereignty, known under the principality of Twer. For a long time it belonged to the younger princes in the families of the Grand Dukes.

MICHAEL Borisowitch was the last prince of Twer. Iwan I. although his brother-in-law attacked him, and obliged him to take refuge in Lithuania, where he died in the greatest misery. Ambition laughs at the ties of blood. A short time after, this principality was annexed to the empire, and never again separated from it.

TWER is divided into an old and new town. The first, situated on the right bank of the Wolga, consists of poor wooden houses. The second, which was hardly any better built, about twenty years ago became a prey to the flames; and this misfortune operated in favours of this city, for out of its ashes it rose with splendour, by the kindness of Catharine II. who made it be rebuilt on a more modern plan. In consequence of this, we saw elegant streets intersecting one another at right angles; the houses are chiefly of stone, at least of brick. Such as are of wood are done off in the outside with so much art, that they exceed the stone houses in beauty. Catharine II. at her own expence, built the Governor's house, the Bishop's palace, the hall where justice is administered, the exchange, the prisons, and other public edifices. To all, who were willing to build a house of brick, she offered to lend the sum of fourteen hundred roubles (1750 St.) for twelve years, free of interest. The sums, which she advanced on this occasion, amounted to near three hundred

dred thousand roubles (£67,500) and she afterwards withdrew a third of this sum. At present the new town consists of two octagonal areas, where the fine streets just mentioned, terminate. The houses of these two areas, and of the principal streets, are built of brick, and overlaid with white stucco, which gives them a magnificent appearance; and new Twer may be considered as one of the finest cities in the world, even among nations the longest civilized and most opulent. There is a seminary under the inspection of the Bishop, which admits six hundred students.

IN the year 1776, the Empress founded there a school for the instruction of two hundred burgesies' children, who are taught to read, write, and cypher, and such as shew a turn, are bred to mechanical professions.

IN June 1779, an academy also was opened in this city, for the education of the young nobility. This establishment is also indebted to the munificence of her Majesty. It was intended for a hundred and twenty young gentlemen, who are taught foreign languages, arithmetic, geography, fortification, tactics, natural philosophy, music, riding, and dancing.

AN extensive trade is carried on at Twer by means of the Wolga and the Twertza, which are continually covered with boats. These two rivers, by joining

ing near the city, give it great advantages in transporting by water, the productions of Siberia, and of the southern provinces to St Petersburg. We must remark, that the Wolga is the greatest river in Europe. It has its source in the forest of Wolkonski, about a hundred and ten wersts from Twer. It begins to be navigable at a little distance above this city, and it is there much broader than the Thames in any part of its course, but it is very shallow. Very soon after, it is augmented considerably by the Twertza, which is broader, deeper, and more rapid. It is by means of this last river, that the famous communication has been established between the Wolga and the Neva, or in other words, between the Caspian and Baltic seas, which we have mentioned.

THE neighbourhood of Twer produces abundance of wheat, rye, barley, oats, buck wheat, hemp, flax, and all kinds of vegetables. In the forests are to be found oaks, birches, alders, poplars, ashes, pines, &c. At some distance there are elks, bears, wolves, foxes, wild goats, martens, ermines, squirrels, and marmots. There is also plenty of eagles, hawks, cranes, herons, swans, and all kinds of small game. The Wolga at this place contains numbers of excellent fishes, such as salmon, sterlet, tench, pike, &c.

The *Sterlet* in particular is sought after by people of nice tastes, as an excellent dish. It is an un-

common

common kind of fish, and probably found only in northern countries. It is something of the nature of the sturgeon, from which it differs in colour. It is also much smaller, its length being seldom more than three feet. As the *Luculluses* of St Peterburg wish their tables to be garnished with them, there are to be seen at all times on the banks of the Wolga, numbers of chests with holes in them, in which the sterlet and fishes of equal quality, are carried alive to St Peterburg, and by the Okka as far as Moscow. These chests float on the surface of the water, and are fastened to the boats, which conduct them.

FROM Twer to Moscow, the road runs across a country interspersed with agreeable hills, sometimes naked, and sometimes covered with wood, and on the banks of the Wolga, as far as Goroduja. Sawidowo and Klin, which you find on the road, are two miserable villages. In the latter there is a *Saw-Mill*; a thing too rare in this country not to attract the attention of travellers. In short, after having passed Arski, you desery Moscow and its numerous steeples.

CHAP. XV.

Moscow.—History of this city.—Its situation.—Its population.—Contrasts it presents.—Its divisions.—The Kremlin.—Khitai-Gorod.—Beloi-Gorod.—Zemlianoi-Gorod.—The sloboda or suburbs.—The Moscowva.—The palace.—Particular descriptions.—The churches.—Inside of a Greek church.—Enormous bells.

MOSCOW, called by the Russians *Moskua*, is not so ancient as Novogorod, Kiow, Wolodimer, or Twer, where the sovereigns of Russia resided before this city existed, about the origin and foundation of which, the learned of this country are not agreed. To throw light upon it, they have in vain dived into the obscurity of time, whither pride goes for its fables and titles. Subjoined is what the chronicles have advanced as most probable respecting this city.

Kiow had, as we have said, become the capital of Russia, and the Grand Dukes never thought on changing their residence, till George son of Wolodimer Monomacha, who reigned in the year 1147, being insulted by a rich noble called Etienne Kutschka, took vengeance by putting him to death, and confiscating his estates, of which the site of Moscow and its environs are a part. The two rivers, Mos-

kowa and Neglina, uniting at this place, render the situation picturesque. It pleased Wolodimer, who built a city there, which he named Moskua, after the name of the principal river. At George's death, his son Andrew did not neglect Moscow, but under his successors this city fell into such decay, that in the year 1295, when the empire was divided, and Daniel received as his share, the Duchy of Moscow; the city which Wolodimer had raised, was obliged to be founded a second time. Daniel not only reared it again, but fixed his residence in it.

THE ground occupied by the Kremlin, was nothing but wood and morafs, in the middle of which there was one small wooden cottage. In the middle of this wild spot, *Daniel* first erected churches and monasteries, for churches and monasteries then preceded every other thing. He added some other buildings, which he surrounded with palisades. He was also the first, who took the title of the Duke of Moscow or Moscovy. He was so much attached to this residence, that when he succeeded in the year 1300 to the Duchy of *Wladimir* by the death of his brother, he did not go to settle at *Wladimir*, which was the capital, but remained at *Moscow*, which in this way became the capital of all Russia. His successors followed his example, and his son *Iwan* enlarged this city considerably. In the year 1367 his great-grand-
son

ion *Demetrius*, firnamed *Donski*, inclosed the *Krem-
lin* with a brick wall, which was not sufficient to stop
Tamerlane from taking possession of it in the year
1382, after a very short siege. But this conqueror,
who was continually in quest of new victories, very
soon abandoned it. This fortress was retaken by
the Russians, and afterwards again retaken by the
Tartars, who in the fourteenth and fifteenth centu-
ries subdued the greatest part of Russia, and were
finally expelled from Moscow only under the reign
of Iwan-Basilowitsch. To this conqueror it is in-
debted for all its splendor, and under his govern-
ment, it was the most considerable city of all the
Russian empire.

NOTWITHSTANDING the predilection, which Peter
I. had for St Petersburg, and that all his successors,
except Peter II. have almost continually resided
there, Moscow is still the most populous city in Rus-
sia. There the great people, who are not by offices
connected with court, have fixed their residence.
There they support a rank, and expend considerable
sums. Their pride and taste incline them to this
Asiatic magnificence, which recalls to their minds the
ancient grandeur of the nobility; and besides they
are not eclipsed there as at St Petersburg, by the
splendor of the court.

Moscow is situated in 50 degrees, 45 minutes, 30
seconds, of North Latitude, and 55 degrees, 6 mi-

minutes, of East Longitude, reckoning from the meridian of Ferro. It is certainly the most extensive city in Europe. Its circumference within the ramparts, which surround the suburbs, is thirty wersts, (near thirty English miles,) but it is built in a manner so irregular, and there are so many vacancies, that the population does not answer to its extent. Some Russian authors have raised it to the number of five hundred thousand souls, but this is certainly exaggerated. *Busching*, who resided long in Russia, says, that in the year 1770 Moscow contained seven hundred and eight houses of brick, eleven thousand, eight hundred and forty of wood, eighty five thousand, seven hundred and thirty one males, sixty seven thousand and fifty nine females, in all a hundred and fifty two thousand, seven hundred and ninety souls, a calculation, which seems to err on the other extreme. The police officer appointed by the Empress in the year 1780 to take the numbers of Moscow, made a return, by which the inhabitants within the boundaries of this city amounted to two hundred and fifty thousand souls, and in the adjacent villages to fifty thousand. A later account taken in the year 1789 gives out the total number to be, two hundred and forty thousand souls. This last is most deserving of credit, because it has been taken with the greatest precaution.

pewter, others are painted green or gilt, several are only of wood.

THE principal divisions of Moscow are first the *Kremlin*, 2dly the *Khitai-gorod*, 3dly the *Beloi-gorod*, 4thly the *Zemlianoi-gorod*, 5thly the *Sloboda*, a kind of suburbs.

1st THE Kremlin—It is probable that it got this name, under the dominion of the Tartars, from the word *Krem* or *Krin*, which signifies fortress. It is situated in the centre and highest part of Moscow, at the confluence of the *Moskwa*, and the *Neglina*, which washes its two sides. Its form is triangular, and the circumference about three wersts. It is surrounded as we have said with high brick walls, and is not disfigured like the other quarters, by wooden houses because none are allowed to be built there. It contains the old palace of the Czars, (which is called *Krasnoie-Kribzo*, or the Red Balcony, because this is what is most remarkable on the outside) and the palace of granite built by Boris Godonow. There we also noticed several churches, two monasteries, the Patriarch's palace, and the arsenal at present in ruins. We shall mention these buildings separately.

THE second division is the *Khitai-gorod*, a word which several authors have translated by the Chinese city, but which we believe to be of Tartar origin, and with so much the more propriety, that in Ukraine

kraine and Podolia, there are two cities of the same name, which have been known by the Tartars, and have never had any connexion with China. Besides, Khitai is a Tartar word, which signifies *Middle*, and has been applied to this part of Moscow, because it stands between the Kremlin and Belogorod.

THIS quarter larger than the Kremlin contains the Royal Printing Office, and several other public edifices, among which, twenty churches, and five monasteries are conspicuous. It was from one of these churches that formerly the procession went on Palm-Sunday, to recall to the remembrance of believers, the entry, which according to Scripture, Jesus Christ made into Jerusalem on the same day. The Patriarch of the Russias, like the Saviour of the world advanced in procession seated upon an ass, magnificently decorated, of which the Czar on foot held the reins. The streets were hung, and strewed with branches of trees, and shouts of Hosanna filled the air. Peter I. suppressed this puerile ceremony, which was humiliating for the sovereign, and flattering to the pride of the priest, who on this occasion enjoyed a kind of triumph.

THE family of Romanoff, now in possession of the throne of Russia, inhabited the Khitai in ancient times. The mint is built on the ground, where their palace stood. In this quarter still remain the college

of mines, and the Gostenoi Dwor, which consists of six thousand shops built of brick with vaults. This erection, which has been executed in the most solid style, is indebted to the munificence of Catharine II. The Khitai is surrounded by walls defended by twelve large square towers raised by Iwan Basilowitsch II.

THE Beloi-gorod, or the white city, surrounds the two quarters just now mentioned, and takes its name from the white walls, which encompass it, and terminate in the two sides on the Moscowa. They were raised by Fedor Iwanowitsch in the year 1587. The Neglina runs through this quarter from south to north, and on its way receives three stone bridges which are narrow, and of Gothic structure. In the Beloi-gorod there are seventy three churches, and eleven monasteries, the arsenal built by Jacob Schoumaker, the Ordinance Foundery, the Imperial Laboratory, and the University founded by Elizabeth in the year 1755, at the solicitation of her favourite Schuwaloff, who was its first curator. It has two schools, one for the nobility, the other for such as are not of noble blood; casts, which pride never joins together. In both schools are taught the ancient and modern languages, mathematics, what in colleges is called philosophy, medicine, and law. The university contains a foundery for types of the Russian and foreign characters, a printing

printing office, a library, a hall for natural philosophy, a cabinet of natural history, an amphitheatre for surgery and anatomy, a chymical laboratory. From this university professors are selected for the academy at Kafan, in which there are often more professors than students.

THE Zemlianoi-Gorod, or city of earth, surrounds other three, from which it is separated by an earthen rampart, which Fedor Iwanowitsch caused be cast up in the year 1591. Formerly it had thirty wooden gates, which are all destroyed, and now it has only two of stone, namely, the gates of Serpoukoff and of Kalouga. This city contains two monasteries, and a hundred and three churches. A police office, a tribunal for criminal affairs, a great number of manufactures, the Imperial stables, caserns for the cannoneers, a magazine for provisions and ammunition. Close by the old gate of Varvaski, is the celebrated Foundling hospital, of which we shall make a separate article.

THE Sloboda, that is the suburbs, form the last and extensive circle round all the quarters already mentioned. They amount to upwards of thirty, of which the most considerable is that called Nemetzkaia-Sloboda, or the German suburbs. They stand upon the Jaoufa, and besides sixty Greek churches, and ten monasteries, contain one Calvinistic, one Roman, and two Lutheran churches, and the house

occupied by the Directing Senate, when the court is at Moscow. In these suburbs too stands the house built by Lefort, in which Peter II. lodged and died, and the Hospital General, founded by Peter I. who joined to it schools for medicine, surgery and botany; sciences in which the Russians had the greatest need to be instructed.

BESIDES this hospital, another was built in the year 1762, about two wersts from Moscow, where the patients of every nation are admitted, and taken care of at the expence of the Grand Duke Paul Petrowitsch, who from the age of twelve years has constantly dedicated a part of the money, destined for his pleasures, to this establishment, which does honour to humanity, and to him, who founded it.

THE Moscowa, which has lent its name to Moscow, takes several turns on its way through this city. It is navigable only for rafts, except in the spring, when for a few days the melting of the snows gives it the look and deepness of a river. As for the Neglina and Jaoufa, which run into it, they are nothing but two streams, that are almost dry in summer.

THE palace, in which the Empress lodges, when it is her pleasure to go to Moscow, is not a single building, but conformably to the ideas of Asiatic grandeur, is a large mass of several buildings, form-

ing

ing different streets, and resembling a city of middling size.

THE gardens have been preserved, which belonged to the old palace built by Elizabeth, near the place where the new palace has been erected. They are very extensive, and abound with long gravel walks. In some places the ground is laid out in a way both natural and agreeable; yet it must be owned, the ancient taste has been too much followed, in drawing long rows of yews, dressed with sheers, and long canals very strait, and all of the same form. Some years ago, the walks, groves and basons were ridiculously encumbered with statues of the poorest taste; but Catharine II. who is a lover and patroness of the arts, has removed this crowd of mannikins, whose places she has filled up with equal taste and judgment, by pieces, which do honour to her choice. This palace and the gardens connected with it, are at the extremity of the suburbs, but within the compass of the rampart, which surrounds the city.

THE Russians are uncommonly fond of greens, and walks in the field during the fine season. Every body rides in a carriage at Moscow, where you meet with coaches drawn by six horses, which the nobility use without even going out of the city. There are also a great number of hackney coaches, which have commonly four wheels, but are open

above, and have a long bench, or several seats on the sides. They are to be got at so cheap a rate, that servants often use them when going about their master's business. These carriages generally go at the rate of two leagues and a half in the hour. There are other carriages, which hold a mean between the citizen's and the hackney coach just now mentioned. These have four horses, often of different colours. The coachman and postilion are dressed like peasants. An enormous hat of a cylindrical form, a long beard, and a pelisse of sheep-skin make up their uniform. Behind the carriage is an enormous bag of hay; a precaution, which becomes extremely necessary, for the horses return not to the stable till night or midnight, like those belonging to our hackney coaches.

WHEN a person visits the public buildings of Moscow, he is led first through the churches and chapels, which are extremely numerous. Only a hundred and ninety nine are of brick, the rest are built of wood. The former are generally ornamented with plaster or stucco, and painted black; the latter are painted red.

THE oldest churches of Moscow are generally square buildings, with a cupola and four small domes. That of the Holy Trinity, called sometimes the church of Jerusalem, which stands in Khitai-Gored, has the length of ten. These domes are of copper

or gilt iron, and some are of pewter, either retaining its original colour, or painted green. The greatest part of them are ornamented with crosses, wrapped round with metal chains or wire. Each cross has two traverse bars, which is, if we are to believe some Russians, the form of the true cross. On many of these crosses we observed a crescent below the inferior bar. Doctor King very ingeniously explains the origin of these crescents, about which it is idle to question the people of the country. "When the Tartars," says the English doctor, "who were masters of Russia for two centuries, changed the christian churches into mosques, they fixed on them the crescent, which is the symbol of Mahometism. The Grand Duke Iwan Basilowitsch, having on his turn expelled the Tartars, restored the churches to the Christians, and placed a cross above the crescent as a trophy of his victory."

THE inside of a church is most frequently made up of three parts. The first is what the Greeks call *Pronaos*, and the Russians *Trapeza*; the second is the nave or body of the church, and the third is the sanctuary. In the nave there are usually four heavy pillars for the purpose of supporting the cupola. These pillars, as well as the walls and arch or ceiling of the church, are painted with an infinite number of images of the Saviour, the Virgin, and different saints,

faints, especially St Nicholas, and St Alexander Newski. Many of these images are of an enormous size, very coarsely painted, and most frequently daubed quite simply on the wall; others upon large massy plates of silver or copper, and framed with the same metal. The head of each figure is invariably ornamented with a crown, which consists of a massy semicircle of copper, silver, or gold, in form of a horse shoe, and sometimes it is almost wholly made up of pearls and precious stones. Almost all the images of St Nicholas, and those, which are most worshipped, are ornamented with silk drapery, fixed to the wall with jewels. Some are painted on a gold ground, others are gilt from head to foot, except the face and hands. The extremity of the nave is a balustrade, which leads to the sanctuary, and at the top of this balustrade is a platform, on which the priest stands, when he performs a part of the service.

THE sanctuary is separated from the nave by what is called the *Iconastus*, a sort of large screen, which is generally the part of the church most richly ornamented, on which the most revered images are painted or suspended. In the centre is a folding door, called the *holy* and *royal* door, by which they enter into the sanctuary.

IN most part of the churches our attention was drawn to the enormous size and number of the bells,
but

but this sight did not surprife us, becaufe we knew that ringing of bells is an effential part of worfhip among the Ruffians; more childifh ftill in their manner of addreffing the Divinity, than the fuperftitious Spaniards, who are in the higheft degree of comparifon in point of fuperftition. To the accounts refpefting bells already given in the former volume we fhall add here, that they are not fhaken to and fro as among us; on the contrary the bell is always immoveable, and it is never founded but by a knocker, fixed at its fide, which is put in action by means of a cord tied to it. As in thefe countries it has been always regarded as a meritorious action to give bells to a church, and as the piety of the donor has been valued in proportion to the fize of the bell given, *Boris Godonow*, the ufurper of a throne, to which he had paved the way only by a fucceffion of crimes, doubtlefs believed he would expiate them all by giving to the cathedral of Mofcow a bell of 312,480 pounds weight. The Emprefs Anne, who had no crimes to expiate, but wifhed in point of piety to excel all the fovereigns of Ruffia, made this bell be recaft, and ordered two thoufand pounds of metal to be added to the original, fo that this bell, which now weighs 400,200 lb. averdupois, is the largeft in the world. Its fize is fo enormous, that it is hardly poffible to be perfuaded, that the dimenfions are not exaggerated. But it is in confequence of
having

having taken them ourselves, that we affirm it to be nineteen feet high, and that its circumference is thirty seven fathoms and some feet. It is twenty one inches and a half thick. The tower where it was hung, was reduced to ashes, the bell fell, and being much encumbered with the ground, it has not been lifted up again. In this fall a bit was broken out of it towards the lower part, which has left an opening large enough to admit two persons without stooping.

C H A P. XVI.

RELIGIOUS houses, situated in the Kremlin.—Vijsnowitshoi.—St Michael the Archangel's cathedral.—Burying place of the Czars.—Grave of Iwan Basilewitsch I.—That of Iwan Basilewitsch II.—Sovereignty of the Romanoffs.—Michael Federowitsch.—Fedor his son.—Alexis Federowitsch, father to Peter I.—Particulars of this prince.—His clemency.—His marriage with the beautiful Natalia Cyrillovna.

IN the Kremlin there are two religious houses, one for nuns, and another for monks. The latter merits no particular description. The Nunnery called *Vijsnowitshoi* was founded in the year 1393 by Eudoxia, wife to the Grand Duke Demetrius Donski,
and

were crowned and married; and the third is remarkable for its structure and the riches it contains. The architecture of these churches is completely ridiculous. It is of the worst Gothic kind, and probably the work of that Solarius of Milan, who built the walls of the Kremlin, and was only a rough mason.

In the cathedral of St Michael the Archangel, you see the graves of the Sovereigns, who are deposited there, not as among us in subterraneous vaults, but in tombs built, generally of brick in form of a coffin, and about two feet high. The most ancient are covered with palls of red cloth, and some with velvet. That wherein Peter II. is laid, is covered with gold stuff trimmed with fringes and ermine. At the time of the grand festivals, they are all covered with rich gold and silver stuffs, ornamented with pearls and jewels. At the foot of each tomb there is a plate of silver, bearing the name of the Sovereign and the year of his death.

So long as Moscow was the Imperial residence, and till the end of the last century, all the Czars were buried in this cathedral, except Boris Godunow, whose body lies in the Trinity monastery, and the Czar, who bore the name of Demetrius and lost his life in a riot, and Basile Shuiski, who died in prison at Vorkova.

THE tomb of Iwan Basilowitfch I. principally attracts attention, becaufe this prince is celebrated in the Ruffian annals. At his acceffion to the throne in the year 1462, Ruffia was divided into feveral fmall principalities, which were perpetually at war with, or yielding an imperfect fubmiffion, to the Grand Duke of Mofcow; and all of them, even the Grand Duke himfelf, were tributary to the Tartars. Iwan changed the face of this Empire. He united thefe different principalities to his ftate, fhook off the yoke of the Tartars, formed connections with feveral European nations, and opened a communication with them. He favoured commerce, encouraged the moft neceffary arts, and in feveral refpects, merited the name of Great, which was given him notwithstanding his manners, which were of a piece with his age, and which his wife, a Grecian Princefs of diftinguifhed merit, could not altogether foften.

IWAN Basilowitfch II. his fon and fucceffor, lies in a fmall chapel adjoining. This prince has been reprefented by feveral writers, as the moft cruel tyrant, that ever afflicted or difgraced the human race. This character given him by the monks is doubtlefs exaggerated. We fhall acknowledge he had the ferocity of his age, and of the climate, in which he was born, and which, as yet produced none but ferocious men. We fhall confefs he had

vices, but will say he did great things, and yet would have been nothing but a celebrated robber, if he had confined himself to arming and disciplining the Russians, and conquering the kingdoms of Kafan and Astracan. But he gave his subjects a code of written laws, he brought several artists to Moscow, where he established printing, encouraged commerce, fixed certain regulations respecting the custom-house duties, allowed the British merchants to trade in his dominions, and granted them the free exercise of their religion. He died in the year 1584, of grief for the death of his eldest son, whom he killed by accident. He was succeeded by Fedor, a weak shallow prince, and only a crowned mannikin. With him ended the male line of the house of Ruric, who had reigned more than seven hundred years in Russia.

To this race of princes succeeded that of the Romanoff's, of whom Michael Federowitch was the first Czar. Brought up in a cloister he was called to the throne by the choice of the Boyards on the 21st of February 1613. For this advancement he was indebted to his illustrious birth, and still more, to the seductive arts of Fedor Nikitiz, his father, better known under the name of Philarethes, of whom we shall afterwards make particular mention. Arsenia, mother of the young Federowitch, who had lived at court and close by the throne, far from rejoicing

rejoicing at the elevation of her son, represented, it is said, to the deputies, who came to announce to him the choice, which had been made of him, that a young man brought up in a cloister, without experience of men and things, was ill calculated to manage the empire in its very difficult circumstances. The modest Fedorowitsch was of his mother's opinion. Charmed with their moderation, the deputies encouraged them, and the wisdom of Philarethes made up for the inexperience of his son.

THIS prince occupied the throne with glory during a reign of thirty two years, which the Russians thought too short, and reckoned among their happiest days.

ALEXIS Michaelowitsch, his son, who is interred at his side, is known to foreigners for almost no other reason, than that he was the father of Peter I. Yet Russia stands indebted to this prince for useful establishments. He reformed the laws, disciplined the army, caused some slender barks be built on the Caspian sea, which the Russian historians called ships. He conquered Smoleniko, and a great part of Ukraine from the Poles. In short, he drew the first outlines of the plan, which Peter I. enlarged and completed.

All, who have mentioned this prince, have agreed in praising him, and say, he was a good husband, a good father, and a good sovereign. It is true,

true, he was excessively hot, but his natural mildness very soon calmed his impatience. When returned to himself, he was ashamed of his passion, and made amends for it by favours, which exceeded the injuries he imagined he had done those, whom his impetuosity might have offended. He was a friend to memorials, like Louis XIV. his cotemporary, about whom he was fond of conversing. His heart was humane and compassionate, so that he never put his name to the foot of a sentence of death, without watering it with his tears. *I am not a Czar to destroy my subjects,* said he one day to Naritskin, who was his prime minister, and enjoyed his confidence, *on the contrary, it is my duty to preserve them, and to grant pardon to all those, who are not convicted of having dyed their hands in the blood of their brethren.* At this very moment, the minister presented to him a sentence of death to sign against a deserter, but he wrote below, *I grant pardon,* and subscribed his name. Notwithstanding this clemency, equal to that of Titus, who is quoted as a model to all princes, Alexis was the Czar, who established the Inquisition of State, known in Russia under the name of the *Secret Committee*, of which we have had occasion to speak several times. Has the erection of this tribunal been a stain on his reign and the nation? This is the problem proposed by Leclerc in his history of
Russia.

Russia. In this question there is nothing singular, except that it is thought the subject admits of a question.

THE circumstances of Alexis' marriage with Natalia Cyrillowna, mother to Peter I. are too descriptive of this prince, and the manners of his times, not to be laid before the reader.

ARTEMIN Matwejeff, who was grandfather to Count Romanzoff Zadounaiski, now marshal-general, and lieutenant-colonel of the Empress' Horse Guards, was minister of foreign affairs under Alexis' reign, and particularly honoured with the friendship of this prince, who, setting all etiquette aside, came often to eat with his minister, and talk of business in an easy way. Coming in one night very late, and without being expected, he found the cover laid. "This table seems to invite me," said he, "to Matwejeff, and I will set myself down at it, if I constrain nobody." The minister assures him, that he cannot confer on him an higher honour, and orders supper immediately. His wife enters, accompanied by his son and a young lady. They sup, and during the repast Alexis had often fixed his eye on the young fair guest sitting directly opposite to him, whose beauty was equalled only by her modesty. "I always thought," said the Czar to his minister, "that you had only a son, and it is only to day that I learn you have a daughter; I am not a lit-

“ the displeas’d with you for having kept this a se-
 “ cret from me.” “ Your Majesty is wrong in bla-
 “ ming me for this,” answer’d Matwejeff. “ I have
 “ really an only son, and the young lady, whom
 “ you take for my daughter, is the daughter of one
 “ of my friends, Cyrille Naritskin, who lives re-
 “ tired in the country, on a moderate fortune,
 “ which his oeconomy alone renders sufficient for his
 “ wants, and those of his family. My wife has taken
 “ this young lady to bring her up, and procure her,
 “ if possible, a settlement. We owe these cares to
 “ friendship, and will make it our duty to attend
 “ to them.” “ I am persuas’d of it,” says his Ma-
 “ jesty. “ I know your heart.” The cloth was drawn,
 the minister’s wife, his son, and the young lady re-
 tired, because they knew, when supper was over,
 his Majesty lik’d to converse alone with Matwejeff.
 “ My friend,” says the prince to him, “ this young
 “ Natalia appears to me possess’d of an excellent
 “ mind, she is full of charms, she is of an age suit-
 “ ed to make a husband happy. We must look out
 “ for one to her, and think seriously of this busi-
 “ ness.” “ Your Majesty is very good, and I thank
 “ you in Natalia’s name, for the attention you
 “ deign to pay her, but the unfortunate young lady
 “ has only her beauty and virtues for her fortune,
 “ and the husbands of the day wish to have some
 “ thing

“ thing else.” “ There is one way ; we must seek
“ out a rich husband, who will not regard fortune,
“ which, is nothing when one meets with a wife
“ like Natalia,” (the prince pronounced these words
with force)—“ It is not at court, that this kind of
“ husband’s is to be found,” said the minister,
“ Courtiers, however rich, always calculate.”—
“ You are prejudiced,” interrupted the Czar, “ and
“ I undertake to find one out that will not calcu-
“ late in the least.” Some days after this inter-
view, the Czar returned to Matwejeff’s, conversed
at first about the affairs of the Empire, and after-
wards invited himself to dinner. He saw the beauti-
ful Natalia, paid her some attention, but with the
greatest reserve. When the entertainment was over,
and the prince and Matwejeff engaged in familiar
conversation. “ Have you thought,” said the Czar
to him, “ on providing Natalia? Have you cast
“ your eye on any person?”—“ No, Sire, it is not
“ that I do not desire it most earnestly, but among
“ the great number of young people, who frequent
“ our house, none has as yet appeared to have the
“ least affection for her.” “ Very well,” says the
Czar, “ I am further forward than you—I have
“ found out a husband capable of making her happy,
“ and rich enough not to enquire after her fortune.
“ She is acquainted with him, but he has been able
“ to keep his sentiments a profound secret, and with-

“ out having the pride of lovers, he is bold to pre-
 “ sume that, when he shall declare himself, he will
 “ not be rejected.” “ Ah! Sire, I did not expect
 “ less from your goodness, you crown my wishes
 “ —under what obligations my friend Cyrille will
 “ be under to you. Might I be bold to ask your
 “ Majesty the name of the young man? Undoubt-
 “ edly, I know him too, and I could give your Ma-
 “ jesty information . . .” —“ I do not ask any, I
 “ know him well enough to need none; only learn
 “ if Natalia has no aversion for marriage.” —“ When
 “ ever we have spoken to her of a settlement, she
 “ has always answered with equal grace and modesty,
 “ that she would study to make the husband
 “ happy, whom we would choose for her. She will
 “ be quite otherwise flattered, when she knows that
 “ it is from your Majesty, that she will receive this
 “ husband.” —“ Ah! my dear Matwejeff,” interrupted
 the Czar with eagerness, “ yes, go tell her
 “ that it is I, who have chosen this husband, and
 “ that he is *Alexis himself*.”

MATWEJEFF filled with astonishment at a declaration so unexpected, falls at the Czar's feet, and conjures him to give up this resolution, or at least to forbear imparting it to Natalia. “ I am already en-
 “ vied,” added Matwejeff, “ because I am honoured
 “ with your favour, but to what height will this en-
 “ vvy rise, when it shall be seen, that your Majesty
 “ disdain

“ disdains the daughters of the principal Boyards,
“ to unite yourself with a young unfortunate girl,
“ brought up in my house. It will be thought that
“ motives of ambition have induced me to advise
“ your Majesty to this step.”—“ Your fears are iina-
“ ginary,” replied the Czar, “ dismiss them, and
“ think only on obeying me. My resolution is form-
“ ed, and Natalia is necessary to the existence of your
“ master.”—“ There is one way, by which your
“ Majesty can reconcile all,” said the minister.
“ Give orders for bringing to court the young daugh-
“ ters of all the Boyards, from among whom the
“ custom of the country authorises you to choose a
“ wife. Natalia Cyrillowna’s beauty and birth en-
“ title her to be of the number of these young la-
“ dies, and your Majesty by choosing her, will ap-
“ pear to adjudge the prize to beauty only, and thus
“ put envy to silence.”

ALEXIS approved of this expedient, and used the greatest precaution not to expose the minister. Natalia was informed of her happy destiny, and proved as discreet as her lover. Some days after, the Czar collected the heads of the clergy, communicated to them his intention of marrying again (Mary Ilinitchora Molosslawsky, was his former wife) and he ordered them to publish it in his dominions. After this publication the principal Boyards of the Empire were obliged to send their marriageable daughters

to court, where, when they appeared in presence of the Czar, he presented a crown of roses to her, whom he chose for a bride. Till the time of Peter I. the most of the Czars had not been married otherwise. There was even a law, which forbid them to take a wife from the house of a foreigner, and which the prince durst not infringe, when he was not possessed of interest or force enough to enable him to oppose the public opinion.

The proclamation just now mentioned, being made in all the provinces of the Empire, more than sixty young ladies arrived at the Kremlin of Moscow, on the first day of September 1670. Custom bore that they should all wear the same dress and veil, which they dropped not, till the prince appeared to make his choice. This was made at noon in one of the principal halls of the palace. The company of young virgins arranged themselves in two rows, the amorous Czar appeared, the veils dropped, and every person's eyes were dazzled with the appearance of so much beauty. Modesty sat on the brows of those young ladies, and anxiety was working in their hearts; but never did beauties display their attractions more idly, nor ever conceive vainer hopes. They little knew the trick love had played them, and that the choice was already made. The discreet Alexis, instead of going all at once to throw himself at the feet of Natalia, pretended to appear for some time embarrassed





The Witch takes the crown from the Tsar, your husband, and says, "Bless'd be proud of seeing you sit on her throne."

fed about making a choice, and when he thought he had deceived the spectators, he advanced to his beloved, who modestly waited her triumph without appearing to doubt it; *Beautiful Natalia*, said he to her, setting on her head the crown of roses, which declared her to be his wife, *Beautiful Natalia, receive this crown from your husband, and may the throne of the Russias be proud to see you sit on it.* The humble Natalia fell at the feet of the Czar, who hastened to lift her up, and lead her to the temple.

PETER I. and a princess named after her mother were the fruit of this marriage. Natalia's fortune made her father Naritskin's, who deserved it. He became Alexis' prime minister, and made his reign illustrious. They were Peter's harbingers. The young Czarina did not live with her husband without meeting with some uneasiness. Alexis was inconstant, but he knew what he owed to his wife. He had a mistress, who dared to behave disrespectfully to her Empress, and Alexis punished her. She disappeared at court. This prince died in the year 1676, regretted by all his subjects and sadly lamented by those, who had the happiness to be near him.

Pyotr, the eldest of his sons, whom he designed for his successor, was equally feeble in body and mind, and incapable of governing, but he had the prudence to leave the administration of affairs to Sophia his sister, whose ambition we have already described.

described. In the name of Fedor she did some glorious and useful things. We must own, it was Galitzin, her prime minister, and according to some historians, her lover, who advised her to them. In the year 1682, Fedor died and left the throne to his brother Iwan, who was not more capable than himself to fill it, but yet he thought himself very deserving of the august honour. Ignorance is presumptuous, especially in princes, to whom the flattering courtier ascribes fictitious talents, which the despot, whether crowned, or expecting to be crowned, at least imagines he really possesses.

As frequent fits of the epilepsy, which seized him almost daily, deprived Iwan of the use of his senses, he was advised to give a share of the government to his brother Peter, who was only ten years of age, but all his intellectual powers were as vigorous and forward, as those of his brother were feeble and backward. For the happiness of his subjects, and in spite of Sophia and Galitzin, before many years elapsed Peter alone got the reins of government, and became *Peter the Great*. This Prince and his successors, all except Peter II. were buried at St Petersburg.

C H A P. XVII.

CHURCH of the Assumption.—Morosoff, Governor and Minister to Alexis.—He receives a terrible lesson from the people.—Its consequences.—Burial of the Patriarchs.—Job.—Philarethes.—History of Nikon.

FROM the church of Moscow we pass into that of the Assumption, which has long been the place, where the Czars have been crowned. It is the most magnificent in all Moscow. The sanctuary is partly covered with plates of gold and silver, works of great value. From the centre of the vault hangs an enormous massy chandelier, which weighs near three thousand two hundred pounds averdupois. It was made in England and was given in a present to the church by Morosoff, who was at first governor to Alexis Michaelowitch, and then made himself his prime minister, as it were, in spite of him. Alexis, yet a young man, being constantly beset, allowed himself to be won, and Morosoff commenced a minister equally arrogant and rapacious, and in the end became as affable as just. A strange metamorphosis, whereof in history he alone furnishes an instance. The Russian memoirs report that he owed it to a terrible lesson given him by the people, who were oppressed by his iniquitous conduct.

THE

THE sacred vessels in the church of the Assumption, the ornaments of the altars, the pontifical robes, even the garments worn by the simple popes, are overloaded with gold with rich embroidery, and jewels. But in general the taste is coarse, and corresponds not with the richness of the materials. The greatest part of the paintings on the walls in the inside, have colossian proportions. Some are very ancient, and were drawn about the end of the fifteenth century. Among others there is a head of the Virgin, believed to have been painted by St Luke; an opinion, which gives it much celebrity, as well as the gift of working miracles. The face is almost black, and the head is ornamented with a crown of jewels. The hands and body are gilt, which produces one of the most extraordinary effects. This painting is seen within the boundaries of the sanctuary, and is kept locked up in a large silver press, which is opened only on grand festivals, or to satisfy the curiosity of religious strangers. Amateurs pass without asking a sight of this respectable effigy, and yet it is the most ancient image to be seen in that country. According to tradition, it was brought from Greece to Kiow, when the sovereigns of Russia resided there. Thence it was transported to Wolodimer and afterwards to Moscow. It is evidently a work of the Greeks, and more ancient than

the

the revival of the arts in Italy, which it is not difficult to believe.

IN this very church the bodies of the patriarchs of Russia are deposited. The first is *Job*, before whom there was in Russia only a primate suffragan of the patriarch of Constantinople. He was installed in the year 1588, in quality of Patriarch of Russia, by the patriarch of Constantinople, with all the requisite solemnities. He put the patriarchal staff into his hand, with a deed certifying the surrender he made him of his rights over him, and his church. The accounts are not the same respecting the motives, which induced him to make this sacrifice to the Russian church. Some historians even call in question the surrender just now mentioned, and with some justice, for the sacerdotal spirit is not only averse to part with any of its prerogatives, but is also inclined to invade those, which it has not.

The most respectable of Job's successors was *Philarethes*, whose name has been mentioned already. It is from him that the princes of the family of Romanoff are descended. This was the name of his grandfather, and the practice in Russia being, that the family should adopt the name of his grandfather, he added it to his own, which was *Alexander Nevski*. He was descended from Andrew, who was born of an Italian family, which emigrated from Venice into Russia, in the year 1486.

Iwanowitsch, and their descendants rose to the first dignities of the empire. Fedor Nikitiz himself was one of the principal Boyards at court, under the reign of Fedor Iwanowitsch, with whom he served in the campaign against the Swedes, which procured to Russia the cities of Koporie, Jamborg, and Iwangorod. In the war 1596, he commanded the army sent against the Tartars. In 1589, he accompanied Boris Godonow to Serpukoff, to guard the frontiers against an approaching invasion. But Boris Godonow, who was an adventurer, and owed the throne, which he took possession of, solely to his audacity and crimes, took umbrage at the birth and military abilities of Fedor Nikitiz, and compelled him to turn monk in the monastery of Sitzkoi, under the name of Philarethes. He was drawn from the cloister by Demetrius the impostor, who had been a monk himself, and wishing to make a tool of Philarethes, he named him metropolitan of Rostoff and Jaroslaw. In the year 1610, he was sent on an embassy to Sigismund, who was besieging Smolensk. This prince was offended at the tone of firmness with which Philarethes had addressed him, and violated the laws of nations by casting him into prison. In 1619, he recovered his liberty, at the solicitation of his son, who, during his own captivity had been elected Czar. His abilities, and the wishes of the people, made him be elected patriarch of Moscow,

Moscow, the very year of his return. In this capacity he edified the Russians by his virtues, and made them happy by governing them with wisdom under the name of his son.

In another place we have observed, that Peter I. had suppressed the dignity of Patriarch, and we then mentioned the motives, that induced him to do so. *Adrian* was the last of these prelates. The Russians enumerate eleven between Job and Adrian, among whom was the famous *Nikon*, the only patriarch buried in the church of the Assumption.

THE Russians are divided in opinion with regard to him. Some consider *Nikon* as Antichrist, and abhor him, while others revere him as a saint. This extraordinary man was born of obscure parents in the year 1613. His first name was *Nikita*, and study was his earliest turn. He applied to theology, especially to the holy scripture. He studied among the monks, who inspired him with a liking for the cloister, and he was going to bury him there, when his father, who wished to make his son useful to the world and his family, tore him from it, and made him acquainted with a charming woman, who became his wife, and made him the father of three children, who all died in infancy. The grief occasioned by the loss of them, the first affections which speak strongly to the soul, induced *Nikita* to propose to his wife to separate in order to enter both

I i 2

into

into a monastery. The separation took place, and Nikita entered into that of Angerikoi, which is situated on an island of the white sea, where twelve monks lead a solitary life, see and speak to one another only once in the week. At his entry he took the name of Nikon.

AFTER a short stay in this modern Thebais, Nikon, who was of a cross temper, which solitude had not sweetened, took a journey to Moscow, with the superior of the monastery, for the purpose of making a collection for building a church, and on this journey quarrelled with this superior, who on his return to the monastery, put Nikon into a frail canoe, managed by a single man, which the barbarous monk, glutting a personal vengeance, knew could not resist the storm. In short, at the mouth of the Onega these unhappy men were assailed by a violent tempest, and by a kind of miracle only landed on a small isle, which Nikon called the isle of the Cross, and vowed to build a monastery on it.

ON this isle, Nikon reached the monastery of Kose-Ozerkoi, where he was received with that brotherly affection, which the Gospel prescribes, but is seldom found among monks. The austerity of Nikon's manners attracted the veneration of the monks to such a degree, that at the death of their superior they unanimously elected him in his room. He stayed there for three years, at the end of which

he died.

business having called him to Moscow, he was presented to Alexis Michaelowitch, who, filled with admiration of his piety, abilities, and eloquence, kept him with himself, and, in the space of five years, raised him, through a succession of dignities, to the patriarchal seat of Moscow. He was promoted to this in the year 1652, and in this station he increased the reputation he had already acquired of being a man of irreproachable manners, endowed with a fervent charity, uncommon knowledge and eloquence. He founded seminaries for the instruction of priests in the Latin and Greek languages. He enriched the patriarchal library with several sacred and profane manuscripts, which he brought from the monastery of Mount Athos. By the authority of the Czar, he assembled a council general of the Greek church to review and correct the version of the bible and the liturgy. It was he, who caused the old version in the Slavonian language be adopted, and made a new edition of it be printed under his own eye. This old version was so scarce, that it could not be got at any price. He ordered to be taken from the churches, the pictures of the dead, which their relations had placed there, and to which the ignorant vulgar often paid religious homage. He abolished superstitious ceremonies, and would he none contributed more than all his brethren together, to the reformation of his church,

church, and to render its form of worship less ridiculous. He distinguished himself no less in the management of public affairs. The Czar consulted him on all occasions. He became the soul of his counsels, from which there issued nothing but what was wise, so long as he influenced them.

BUT, after having risen to the highest pinnacle of greatness, to which a subject can attain, Nikon saw himself hurled from his lofty seat by a vile cabal. He had offended the priests by his reforms, and the courtiers by his austerity of manners. Priests and courtiers are not offended with impunity, and Nikon was sacrificed. They described him to the people as a dangerous, irreligious man. In short, the people superstitiously attached to these sacred absurdities adopted by their ancestors, which Nikon had just done away, were extremely vexed to see the images taken from the churches, the changes made in the liturgy, and the version of the bible, and the final suppression of some ceremonies. Ignorance imputed these different grievances to Nikon as a crime, and pardoned him not. It stirred up against this celebrated man both the capital and the provinces, and the ascendant he had gained over the Czar, which ought to have defended him against so many attacks, only served to hasten his fall, by exciting the jealousy of ministers, especially of Natalia and her father, who wished to reign alone over the
mind

mind of Alexis. In short, Nikon's haughtiness and inflexibility completely deprived him of the support which his virtue and good intentions ought to have preserved to him. His enemies succeeded in alienating the Czar from this great man, and removing him from his person. Nikon, incapable of bending, resolved to prevent his disgrace by voluntarily resigning the patriarchal dignity in the year 1658, after having enjoyed it six years. He retired into the monastery of Jerusalem, which he himself had built and endowed, at the distance of forty wersts from Moscow. Some writers have advanced, that this retreat of Nikon's was forced, and that it was the Emperor himself, who confined him in the monastery of Jerusalem. We are not backward to embrace this opinion, which is Voltaire's, who did not write history like many, who seem to have undertaken the task, only to disfigure it.

NIKON, who had been a hermit at court, when returned to the cloister, of which he had never lost the spirit, gave himself up to childish practices, to austerities, and cruel mortifications, which are an useless outrage to nature, and hasten its dissolution. It is reported, that he shut himself up in a narrow cell, where he had no other bed, but a stone on which he slept, covered with a rush mat. He wore on his breast a broad iron plate, on which was an enormous copper-cross, to which was fixed a chain of

more than twenty pounds weight. For more than twenty years he dragged this frightful badge in honour of the divinity, who gave not man life for such absurdities. Yet these devotional practices, which in Nikon, discovered a debasement of the intellectual powers, did not prevent him from making the complete collection of the annals of Russia, which we have mentioned in the former volume. But even in them you may discover the state, in which his mind was, for in the first lines of his book, he is extravagant enough to pronounce an anathema against those, who should dare to change a single expression in his work.

ALEXIS, but especially Naritzkin, who did not wish to make Nikon's last years unhappy, had left him the vain title of Patriarch to soothe his retirement. But the Russian clergy, who had their vengeance to gratify, importuned the Czar and Naritzkin in such a way, that they really made him be deposed and degraded in one of those assemblies, which churchmen call *Council*. It was held at Moscow in the year 1665, and condemned Nikon to absolute exclusion from the world. He was therefore confined in the monastery of Therapeut in the most rigorous manner, and there reduced to lead the life of an obscure monk. At the death of Alexis, the Czar Fedor, by the persuasion of Galitzin, who

Nikon be removed to the monastery of Saint-Cyrilla, where he enjoyed the greatest liberty. He lived fifteen years after his deposition, and died on the 17th of August 1681. His remains were carried to the monastery of Jerufalem, and buried with all the honours, usually paid to the memory of Patriarchs.

CHAP. XVIII.

COMMERCE carried on at Moscow.—Market of houses.—Foundling hospital.—Account of this institution.—Monastery of Troitskoi.—Saint Sergius its founder.—Account of this Monk.—Description of the Monastery.—Tomb of Mary, Queen of Livonia.—That of Boris Godunow.—Account of this Prince.

ALL the retail trade of Moscow is carried on in the *Khitai-Gorod*, where is, as we have said, the *Gostinai-Dvor*, or exchange, which bears an exact resemblance to what the Asiatics call a *Bazar*. The shops, of which it is made up, occupy a considerable space. The merchants have no lodgings there; but dwell in another quarter at a considerable distance. They come to these shops in the morning, continue there till the afternoon, when they return to their families. Every branch of trade has its particular quarter, and those, who sell the same articles, have

shops at the side of one another. This retail trade agrees perfectly with those markets of the Levant, of which Tavernier and Pietro della Valle have given us descriptions. The Russians resemble the Asiatics in many other customs. This observation is valuable to the philosopher and historian. The principal articles of commerce at Moscow are peltry and furs. These two alone occupy several streets.

AMONG the number of curiosities in this city the market of houses deserves to be ranked. It is held in a large square in one of the suburbs, and presents to sale a great number of houses, laid in pieces on the ground, and close by one another. Whoever is in need of one goes to this place, tells how many rooms he wants, examines the planks, which are all carefully numbered, and cheapens the house, which suits him, as with us one would ask the price of a single piece of furniture. Sometimes the house is instantly paid for, and the purchaser carries it with him; at other times he makes his bargain on condition that it shall be carried, and erected on the spot, on which he wishes to have it. It is a fact that a house is often bought, transported, erected and inhabited in the space of a week. The reason of this uncommon circumstance is, that they are for most part formed only of trunks of trees, with tenures and mortises at the ends, so that there

is nothing more to do, but collect and arrange them when need requires.

THIS expeditious manner of building is not, as may be supposed, practised only in the construction of cottages or small houses. There are some of a large size and handsome appearance, which are reared with a degree of dispatch, that looks like enchantment. There was a remarkable instance of this at the time of the famous journey of Catharine II. to Moscow. Her Majesty proposed to take possession of Prince Galitzin's hotel, which is looked on as the largest in this city; but this not being sufficient, it was resolved to make a temporary addition of wooden buildings; and these buildings larger than the hotel itself, containing a great number of magnificent apartments, were begun and finished in the space of six weeks. They were thought so beautiful and convenient, that when they were taken down at the Empress' departure, they were built anew to make a pleasure house on a hill adjacent to the city.

AT Moscow an admirable police is established in case of mobs or fires. The last in particular are frequent and dangerous, especially in quarters, in which there are none but wooden houses, and where the streets are covered with planks instead of pavement. At the entry to every street there is a gate, at which a sentinel is posted, when circumstances require.

Then the gate is shut, and is constructed in such a way, as not to be easily forced.

THE most remarkable of public establishments at Moscow, deserving of honourable mention, is that of the Foundling Hospital. It was endowed by the reigning Empress in the year 1764, and is supported by voluntary contributions, by legacies and other charities. To encourage the Russians in these acts of generosity, her Majesty grants all the benefactors certain privileges, and a rank proportioned to the value of their contributions. One of the Demidoffs is among the contributors. He is a famous merchant, who to great riches, which he received in inheritance from his ancestors, has added immense sums, gained by speculations, which have been crowned with the most fortunate success. But if he be one of the speculators of Russia, he is also one of the most zealous philanthropists. To the establishment just now mentioned, he has given more than four hundred and fifty thousand roubles (£ 101,250) and bestowed a degree of attention of as much value as this sum. The house for foundlings stands in a spacious place, and in the best air, on a steep bank of Moscow. The building is extensive and of a square form. At first it contained three thousand foundlings, but was afterwards enlarged for the reception of eight thousand. The children are carried to the Porter's lodge, where they are received without any

recommendation, or any questions being asked at those who bring them. The rooms are large and lofty. The sleeping rooms, separated from the work houses, have large windows, by which is produced a current of salubrious air, which is to children one of the first elements of their existence. The beds are not too close. Every child has his own mounted with iron rods, instead of wood. Their clothes are changed every eight days, and their linen three times a week. Going through the rooms, you are struck with the neatness, that prevails in them, not even excepting those of the nurseries, which for neatness and cleanness are not inferior to any other apartments. Humanity takes a pleasure in admiring the care bestowed on these young objects so worthy of it. In this hospital no cradles are used. Indeed the use of them is expressly forbidden. They are not swaddled, but left quite free in their clothes, and in every thing the system of nature is adopted. The children in this hospital, are divided into classes distinguished in proportion to their age. They continue two years under nurses, then they are admitted into the lowest class. The boys and girls are kept together till the age of seven years, and then are separated. They are all taught to read, write, cypher, and to knit stockings. This last art even the boys learn, as well as that of carding hemp, flax, and wool, &c.

THE girls are taught spinning and all kinds of needle work. They work lace, and are employed in cooking, baking and all sorts of household duties.

AT fourteen the children enter into the first class. Then they have liberty to choose a profession to their mind, and for this purpose they have several manufactures established in the hospital itself, where they embroider, work lace, and silk stockings, make gloves, buttons, and cabinet work. There are separate work houses for every trade, and the spectacle they furnish is not the least interesting about this house. You are delighted to see young children in ruddy health giving such application, and eager to reduce their little industry to practice. Contentment and cheerfulness are painted in their countenances, and the way, in which they run in a crowd to carefs the director, when he appears, shows, that they are happy and well treated; that he behaves rather as a father than a master, for children tremble at the sight of a master, but smile at the sight of a father.

SOME boys and girls learn French and German. Of the first a small number are also taught Latin, music, drawing and dancing.

AT the age of twenty or thereabout, they receive a sum of money, and are entitled to some advantages, by which they can settle in any part of the empire they choose; a privilege valuable in Russia,
where

where the peasants are slaves, and cannot quit their village without the permission of their masters. Nobody should leave this house without seeing the refectories, and being present at the dinner of the children. The boys and girls dine separately. The halls in which they eat, are on the ground floor, large, vaulted, and distinct from those in which they work. The first class sit at table, the rest stand, and the little children have people to serve them. Those of the first and second class serve one another alternately. Beef, or boiled mutton with rice is their dinner. This dish looks well, and invites you to take a share. The bread which is all baked in the house, appears excellent. Every child has his own napkin, his own pewter plate, knife, fork, and spoon. Napkins, tablecloths, and towels are all in the greatest order. The children rise at six o'clock, dine at eleven, and sup at six. The youngest are allowed a bit of bread at seven o'clock in the morning, and four in the afternoon. When they are not employed with their tasks, they are allowed the greatest freedom, and they are encouraged to be in the open air as much as possible. This throng of gamefome youth, run, leap about, and form a spectacle, with which humanity is so affected, and so pleased, that words cannot express the sweet sensations.

THERE is a theatre in this hospital, of which all the decorations are the work of the foundlings. They built the theatre, painted it, made the dresses, acted with as much justness as grace, several of our plays, and, among the rest, the charming opera of the *Devin du Village*, (the village fortune-teller) which has been translated into the Russian, and almost all the languages of Europe. The foreigner, who attends these plays, though he understand not the language, cannot withhold his approbation of the precision, ease, and elegance, with which these little innocents act.

THE Empress encourages theatrical exhibitions in this house, as a means of diffusing a taste among her subjects; a taste, which she justly thinks calculated to civilize them more and more, and by this establishment, the Russian theatres may easily be provided with good actors. The best they have in this country come from this school.

THE advantages resulting from the Foundling Hospital are great and numerous. First, An institution so excellent cannot fail to propagate the knowledge of the arts, and of trades among the people, and increase the number of free subjects. Secondly, Its chief and humane tendency is to diminish child murder, a horrible crime, formerly too frequent in Russia, where it was sometimes the attempt of despair. whereas it is among us only the
crime

crime of opinion, and the imprudence of the legislature.

We will not to leave Moscow, without mentioning the monastery of *Troitskoi*, or the Holy Trinity, famous in the annals of Russia, for the asylum it has often furnished to its sovereigns in times of rebellion and danger; and still better known to foreigners, because Peter I. took refuge there, when he recovered from his sister Sophia, the administration of his dominions. This monastery is sixty wersts from Moscow. On the way to it, you pass through *Brotskino*, where stands a palace built by Alexis Michaelowitch, to which this prince often retired. Not long ago, it was a large building, painted yellow, with only a single storey, containing some few small rooms. For a long time, nobody inhabited this palace, if it deserves this name; but the Empress, charmed with the delightful situation, and respecting the residence, which Peter I. preferred to all others, built a palace of bricks, of which the situation is the chief beauty.

The monastery of *St. Basil*, called also the monastery of *St. Basil*, takes this name from its founder, who was called *St. Basil*, and was put in the number of the saints, at the request of the monks as well as the people, against the right of canonization. There is a very tall spire and in the Church church, but to make a brief description of the mo-

ly synod, and perhaps that of the Czar, is necessary. Sergius, who was at the court of Demetrius Douiski, when Saint Bernard was at the court of Louis the Young, having advised him to make war on the Turks, sent him two monks, to assist him with their counsels; and the Russian chronicles, like all histories written by monks, affirm, that these two friars contributed to the victories, which Douiski gained. We are not averse to believe so, not because these monks had military talents, but because they spoke to the soldiers, in the language of superstition, and because fanatics are capable of any thing in an engagement.

THE extent of the monastery of Troitzkoi is very great. You would imagine you were entering a city. It is surrounded with considerable fortifications in the old style, that is, with a brick wall, battlements, and towers. The parapet is covered with a timber roof. The walls and towers have embrasures for muskets and cannon, and all the works are besides surrounded with a deep fosse or ditch. This monastery, or fortress, has stood more than one siege. Among the rest, it defied all the efforts of Ladislas, a Polish prince, who besieged it with a numerous army.

BESIDES the habitation of the monks, there is within this wall an Imperial palace, and nine large churches built by different sovereigns. The monastery.

tery, properly called so, is formed of a set of buildings, very spacious, and surrounding a court. They are by much too large for the number of those, who at present inhabit them. Formerly there were three hundred monks, and students in proportion. It was the best endowed religious house in Russia; it possessed lands so extensive, that at least a hundred thousand peasants resided on them. These having been united to the crown, like all those lands, which belonged to the church, the monks now receive only a small pension, and consequently their number has diminished along with their revenues. To lessen their number, the true plan is to reduce them to a pension, but when they are thus reduced, the pension must be paid them; for a man, who has been a monk for a certain time, becomes really a parasite plant, that must be nourished with the juice of others. There are at this day only a hundred monks at most in Troitzkoi, who wear black clothes, and a hood of the same colour. They eat no meat, and are subject to strict regulations. In this monastery there is also a seminary, in which there are about two hundred students destined for the church. These learn nothing but what is necessary to qualify them for being priests, and it is well known how little is necessary to be learned as a qualification for this office in Russia.

As to the palace, of which we have spoken,—it is very small, and bears a singular contrast to the large buildings allotted for the monks. When the sovereigns resided in Moscow, they frequently lodged in it. In one of these apartments there are stucco works, representing the principal actions of Peter I. The churches, like all these in Russia, are superbly and splendidly ornamented with gold and silver work. The most elegant dresses worn by the priests are there displayed to view, but their chief excellence consists in the metal, for the workmanship is coarse. The principal church has a cupola, and four domes. That on the front is of gilt copper, that on the back part is of pewter, or iron painted green. The steeple, which is new, was built by order of the Empress Elizabeth. It is a piece of architecture agreeable enough. The trouble of ascending it receives a satisfactory recompense in the prospect of a country delightfully varied, well cultivated, extremely fertile in grain, and covered with a vast number of villages.

Some of the tombs to be seen in the principal church, attract attention. The first is that of Mary queen of Livonia, the only person, who ever bore this title, which she purchased dear, and never derived any advantage from. She was descended from Ivan Bassilowitch II. and married Magnus, the Christian III. king of Denmark, in favour of whom

Iwan II. wished to make a kingdom of Livonia. He did so, but this new power lasted only four years. Magnus, for whose advantage this kingdom had been formed, wanted to shake off the dependence, in which the Russians kept him. He tried the fate of arms, was vanquished and taken prisoner by Iwan, who never seriously wished the happiness of Magnus. After having recovered his liberty, this prince could never retrieve his fortune. In the year 1583, he ended his unhappy days in Courland, where he had taken refuge. His wife Mary was confined in a convent with Eudoxia, the only fruit of this marriage. She was buried at the side of her mother.

The tomb of Boris Godonow is in the same church, who, from being an individual subject, became Czar of Russia, in the year 1597, on the death of Fedor Iwanowitsch. He was of a noble family, and of Tartar origin. He was born in the year 1522, and at the age of twenty, Iwan placed him with his son Iwanowitsch. By degrees he arrived at the highest dignities, and acquired great interest by his sister Inna's marriage with the Czar Fedor Iwanowitsch, under whom he very soon acquired a power so unlimited, that nothing remained for him to desire, but the title of sovereign. Even during the Czar's lifetime, he had taken it upon him to affix the seal instead of the Czar's, who was mean enough

enough, or weak enough to suffer him to act so disrespectfully.

THIS ostensible sovereign, Fedor, dying without children, and all parties having the highest opinion of the ability of Boris, they set the crown on his head. At first he showed himself worthy of sovereign power; he was so prudent, his manners were so popular, and his integrity was so great. But the fear of losing what he had thus unexpectedly arrived at, made him commit atrocious crimes. He cruelly persecuted several powerful families, whose interest he feared, and caused prince Demetrius be assassinated. An attempt, which did not continue long unpunished. All Russia rose at once to avenge him, and the tyrant in despair at seeing himself abandoned, even by those, whom he had lifted from the dust, to make his accomplices, or the perpetrators of his crimes, took poison, that he might not pass directly from the throne to the scaffold, and expired in the most horrible convulsions. His death, which happened in the year 1605, after a reign of eight years, has been considered by some Russians, as a misfortune to their country. It must be owned, that if the crimes of Boris could be banished from the mind, he might be regarded as one of the greatest princes, that ever governed Russia. The same thing has happened to him, that happens to all tyrants. Crimes have been imputed to him, of
which

which he never was guilty, and by experience he found it to be the fate of princes, that they cannot commit one crime, without being charged with many others. It would seem that heaven, who is the protector of the weak, intended thereby to impose a check on the powerful, who are afraid of this kind of disgrace. Thus Boris, who had brought on himself the hatred and detestation of posterity by one crime, has been also condemned with the utmost severity, even for actions, deserving of the highest commendation.

CHAPTER XIX.

DEPARTURE from Moscow.—Forest of Wolkonski.—Villages.—Peasants.—Their cottages.—Roads.—Posts.—Viafna.—Dogorebusch.—Smolensko.—Description of this town.—Lady.—Tolitzin.—Entry into Poland.

WE left Moscow with the design of going into Poland by Smolensko. As we got out of this city, we crossed the Moscowa, upon a sort of raft, or boat fixed to the two banks. The Russians call these rafts, *Moving bridges*, because they bend and move under the weight of a carriage. Such bridges would not be much to the taste of our ladies.

From Moscow to Malo Aviasina, the road is a broad avenue, cut in a straight line across a forest, which you enter, almost as soon as you leave Moscow. It takes the name of Wolkonfki (forest,) is of immense extent and contains the sources of the principal rivers of Russia in Europe, the Dwina, Dnieper and Wolga. The source of the Dwina is at a great distance from the high way, but those of the Dnieper, and Wolga are not. The ground in this country is very frequently interrupted by hills and valleys, but they are of little elevation and depression. The trees, which skirt the roads, have been planted by the hands of nature. They are oak, birches, ashes, poplars, and pines, which form a mixture of the greatest variety. The majestic and uniform extent of the forest, is occasionally relieved by fields and meadows, which by varying the prospect, amuse the traveller, whom the solitude of the road inspires with a gloomy melancholy. As in this forest there are often long spaces of the road very good, we had recourse to our books, which saved us many wearisome moments.

Serokino and Gorkowa, which are in the forest, proper villages. Aviasina, which you come to as you get out of the wood, stands on an eminence, and, with its domes and steeples, makes a reflected appearance through the trees. This city, irregularly built on a good extent of ground, consists chiefly

of wooden houses. The small number of brick houses, you notice there, is indebted to the munificence of the Empress. The principal street, like the Russian highways, is covered with planks. This city contains more than twenty churches, an astonishing number for a place so thinly peopled. Perhaps it would have been a flourishing city, if manufactures had been erected instead of these churches. But industry is none of the qualities of devotees. To the useful virtues they prefer a childish abnegation, which the divinity reprobates.

The peasants of the countries we travelled through, appeared to be race of tall men, very strong and inured to fatigue. Their dress consists of a round hat, or very high cap, a coat of coarse cloth, or in winter, a sheep-skin, which comes down below their knee, and is fixed to the vest by a girdle, a pair of breeches of cloth as strong, as that of which our sacks are made, a piece of cloth or flannel rolled round their legs instead of stockings, sandals of plaited bark, tied with points of the same stuff, which rising upon the leg, serve for garters. In summer a shirt and pair of cloth breeches are often all their dress.

The form of their houses or rather cottages is square. They are built of whole logs heaped on one another and joined with tenures and mortises, as formerly described. The vacancies between the

logs are filled with moss. In the inside they are smoothed with a hatchet, and resemble an wooden partition. On the outside the bark is not covered. The roof has two sides, and consists of the bark of trees, or of shingles overlaid with potter's clay or turf. For executing all this the peasant uses only the hatchet, which he handles with the greatest dexterity. With this single instrument he cuts the wood and does every thing else, because the most part of the Russian peasants, are yet unacquainted with the saw.

THE windows are openings of some inches square, which they shut with a board, which slides in a groove, and the doors are so low, that a man of ordinary stature is obliged to stoop before he can get in.

THESE cottages seldom have two storeys. If they have, the lowest one is kept as a store house for provisions, and in the highest the family lodges. The stair-case is a kind of ladder set on the outside, but most frequently the cottages have only the ground floor and one room.

THE furniture of these small rural dwellings consists of an wooden table, and benches fixed round the room. The utensils are a few plates, basins, and spoons, all made of wood, and sometimes an earthen pot, used for cooking the coarse meats, of these simple people, who generally live on rye bread,

eggs, salt fish, bacon, and mushrooms. Their most esteemed dish is a ragout, made up of fresh or salt meat, oat meal seasoned with onions and garlic, for the Russian peasants put garlic in every thing. The inhabitants of these provinces are very greedy of money. They ask payment in advance, every time you cheapen or buy the least article. They also appear inclined to theft, and it is one of the principal employments of a traveller to keep them at a distance from his baggage.

THE peasants are obliged to furnish horses at every post, and at a fixed and moderate rate, which makes them very slow in bringing them out. Whoever furnishes them, acts as postilion. They always put four horses a breast, and commonly eight or ten are yoked in a carriage, that does not require half of the number. But the posts are like those of Moscow and St Peteriburg, and the roads detestable when the frost has not covered them with ice. At the time of a thaw, which often comes on suddenly, the method of yoking the horse becomes an hindrance to the carriage, instead of forwarding its progress, for being yoked a breast, they embarrass rather than help one another. The drivers scarcely ever use boots or saddles. They have no stirrups, but a double cord laid over the back of the horse. Instead of a bridle they use a bit of small cord for leading the horses, which have no regular step.

The drivers, either inexpert or careless, often make them gallop in the worst of the road, and let them go slowly where it is firm and level. The end of a cord serves them for a whip, but they use it seldom. Their practice is to rouse their horses by crying and whistling, and when these good people are not engaged in one of these exercises, they make the air resound with their songs, like the Jamshies in the neighbourhood of Moscow.

ON the road from Viasna to Smolensko, the woods and villages are such as we have been describing, except Dogorubush, which the people of the country call a city. This city then, since they will have it so, is built on a hill, and exhibits a group of churches, houses, cottages, fields, and meadows. Several houses have been built very lately at the Empress' expence. They are of brick, and covered with a sort of stucco, and when compared with the cottages around them, look like palaces. *Dogorubush* was formerly a place of strength, and stood several sieges in the war between Poland and Russia. The remains of an old citadel are yet to be seen, from which there is an extensive prospect of a champaign country, washed by meanders of the Dnieper, and bounded by distant little hills.

If Smolensko is not the most beautiful, it is certainly the most singular city in Russia. It stands on the banks of the Dnieper, in a valley between two

hills. Its walls are thirty feet high, and fifteen broad. The lower part of them is of stone, and the upper of brick, and they follow the windings of the hills. At every corner there is a round or square tower, of two or three storeys, much broader at top than at bottom, and covered with an wooden roof of a round form. The intervals between the towers are taken up with turrets, and on the outside the wall is defended by a deep fosse, a covered way, a glacis, &c. Where the ground is uneven there are also earthen redoubts constructed in the modern way. The cathedral is built on an eminence in the middle of the city. From the ground, on which it stands, the view is most picturesque. The city appears at a little distance, and almost under the same horizon, you see all that the prospect contains, houses, steeples, gardens, groves, fields, and meadows. It is one of those scenes, which are seldom to be met with. The most part of the houses are built of wood, and of one storey. They are hardly any thing but cottages. There is however a small number of houses, which look neater, at least not so poor, which the inhabitants of that country seriously call palaces. Some of the churches are built of brick and ornamented with stucco. A long and broad paved street cuts the city in a straight line. The rest are in general irregular, and interspersed with plants. The walls of the city extends

tends to the banks of the Dnieper. Beyond the river is a kind of suburbs, consisting of straggling huts, which being joined to the city by an wooden bridge, also forms a landscape worthy of the artists' pencil. It is said that Smolensko contains about four thousand inhabitants. It has no manufactures, but it carries on some trade with Ukraine, Dantzic, and Riga. It sells linen, hemp, honey, wax, leather, hogs bristles, masts, planks, and Siberian furs. In the course of the continual wars between the Russians and Poles, Smolensko was considered as a very important place. Although its fortifications were, according to the fashion of the times, only earthen works, fosses, palisades, and a citadel built of wood, they were sufficient to secure this city against the incursions of an undisciplined force; for the length of a regular siege, would have soon discouraged troops, equally unacquainted with the art of forming and supporting it. It was not till the sixteenth century, that the Czar Basile Iwanowitch made himself master of it by bribing the garrison. The Russians kept it for about a century in the same state, in which they took it. Afterwards its importance induced them to surround it with a wall, which is still lasting. In the year 1611, the Poles retook it, but about the end of the century it fell again into the hands of the Russians, and has remained there.

LADY, which you come to after passing Smolensk, was a frontier town before the dismemberment of Poland. From this town, which deserves not the name, as far as Tolitzin, which is the last village in Russia, the country is unequal, and interspersed with hills, and numerous forests. It produces wheat, millet, hemp, and flax. There are some larger villages, in which there are schools and other buildings, erected at the Empress' expence, who extends her beneficent eye to the frontiers of the states, and is not like those *Purblind* monarchs, who see all their kingdom in their capital, and by the appearance of it, judge of the provinces, which most frequently have a very different aspect. At Tolitzin too there are churches with domes, appropriated to the Polish dissenters from the Greek form of worship, and to the Russians, who wish to settle in this country, which is a part of the government of Mofcow.

THE lines, which separate Russia from Poland, are drawn from the mouth of the Dwina to above Witepsk. Thence a line straight south to the head of the Drug, near Tolitzin, thence along the Drug to its junction with the Dnieper, and thence along the Dnieper till the point where it receives the Sotz.

THIS vast territory is at present divided into two Governments, those of Poloff and Mofcow. Its population is about a million six hundred thousand

fouls. It produces abundance of grain, hemp, flax, and grafs. Its forests furnish a great number of mafts, planks, oak for the fhip building, pitch, tar, whereof the greateft part is fent to Riga by the Dwina.

C H A P. XX.

PHILOSOPHICAL accounts of the Tartar tribes fubject to Ruffia, but little known.—The Barfchkirians.—The Burattians.—The Czurwuchians.—The Kalmucs.—The Cossacs.—The Mongols.—The Mordweans.—The Ofiaes.—The Samoiedes.—The Tungufians.

I N Italy and the countries once held by the ancient Greeks, where the philofopher treads on the ruins of ancient cities, which are now no more, but remind him of the haughty nations, who poffeffed them, he fees nothing in nature, but decay and decrepitude. But, if tranfported to the northern extremities of Europe, he travel over the immense frontiers of Ruffia, he finds nature in a ftate of infancy; he obferves none but rifing cities and nations, which have the manners of the men, who lived in the firft ages of the world, and like them have no wants but thofe of the firft neceffity, and know not the fweet conveniencies of luxury; who, like thefe ancients, have no paffions but fuch as arife from conftitution, and know

know not even the names of such as originate in depraved and impure manners.

OUR business and curiosity gave us frequent opportunities of having communication with these people, and we have collected some observations, upon their manners and customs, which our readers will not peruse without being interested. In the catalogue of these nations, we have followed alphabetical order, that our details may be more concise and better arranged.

THE *Barfchires*, more generally called *Barfchirians*, differ from wandering tribes in this; during winter they live in houses, or huts, built in the Russian fashion. The principal part, which the family commonly possess, is furnished with large benches, which serve for beds. The chimney, of a conical form, and of the height of an ordinary man, is in the middle of this division, and so ill constructed, that they are very liable to smoke; consequently the *Barfchirians* are very subject to various complaints of the eyes.

THE principal furniture of their hut is a bottle of an oblong shape, suspended near the chimney, and vined every hour of the day, because it contains their favourite drink, a mixture of sour milk and mead, which they call *Arjan*. So long as it lasts, they live merrily, and there is nothing they will not do to procure it. A stranger finds some difficulty

in accustoming himself to this beverage. Yet we have seen Russian soldiers drink it as readily as the Barshkirians. A little nicer than the soldiers, who, provided they got one drink, were satisfied, we could not taste it without reluctance, especially when we came near the bottle, which, never or very seldom being cleaned, emits a smell difficult to be described.

IN summer this people inhabit what the Russians call *Jurtas*. They are tents or cottages of felt, which, like the huts, have several divisions, and a chimney in the centre. In the choice of a situation for a winter village, they pay more regard to shelter, and nearness of forage for their cattle, than to water, because they are accustomed to the use of snow water. A winter village contains from ten to fifty huts, but the summer encampment never exceeds twenty *Jurtas*; so that the large winter villages are divided into several small summer camps.

BOTH sexes wear skirts of cloth made of nettles, which have the same shape. They also wear, without any distinction, wide drawers, which descend to the ankle-bone, and a sort of slippers like people in the east. Both men and women wear a long gown. The men's gown is much larger, and generally of red cloth bordered with fur. They bind it round their middle with a girdle, or with the belt, to
which

which they fix their scymitar. The poor have a winter pelisse of sheepskin, and the rich wear a horsekin, ordered in such a way, that the mane covers their back, and waves in the wind. The cap is of cloth, like the frustrum of a cone, and ten inches high. By the rich it is usually ornamented with valuable furs. The gown of the wives is of fine cloth or silk. It is buttoned before, as far up as the neck, and fastened by a broad girdle, which the richer classes have made of steel. Their neck and throats are covered with a sort of shawl, on which are several rows of coins, or a string of shells. Their cap is a kind of monk's hood, which would disfigure them, if they were not gainers by hiding themselves. Their dress consists in concealment, for which we thought ourselves obliged to them. They all wear a bandana on their forehead, to distinguish them from girls and widows.

The Bartchkirians are the most negligent and slovenly of the Tartars. In commerce they are the most intelligent; but, in return, they are the most hospitable, the most lively, and the most brave. They are also the merriest, especially if they have no mindness about providing for to-morrow, and few of them calculate beyond this term. Men and women are passionately fond of bombs, the women especially. The most acceptable present that can be

N

made them, is a fine horse-cloth. We have seen some of very valuable fur.

THEIR diversions at any religious festival, or at a marriage, consist in numerous libations of sour milk, singing, dancing, wrestling, and horse racing, in which they excel. In their songs they enumerate the achievements of their ancestors, or their own, and sometimes their amorous torments. These songs are always accompanied with gestures, which make them very theatrical. Among them, old age meets with the greatest respect. In their entertainments it occupies the place of honour, and the stranger to whom compliments are paid, is always set among the old men.

ALTHOUGH the Barshkirians, like most of the Tartars, are Mahometans; though they have their mosques, their molahs, and their schools; they are not the less addicted to some superstitious practices, originating in paganism, or at least in the ignorance of the times, when paganism prevailed. They have their forcerers, whose knavery can be equalled only by the stupidity of those, who are their dupes. They challenge the devil, and pretend to fight desperately with him. If a credulous Barshkirian has by disease, or the severity of the season, lost one or two mares, he goes to consult the conjurer, who persuades him, that the devil has killed his mares, and that next night he will go fight him, and drive him

him from his house. Next morning at break of day, the forcerer appears with sweat on his brow, and all the external marks of a man, who has been fighting. He assures him, for whom he has been fighting, that the enemy is conquered. The weak Tartar clasps him round the neck, thanks and entertains him, pays him, and returns to bed, calm and sure of having no more enemies. How many Barfchkirians like him are to be found from pole to pole.

THE Barfchkirians have had no Kan or king, since they became subject to the Russians. Their nobility also, which was numerous formerly, has been almost entirely destroyed by intestine broils, and the wars they have had with Russia. At present, every tribe, or *Woloste*, elects for chiefs within itself, two or more old men, whom they call *Starfchini* from *Starfchine*, which signifies department, or district. The nation of the Barfchkirians is made up of thirty six *Wolostes*, of which the total population is twenty eight thousand families, or houses. Their language is a Tartar dialect, which is very different from that spoken at Kasan. The military service, which they are bound to perform, and the only point, in which the Russian yoke galls them, consists in furnishing in war times, three thousand cavalry, which form thirty troops of a hundred men each, usually armed with a bow, arrow, a lance, a coat of mail, and a helmet.

helmet. The greater part of them now have sabres, fufees, or pistols. There are even some who are provided with these different arms at the same time. They are well mounted, are excellent horsemen, and still better archers. A military corps belonging to this nation has a very singular appearance. Every horseman dresses himself as he pleases, and as he can. He has a led horse, which he spares for battle, and which carries his provisions, consisting of four milk, and dried corn, which is ground into meal, with hand-mills, always following the army. With this meal they make a ball, or bowl, which they swallow, and which serves them for bread. Every troop of a hundred horsemen has a standard of several colours, and these standards in the same regiment, differ as much from one another, as the arms of the horsemen, who, on marches and battles, know neither ranks nor files, and yet fight not the worse for all this.

The *Burattians*, called among themselves *Dargo-Buratt*, but by the Russians *Brotzki*, possess the south part of the mountains of Irkuzk, from Jenisei to the frontiers of China, and the banks of the Angara, of the Tunguska, of the Lena, the south bank of the Baikal, and of the Selenga and Argun, rivers in Dauria.

They are divided into a great number of tribes, called *Kobandias*, which are subdivided into casts, or *Aibak*.

Aimaks, and each *Aimak* is composed of a certain number of *Chottons*, or villages, containing ten or twenty families. The oldest of the *Chottons* governs it, and six of these *Chottons* are subject to a *Schulenga*, or Judge, whom they choose from among their chiefs; but he is confirmed in his office, along with all the chiefs of the higher order, by the governor of the province. Twenty four *Schulengas* form a tribe, or *Kolbonda*, which is commanded by a common chief, chosen from among the families of their ancient princes. He watches over the observation of the laws, decides and determines disputes, diminishes and augments the tribes, assembles and commands the proportion of recruits, which the nation must furnish in case of war, till the time, that they are united to the main body of the army. To give more support to this chief, Catharine II. has given orders, that he should wear a girdle ornamented with silver, on which is inscribed the name of the cast he commands, and the *Buratt* has become proud of this decoration, which is only a mark of his slavery.

According to the accounts taken in the year 1782, this nation forms sixty five casts, containing thirty three thousand souls, or heads of families, and as they speak the Mongol language, profess the religion of the *Kalmucs*, lead the same life, and manage their flocks in the same manner with the *Manchus*.

kirians, we refer our readers to the heads, *Kalmucs Mongols, and Barschkirians*, in order to avoid repetition. We shall only mention some customs peculiar to them.

THEY may marry as many wives, as they are able to pay for. Many have four or five, a number have only two, and the greatest part, whether from poverty, affection, or conveniency, are contented with one. These wives, be they one or many in one family, are in a more comfortable situation, than wives are among any other people in Siberia. The price of a bride is paid in cattle of different kinds. A young girl, according to her beauty and character, may, among the rich, receive a hundred horses, twenty camels, fifty horned cattle, two hundred sheep, and thirty goats. This proportion is not always the same, but varies according to the laws, and sometimes according to circumstances. The nuptials are celebrated on the same day that the cattle are delivered. For this purpose they erect a *Jurt* of felt, entirely new, of a white colour, and remarkably neat. The three first days are spent in feasting, singing, and dancing. The musical instrument used at these rural balls is a guitar with two strings, like that which the Russians call *balalaika*. The old, who are not amorous, and the rigid, who keep by rule, find great fault, if the young couple have not waited, till these three days of riot be expired

pare I, for the consummation of the marriage. This law is not transgressed, if the marriage be only a matter of convenience, but if the parties be fond of one another, and love has formed the union, they dissolve the old and the rigid the first night.

When a husband dies and leaves several wives, she, who has born him children, or if they all have had children, the eldest becomes mistress of the jurte. In the former case, those who have had no children, return to their relations on fine horses, and carry with them the clothes, and presents, which they received from the husband. In case they have no persons to raise to, they continue in the jurte, till a share is made for them by the husband.

The village of *M. S.* is situated over the right bank of the *Kajga*, in the government of *Kazan*, and extends for a mile, in that of *Orenburg*, and for this reason is distinguished by the name of *Ulye* *Ulye*. They were formerly *Ulye* people. Their population amounts to about a hundred thousand souls. The *Ulye* are the best and the most numerous of all the *Ulye* and *Ulye* people there are to be seen in the *Ulye*.

The *Ulye* are the best and the most numerous of all the *Ulye* and *Ulye* people there are to be seen in the *Ulye*. They are the best and the most numerous of all the *Ulye* and *Ulye* people there are to be seen in the *Ulye*.

They are the best and the most numerous of all the *Ulye* and *Ulye* people there are to be seen in the *Ulye*.

that *Tor* receives their homage, and sacrifices, which consist of black lambs, which in the lamb-season they slaughter in as great numbers, as their *Jumak* or high priest has ordered. The *Yumashi*, priests subordinate to the *Jumak* enjoy the greatest authority among the Ufian Tartars. In diseases, they are the only physicians to whom they apply. In their disputes they are their only judges, and in their affairs they are their only counsellors. It is a *Yumashi*, who carries to the forest the offering, which his village sends to the Grand *Jumak*, and the latter, according to every appearance, divides after the sacrifice with the *Yumashi*. Like the rest of the Tartars they abstain from hog's flesh, and refrain from working on the Friday, as the christians do on Sunday. Every year they celebrate a kind of Easter, of which both the day and place of celebration are determined only by the Grand *Jumak*. Every family repairs thither in the most profound meditation, carryin their lamb, which is killed in the name of *Tor*, and after the sacrifice it is eaten by those, who have slain it. They all use nearly the same dress, the dress and food, and have the manners of the *Uzbeks*.

The *Uzbeks* and a great number of the *Mongols*, are generally considered to be descended from *Ugais*, a people of the *Ural*, whose characteristic is to be a people of hunters, they are

placed obliquely and descending on the nose, is a little open and full of flesh; black thin eye brows, forming a very low arch; a form of nose quite particular, generally flat towards the brow, high cheek bones, a very round head and face. Their eye-balls are generally of a dark brown, their lips thick and fleshy, their chin is short, their teeth are very white, and continue beautiful and fresh even till old age. In short their ears are enormously large, and detached from their heads. By these accounts the reader may see, that the figure of the Kalmuc bears a complete resemblance to that, which we have got described of the Chinese. Naturalists, who have examined the Kalmuc and the Mongols, have observed, that the mixture of Russian and Tartar blood with that of the Kalmuc and Mongols, which very frequently takes place in the extensive country situated south of the Baikal, generally produces children of the most agreeable looks, whilst those of Kalmuc or Mongol origin, are, as their figure shows, of a most disgusting deformity.

Nature has bestowed on the Kalmucs one gift, which they enjoy in common with many savage and insulated people, who live solely by hunting. They have an incredible acuteness of smell, which is of great service to them, by enabling them to perceive the smoke of fire or of an enemy's camp at a considerable distance. Their hearing too is very nice,

and their sight extremely quick. By the first of these two senses, they can distinguish, at a great distance, the noise of an enemy's horse on march, and the place, where they can find their strayed cattle. For this purpose they need only to lie down and apply their ears close to the ground. But the quickness of their sight surpasses even their hearing. At an amazing distance they perceive the smallest objects, and distinguish the sort and number of troops, that may be coming against them.

THE Kalmucs are affable to all, and the most hospitable of all the wandering tribes, so that a man of this nation, provided with a horse, clothes, and arms, may go about among them for three whole months, without carrying with him either money or provisions. Wherever he goes, he is soon finding friends, with whom he is connected by the bonds of hospitality, who give him the kindest reception, and entertain him with the best they have. If, by accident, he find no friends in the place, where he stops, he goes and begs in the street, but he meets with on his road, and as he has hardly entered, when all his wants are supplied. The stranger, too, who travels among these people, is as well treated as if he had been born among them; but, in order to receive this welcome, he must put him-

self under the protection of a Kalmuc, and this can be procured by some small presents.

This nation, so hospitable at home, becomes a nation of robbers, when they pass into the territory of another; but to the pillage they commit, they are more frequently infligated by motives of national hatred than of greed, and in the execution they employ stratagem rather than open force.

The men's dress among the Kalmucs consists in an upper gown, which descends as far as the ham of the leg. It has long sleeves, but very well fitted at the wrists. These gowns are of cloth, or cotton, or conifer skin, according to the fortune of the individual. The rich wear very short shirts, but the poor put their pelisses next their skin, and wear them winter and summer. This dress is very disagreeable to the eye.

Garments made in the form of pantaloons are common to both men and women. The dress of the latter differs from that of the former, only by the fashion of the gown at the neck, and it is buttoned like a coat, except the sleeves. The women also put above their gown, particularly when they go out, a sort of cloak, which is composed of their stuff or skin gown. When they have their hair and women's dress, this cloak above their gown and pelisse, and the whole with a girdle. The young women are dressed like the men, except on the head,

for which the dress is a mixture of ribbands, and curls of hair, agreeably enough arranged. The men all shave, and leave only a small tuft of hair on the crown. This custom they have in common with the Chinese and Tungusians. The young Kalmucs, from infancy till the age of eighteen, go naked as far down as the middle, but the girls are clothed as soon as they are ten years of age.

THE caps of the Kalmucs have different forms, and there are some, which are worn indiscriminately by both sexes, and others, which are appropriated only to one. Whatever the cap be, it is always of yellow cloth, and ornamented on the front by several loops of red silk, which the young Kalmuc ladies place with much taste. Those who cannot procure loops of silk, supply their place with a bit of red cloth, or other stuff; but always of this colour, because it is the sign, by which those, who profess the religion of *Lama*, are distinguished, and this is the only religion in repute among these people, and the Mongols.

THE moveable dwellings of the Kalmucs are the same with those huts of felt, which the Barichkiarians use, as already mentioned. The Kalmuc huts however appeared to us, to be larger, and made with greater care.

ALL the riches and means of subsistence, which the Kalmucs have, consist in their flocks, which

many among them count by thousands. Among them a man is considered able to live on his income, if he has ten cows and a bull, with eight mares and a stallion. These two kinds of animals constitute the principal part of their flocks. As for camels, none but the wealthy, and the priests, (who too are wealthy, or live as if they were so,) are possessed of them. Their horses are too wild, too small, and too weak for drawing, but not to be equalled in swiftness, and they are as hardy as swift. Their hoofs are so firm and hard, that the kalmaucs ride them without being obliged to shoe them.

They usually geld the colts, and when they proceed to this operation, they slit their nostrils, in order that they may breathe the more freely when they run. In no season of the year do they remove the stallions from the milch-mares. For every ten, or at least fifteen mares, they keep a stallion. These stallions are the leaders of the herd, which they walk at the head of, and defend with undaunted courage against wolves, and every other animal that dare attack it.

The Kalmauc sheep resemble those of Croatia, very in the length and thickness of the wool. They yield tall, or equal to better in quality, and superior in quantity. These sheep are not bred for the sake of the Pashas, but for the sake of a kind of wool, which is used with hair.

THE camels, as we have said, are a mark of riches among the Kalmucs. This animal is so much the more valued, that besides its utility, it multiplies slowly, and is subject to an infinite number of distempers, under which it sinks sooner or later, because it is extremely delicate. In winter, especially, the camel stands in need of care, and requires to be screened from hoar-frosts, which prove mortal to him. For this purpose they cover him with pieces of old felt, and defend him with thick mats. In summer, when in the fields, he requires the protection of his keepers, to defend him from the attacks of wolves, because in spite of his enormous size, he is timid as the dove, and weak as the lamb. The propagation of this creature, too, demands particular care. When in season the female must be forced to sit on her hind legs, that the male be brought, and they must be assisted in cohabitation.

The Kalmucs put a value on camels with two bunches, and think them more useful, and more valuable, than the rest. This is prejudice among the Kalmucs. Both kinds are most tractable, and so docile a camel, nothing more is necessary, than to put a cord round his nose, which when his guide pulls by lowering his hand, the camel kneels to ease of his burden, and when he puts it up, he rises, the camel obeys. Travellers have remarked some camels, which has stayed the night with the driver

observe so minutely, namely, the camels with two bunches have a much harder trot than the camels with one.

The Kalmucs use the milk and wool of the camel. The milk is thick, creamy and of a salt taste, which it loses by being boiled. It is excellent when mixed with coffee and tea. In our excursions it was a treat, which we were very fond of.

CAMEL'S hair is used for the purpose of making mattresses, excellent felt, and cloth of unequalled fineness. At Kafan we saw some, which had the gloss of silk, and the rich pile of Satin.

WHEN a horde or Kalmuc *Uly's* change their residence, which in summer they do once a month, proper persons are dispatched to choose a spot of ground. These are directed to reserve three of the best situations, one for the *Kan* or prince, another for the *Lama* or priest, and a third for the huts, in which the idols are to be set. The rest of the ground is then divided among the horde, according to the antiquity of their families. In this sort of encampments every article must be carried on camels or bullocks. The bundles which form the provisions, and all the apparatus of the hut, can be put into a small package, and make up the load of one, seldom of two camels. The sides of valuable furniture are covered with caparisons of felt of different colours, and curiously embroidered. The animal

which carries them, goes at the head of the conveyance of each individual, and has his neck ornamented with a number of bells, which render the march a little noisy. The oxen in fèvres are tied to one another's tails, with a guide at their head. As for the herds of burden, the Kalmucs drive them before them.

In these marches, the women, particularly the young and unmarried, dress themselves in their best attire, and take themselves carefully, and charm themselves, during the march by songs, which turn on the exploits of their ancestors, or the stratagems of their heroes. The most distinguished among them are seated in a kind of canopy with curtains.

When the weather is favourable the men go before a part of the way to the new camp, and there setting their traps on the grass, wait for the main body of the flock. If the weather or roads be bad, they never quit their families, but watch over their herds, and when the weather has reached them, they go on to the new camp.

The women follow their husbands, and are attended by their children, and when they are weary, they sit down on the ground, and their children sit round them, and they sing to them, and dance, and play with them, and when they are tired, they sit down on the ground, and their children sit round them, and they sing to them, and dance, and play with them, and when they are tired, they sit down on the ground, and their children sit round them, and they sing to them, and dance, and play with them.

trifling also, and from it make a kind of brandy, the use of which we will not grudge them.

All of them, men and women, are excessively fond of tea and smoking tobacco. The tea most in use among them, is brought by the Russians from China, under the name of *Tea-Tea*. Of it they drink most heartily, along with camel's milk. The price of tea, which is very dear, because of the extensive carriage, the common people use a wild fruit, of nearly the same colour and taste with tea. The Russians are looked on as excellent horsemen, and much more expert than the Tartars. The women are equal to the men in dexterity, and the women are bold enough to dispute with them in sports of agility. Their arms, which are of the Asiatic kind, consist of lances, bows and arrows, and spears, a little bent, and with long hilts. They also use the European arms, as well as those of their own country, and in hunting with as much success as any European. The hunting of which they are fondest, and with which they are much better acquainted than the Europeans, is *loaking*, in which, they use hawks of the golden-blonde kind.

The most usual method of hunting the wolf is what is called, *hunting him down*. A considerable number of men, mounted on good horses, pursue the wolf they have started, with short, thick staves, and kill him with the handles, when he has gotten

up. The Barfchkirians have no other way of destroying this animal so formidable to their flocks.

THE Kalmucs spend the most of their time in diversions, and however poor their manner of living may appear to us, it is to them the height of happiness, because they consider themselves as happy, as we consider them miserable. They look on our houses, and the palaces of the Great among us, as so many beautiful prisons, for which they entertain a kind of horror, and in which they would not reside long without contracting the greatest melancholy.

We observed that this people, which some travellers have described as very phlegmatic, are very much inclined to love and very prolific. The Bachelor among the Kalmucs is only an imaginary being, and the hut which contains a barren wife, is a kind of phenomenon. A young girl is hardly marriageable, when she is provided with a husband, and a young widow scarcely finds time to lament her former husband before she has the offer of another. Thus providence ordains a propensity to marriage in a nation, which the hardships and sufferings attached to human life would soon annihilate, if one generation did not come after another in rapid and numerous succession.

Among the Kalmucs, as among the Mongols, he who is the chief of a cast, and like a sovereign rules over a certain number of people, which they

call an *Ulufs*, bears the title of *Taidshi*, and that of *Najonn* is given to his brethren and relations in the collateral line. At his death the *Taidshi* transmits his *Ulufs* to his oldest son, and assigns a certain territory to his other sons, who become his vassals, and the *Najonn* of the first order exercises an authority like that of their father over the estates, which have fallen to their share. In the whole *Ulufs* he is their prince, and they are his barons, but it sometimes happens that these barons banish their princes and rule in their stead.

EVERY *Taidshi*, or *Najonn*, exercises over his respective subjects an unlimited power. He can, at his pleasure, sell them, give them away, dispose of them in his will, inflict on them corporal punishment, and even maim them. But the *Najonn* cannot put them to death, without the authority of the *Taidshi*, and the principal *Lamas* of the *Ulufs*.

For the administration of justice and internal police, every *Ulufs* is divided into *Aimaks*, each of which commonly contains fifty or sixty families, which are governed by *Saybars*, officers named by the *Taidshi*. These *Saybars* determine differences, and levy the contributions due to the prince. It is they who oppress them, and their imposition is always oppressive, because they have a draw back on the sum collected, which is allowed them in name of fees, and always in proportion to the principal.

THE Kalmucs have in their code several laws bearing the stamp of originality. Every man, surpris'd in illicit commerce with the concubine of a priest, is let off with a reprimand, and pays a goat or a kid, as a fine, if he has been guilty of the same offence with the wife of a Najonn; because the law supposes, that a man of common station would not presume to address a woman of rank, if she were not the first to make advances. In case of ordinary adultery, the offender gives a horse of four years old to the offended, and the unfaithful wife gives one of three years old to the judge. Whoever finds a stranger in bed with his slave, is allowed to strip him, and set him out of his hut stark naked. Whoever steals a horse must make restitution, but in a different proportion for stallions, mares, and geldings. If the thief be not able to pay, he is sold as a slave. The religious opinions of the Kalmucs are the same with those of the Mongols, to which our readers are referred.

Of the *Cossacs* there are several nations, who differ little from one another, but the most considerable is that of the *D.N.* The *Cossacs* of this nation give out their ancestors for the first, who peopled Russia. Their countenances are no way different from those of the Russians, whose language they speak, in all its purity. Among them the common people wear a long beard, for which they have a
great

great veneration; but the people of distinction cut it, and leave nothing but the whiskers. The servants imitate people of rank; but this rage prevails not among the Cossacs alone. The persons and dress of the Cossacs are such as we have described them in our first volume. Their women wear pantaloons, especially those of ordinary station. Their head dress is ridiculous, and disfigures them. The young women go bareheaded, and look so much the better. On festival days they surround the head with a broad bandeau, which they load with toys, and as the French macaronis formerly made themselves be announced at a distance by the noise of their trinkets, the Cossac young women delight in imitating before them the sound of the medals, with which their heads are decked.

The Cossacs have no religion but the Greek. At marriages and funerals only they have some particular customs, which their rude life and prejudices have rendered sacred. In marriage, for instance, the bridegroom goes to the house of his intended wife, if they are a due horse, all covered with small bells, given him in a present from his next of kin, and his most intimate friends. These bells announce the approach of him, to whom she is going to be united, and ring in her soul, like the sweet music, which the arrival of her beloved produces, or that cold pang, which her heart wuf.

must feel, if he, who is to have her, is not the object of her choice. After the marriage, those bells are carefully kept by the wife, who decks the nuptial bed with them on festival days. Among the Cossacs, wives not only bring with them no portion, but the husband is even obliged to furnish them with a bundle of linen, of which the principal piece must be made into a head-dress for the marriage ceremony.

THE constitution of the Cossacs is altogether military, and their disposition very warlike. In the first volume, their arms and warlike equipment have been described. We shall only observe here, that all of them being born and trained to be soldiers, the Cossacs of the Don alone can send out a hundred thousand infantry, and muster, not an armed multitude, but a formidable body capable of striking terror into the best disciplined army by their way of fighting.

THE Cossacs of the Don call their habitations *Stanitzas*. These were first built by refugees from other parts of Russia, who flying from an oppressive yoke, came to settle on the banks of the Don. Along this river there are upwards of an hundred of these Stanitzas, which are large villages, whereof some are fortified. The most considerable among them is Kafanka. Each Stanitza forms a parish. The church is always in the centre, and the place, where

where it is situated, is that where the inhabitants of the parish assemble to take up arms, or celebrate any festival. The houses, which are all built of wood, are exceedingly neat, and the Bog's apartment is always the best finished, and kept in the best repair.

EACH Stanitza is governed by an *Attaman*, who is elected annually. It is an indispensable requisite to have been born in the Stanitza, which he commands. Over the Cossacs of his district he exercises the function of Colonel and Judge, both in civil and criminal affairs. No merchants are to be found even in the most considerable Stanitzas, because the Cossacs like valiant knights despise commerce, and pride themselves in the grossest ignorance. Their priests take good care to keep this prejudice in all its vigour, because they find it to be their interest. They have as strong an aversion to agriculture as to commerce, so that the lands they inhabit, though excellent, often present to view, wastes to the extent of more than six hundred wersts, where absolute necessity alone has cleared some fields. And besides, it is not the hands of the Cossacs, which have taken this trouble. It is the *Milorodins*, a cast of laborious people, who live among the Cossacs, and by their indolence.

ISCHIRKASK is the capital of the Cossacs of the Don, and situated so as to be an important city, if it had citizens instead of soldiers. The Cossacs of

the Jaik, now called the Cossacs of Ural, have nearly the same manners with those of the Don. They are more civilized and much more industrious. They are besides a mixture of Kalmucs and Mongol Tartars, among whom the manners of these people are more or less shaded, according to the casts and local circumstances.

MONGOLS—Under this denomination is comprehended a very ancient race of people in Asia, who, about the end of the twelfth century laid the foundation of one of the most powerful monarchies, that ever existed. They extended their conquests over the greatest part of the globe, gave kings to Persia and Emperors to China. The Mongols; who must not be confounded with the Tartars, whom they resemble only in their pastoral life, were Tschingis's companions in arms, who is known to Europeans under the name of *Gengis-Kan*. After the division or destruction of the empire formed by Tschingis, the Mongols were dispersed among different Tartar casts, and formed some new casts, whence sprung the Parfchkirians, Barattians, Kalmucs, and Tungusians.

Some herds of Mongols, yet unmixed, still inhabit the frontiers of China. They have the features of the Kalmucs, the same food, and almost all their usages. They too profess the religion of *Lama*. In the Mongol language, *Lama* signifies Priest, and the

the head of their religion, who is said to be also the object of their worship, is called the *Dalai-Lama*; a name signifying universal priest, or priest of unlimited authority. According to this definition the Roman Catholics are also of the religion of the Great Lama. Their pope is a Dalai-Lama, an universal, *catholic* priest, whose authority has no bounds. On the top of a mountain, the Dalai-Lama of the Mongols inhabits a kind of temple, which, it is said no woman approaches, and of which the guard is entrusted to twenty thousand subaltern Lamas; another resemblance of the Lama of Rome. But there is one great difference between the Asiatic and European Lama. The former and his subalterns interest themselves only in spiritual affairs, and it is an unpardonable crime for them to interfere in temporal matters, whereas the latter Lama and his inferiors, wish to have to do with nothing but the temporalities. If what is said of the superstition of the Mongols be true, they yet exceed the Catholics, which one would think not easily done. Among them, that part of the Dalai-Lama, which nature directs to be used only for the melioration of the soil, is carefully collected, dried, and put into boxes of gold, or other precious materials, and worn round the necks of the simple Mongols, as a preservative against the natural and moral evils, which assail humanity. The Dalai-Lama, never dies, that is, his

place is filled up by some pious fraud. The Roman Lama dies, and his place too is filled up by a pious fraud, but it is notorious.

YELLOW is the favourite colour of the Lamas. They shave the head and beard. Continnence and chastity are virtues, which their rules recommend, but are observed as among the Roman Lamas. They are obliged to be always praying, and they pray as mechanically our parish clerks.

“ To fear God, offend nobody, and give every
“ one what belongs to him,” are the three great precepts which form the basis of the doctrines of the *Lamas*. If they have no other dogmas, the boxes of secretion should be tossed out at the window, the Grand Lama should be laughed at for his pretended immortality, and then embraced as a brother for the soundness of his principles.—Every honest man ought to be of this religion.

MORDWANS or *Mordwins*—These are a remnant of the Mongols, who dwell on the banks of the Pjana, and are distinguished into two tribes, with whose barbarous names we shall not trouble our readers. Their manners are a little different from those of the generality of the Russians, and their dress is like that worn by the Barschkirians and other Tartar tribes. The women in their dress are excessively fond of small bells, medals, branches of coral, and whatever can make a noise when they

are

are on a march. The bands of their caps are trimmed with them; their stomachers are overloaded with them, and their girdles are made up of them. So that the preparations of a woman of this country for a festival day, in its weight and the pieces of metal, which compose it, are liker the harness of horse, than the dress of a woman.

THE Mordwans are industrious, they cultivate the ground, and are fonder of vegetables than of flesh or fish. They are Christians, at least so the Russians affirm them to be. Those, who are not, or still keep by the religious practices of their ancestors have no carved idols, nor intermediate divinities between the Supreme Being and themselves. Yet such a creed prevails among almost all the nations of the world, in spite of reason and philosophy. Wiser far the Mordwans of ancient faith, who have neither Academy nor Lyceum, they acknowledge only the Being of Beings, and to him alone address their prayers. If this venerable religion really exists in this nation, which we can scarcely believe, it were to be wished they would send missionaries to the less enlightened quarters of the world.

OSTIACS—Of this people and the Samoiedes we shall say little, as they have been so fully described by other travellers, particularly La Harpe. We shall only observe here, that the Ostiacs possess the banks of the Jenisei and Ob, and are one of the first Siberian

berian nations which the Russians subdued. They are of middle stature, and of a slender make. Their complexion is livid, and their features inexpressive. They are dirty as hogs, cowardly as the timid dove, and simple beyond what words can express. They are much addicted to superstition, in which they are encouraged by their priests, who give themselves out for sorcerers, capable of controlling the elements, of diving into futurity, and of absolving, by certain magic spells, a man overwhelmed by iniquities and crimes. These Ostiaks, to whom nature appears to have given only the form of men, possess an ungrateful soil, are industrious, hospitable, faithful to their engagements, and have a horror at theft. Among them the cares of the family devolve on the women, as does the labour of fishing, from which they draw their only support. The dress of both sexes is a kind of bag of the skin of fish or rein-deer prepared as our tanners prepare their hides. The women veil themselves, and are right in doing so. The Ostiaks live solely on fish, with which nature has stocked their rivers in abundance, and of which they catch more than sufficient to supply their wants. Their utensils, arms, and oils are made of the bones, sinews, and fat of fish. They are all pagans, and their worship corresponds with their intellectual faculties. The bear is for them the most terrible enemy, but his skin is an object of adoration. Like

the Kalmucs they have jurtcs, winter villages, and summer camps.

SAMOIEDES—They are neighbours to the Ostiacs, from whom they differ very little in manners, customs and dress, but much in their persons. Their faces are round, and sometimes agreable. They are of a robust constitution, but they are less civilized than the Ostiacs, and are impatient under the yoke of the Russians, which hangs very lightly upon them. Their women do not use the veil, have no shirts, but wear drawers both day and night. They are far from being beautiful, and in our opinion would be not a little improved by the use of the veil. The Samoiedes are as dirty as the Ostiacs, and still less nice in what they eat. Even an animal in a state of putrefaction does not offend them. A Samoiede treats his wife worse than an Ostiac does. The latter makes her labour, but condescends to make her a companion, whereas the Samoiede considers her only a servant. Yet it often happens that this wife has brought a portion, which is the only riches of her husband. It is said, that new married wives sometimes continue virgins for a whole month, though lying every night at the side of their husbands. If this be a fact, the husbands must be very cool, or the wives must possess few attractions. Like the Ostiacs, they have forcerers, who pretend to be very knowing. These forcerers
use

use a tabor or an instrument very like it, either to make his conjurations, or to assist him in the songs, by which he succeeds in turning the heads of his credulous countrymen. The Samoiedes too have their Bog. There is not a Jurte, where one may not be found, and not a season of the year, when a rein-deer is not sacrificed to this supposed divinity.

The *Tungusi* or *Tungusians* are another tribe of Siberians, whom the arms of Russia have subjugated. The deserts or *Steppes* which they inhabit, extend from west to east along the Jenisei, as far as the Lena and the river Amour. They are divided into the Hunting Tungusians, and the Fishing Tungusians. They are of Mongol extraction, their language is the same with that spoken by the Burattians, and their features very like those of the Samoiedes. Their women pass for the prettiest in Siberia, where the sex is not much favoured by nature. Yet some travellers have seen young Tungusian women who might have passed for beauties in any quarter of the world. But they must be taken at twenty years of age, for the rose fades not sooner than the women of this country. Toil, misery and smoke are the causes of them falling off so early. Both men and women have the senses of hearing and seeing in much greater perfection than the Kalinucs. The Tungusians are said to be free and open, to abhor lying, and to despise the oath, which the im-

poster

pofter loves to make his fhield. They are fatisfied with the pooreft fare, and the want of food for feveral days cannot difpirit them. But they are feldom reduced to this extremity, becaufe to them every thing is good, as to the Oſtiac, and they are never difguſted. Befides, along with the reſources of fiſhing, they have that of hunting, which is the furer to them, that the country abounds with game, and they are eſteemed the beſt archers of Siberia. It is ſaid that their courage is not inferior to their addreſs. Water is their only drink, and a Tunguſian intoxicated is a phenomenon, in ſpite of the ſtrong liquors, for which the Ruſſians have endeavoured to give him a taſte. They are ſtill a dirtier ſet of people than the Oſtiacs and Samoiedes. They are ſo much ſo, that no idea can be attempted to be given of them without turning the heart of the man, the leaſt ſuſceptible of diſguſt. They are ſubject to epidemical attacks of the ſmall pox, whoſe ravages are equal to thoſe of the plague. So ſoon as any perſon is attacked by this loathſome diſeaſe, they quickly fly from him, after having provided him with what food is neceſſary. Left to nature, this poor man often recovers better and ſooner than if a hundred inoculators had attended him. The Tunguſians marry very young. Among them it is nothing uncommon to ſee huſbands of fifteen, and widows of twelve years of age. Poligamy is allow-

ed and practised among them, especially by the rich ; for as a wife must be bought, or procured by means of presents, which comes to the same thing, the poor man is contented with one wife, and lives not the less happy. When the parents and relations have agreed with regard to the reciprocal presents, and conditions, the young couple are bedded together, without their union being preceded by any feast or ceremony. Neither of these are ever minded, except at taking possession of the new Jurte.

The Tungusians have a practice, which prevails in America, in Africa, and among many nations, of marking their faces with the figures of animals, and even trees and flowers. The operation is painful, but what will people not do to look beautiful?

THESE people wear no shirts, their clothes are like those of the Samoiedes, but made with more proportion, and much more ornamented. The shape is something like ours. Men and women wear breeches ; or, to speak more properly, the women dress like the men, from whom they are distinguished only by their neck-laces and the ornaments, with which they overload themselves.

THEIR religious opinions are as gross as their manners. Their priests, whom they call *Chamanes*, and who boast of being inspired, act as intercessors with their divinities, of whom the number is considerable ; but they are all subject to one, whom they
adore

adore under the name of *Boa*. They have the following idea of *Boa*. He is the God of gods, dwells above the clouds, distributes the various departments in the administration of the world among the subaltern divinities, and watches over them. He knows every thing, but is very little taken up about individuals. He punishes none, but does good to all. He is invisible, and consequently can be represented by no image. We must confess this is a *Boa*, to whom a great number of *Boas* ought to bear resemblance. They would then cease to be cruel, and the human race would become more happy.

F I N I S.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

OF THE

CZARS AND CZARINAS OF THE HOUSE OF ROMANOFF.

- MICHAEL Fedorowitsch,—elected Czar, 21 February, 1613,—dies 12 July, 1645.
- Alexis Michaelowitsch, his son,—crowned, 13 July, 1645,—dies, 8 February, 1676.
- Fedor Alexiowitsch, second son to Alexis,—made emperor in 1676,—dies without issue in 1682.
- Iwan and Peter Alexiowitsch, his brothers,—reign jointly till 9 January, 1689, the date of Iwan's death.
- Peter I. surnamed the Great,—succeeds,—dies, 28 January, 1725.
- Catharine Alexiefna I. second wife to Peter I.—succeeds him, 29 January, 1725,—dies, 16 May, 1727.
- Peter II. son to the unfortunate Czarowitsch Alexis and Charlotte Christina Sophia of Brunswick,—succeeds Catharine, 18 May, 1727,—dies of the small-pox, 31 January, 1730.
- Anne Iwanowna, daughter to Iwan, brother to Peter I.—elected, 1 February, 1730,—dies, 27 October, 1740.
- Iwan III. nephew to the Empress Anne, grandson to Catharine Iwanowna, by her daughter Anne of Mecklenburgh and Anthony Ulrich of Brunswick,—succeeds his aunt, 28 October, 1740,—dethroned, 6 December, 1741,—murdered, 15 July, 1764.
- Elizabeth Petrowna, second daughter to Peter I.—proclaimed Empress, 7 December, 1741,—dies, 5 January, 1762.
- Peter III. son to Anne Petrowna, oldest daughter to Peter I. married to Charles Frederick, Duke of Holstein-Gottorp,—succeeds his aunt Elizabeth, 5 January, 1762,—is deposed,—dies, 15 July, same year.
- Catharine Alexiefna II. succeeds her husband Peter III. whom she causes be dethroned, 9 July, 1762. She now fills the throne of the Russias. She is daughter to Christian Augustus, Prince of Anhalt-Zerbst, and Jean Elizabeth of Holstein Eutin, sister to the late king of Sweden.

N. B. All the above dates are in the Old Style.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

Los Angeles

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

REC'D LO-URE

JAN 7 1985



A 001 452 749 3

